P089443

Marquess of Ailsa.

THOMAS WILDE.

WITHDRAWN
FROM STOCK

THE

PARLIAMENTARY

OR

CONSTITUTIONAL

History of England;

BEING A

FAITHFUL ACCOUNT

Of all the

Moſt remarkable TRANSACTIONS

In PARLIAMENT,

From the earlieſt TIMES,

TO THE

Reſtoration of King CHARLES II.

COLLECTED

From the RECORDS, the JOURNALS of both HOUSES, original MANUSCRIPTS, ſcarce SPEECHES, and TRACTS; all compared with the ſeveral Contemporary Writers, and connected, throughout, with the Hiſtory of the Times.

By SEVERAL HANDS.

——*Juvat integroſs accedere Fontes.*

VOL. XII.

From the Call of the Houſe of Commons, *November* 1, 1642, till the Convention at *Oxford*, in *January* 1643.

The SECOND EDITION.

LONDON,

Printed, and ſold by WILLIAM SANDBY, againſt *St. Dunſtan's Church, Fleet-Street*. MDCCLXII.

THE

Parliamentary Hiſtory

OF

ENGLAND.

ON the firſt of *November* the Commons ordered, That all their Members, living within ſixty Miles of *London*, and not employed in the Service of that Houſe, ſhould attend within three Days; all at a farther Diſtance, within eight Days; and that ſuch as did not appear within the Times limited, ſhould be ſent for by Meſſengers, who were to bring them up. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November. The Commons require the Attendance of their Members.

This Order was occaſioned by the Thinneſs of the Houſe, for ſome Months paſt, which appears by the following Diviſions extracted from their *Journals*. The moſt material Points, which gave Occaſion to theſe, have been taken Notice of in their proper Order of Time: The Numbers, only, will be therefore ſufficient for this Review.

June 27. 42 againſt 27.
—— 30. 49 againſt 35.
July 9. 125 againſt 45.
—— 19. 69 againſt 51.
—— 23. 89 againſt 43.
—— 26. 50 againſt 33.
—— 28. 82 againſt 32.
Aug. 15. 42 againſt 33.
—— 17. 43 againſt 16.
—— 27. 69 againſt 26.
Sept. 2. 40 againſt 29.
—— 29. 53 againſt 36.
In *October* not one Diviſion enter'd.

The State of that Houſe at this Time.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

It may very juſtly be inquired, What could occaſion ſuch an Abſence, at a Time when ſo great a Number of Reſolutions paſs'd, deeply affecting the Conſtitution of this Kingdom?—A brief Recapitulation of ſome Tranſactions in our laſt Volume will ſupply an Anſwer.

It may be remembered that there was a Call of the Houſe on the 16th of *June* laſt; and, on that Occaſion, a Reſolution paſs'd, by a Majority of 147 Voices againſt 91, That none of the Abſentees ſhould be admitted to take their Seats, till they had made their Excuſe to a Committee appointed for that Purpoſe, and that Excuſe reported and allowed of by the Houſe. Moſt of the Members then abſent, whoſe Names are entered in the *Commons Journals* of that Day, were with the King at *York*; and as they could have little Reaſon to expect That Excuſe for their Abſence would be accepted by the Houſe, it is very probable few of them ever returned. —Add to this, That

After the King had iſſued his Commiſſion of Array many more Members left the Houſe, and went into their ſeveral Counties to put the ſame into Execution: And others were ſent, at the ſame Time, by the Parliament to execute their Ordinance for the Militia; moſt of the Deputy-Lieutenants being Members of the Houſe of Commons.

When the Commons, on the eleventh Day of *Auguſt* laſt, voted, That they would ſupport the Earl of *Eſſex* with their Lives and Fortunes, they alſo reſolved, That every Member, then abſent, ſhould declare himſelf at his next coming into the Houſe; which undoubtedly kept away many who had not Courage enough to make that Declaration; whilſt ſome others, of a more reſolute Diſpoſition, loſt their Lives, on both Sides of the Queſtion, at the late Battle of *Edge-Hill*. Laſtly,

During the Months of *Auguſt* and *September* laſt, near fifty Members had been expelled the Houſe; and, though Writs were iſſued out for ſupplying their Places, it is hardly to be imagined that many new Elections could be made at a Time when the Orders

Orders of the House of Commons were as little regarded by the Sheriffs and returning Officers of some Counties, as the King's Proclamations by others; and when a considerable Part of the Kingdom was covered by two opposite Armies. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Names of the Members so expelled, with the Reasons of their Expulsion, and the Places they served for, may not be improper; as they tend to illustrate many Passages in the succeeding Volumes of this Work. [a]

MEMBERS *expelled in the Month of* August, 1642.

4	**Robert Hide*, Serjeant at Law,	*New-Sarum.*
5	*Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the *Bath*,	*Wells.*
—	**Thomas Smith*, Esq;	*Bridgewater.*
8	*Sir *John Pawlett*, Kt.	
—	*Sir *John Stawell*, Knight of the *Bath*,	*Somersetshire.*
9	Sir *Nicholas Slanning*, Kt.	*Penryn.*
10	*John Griffith*, Esq;	*Beaumaris.*
11	**Edward Hyde*, Esq;	*Saltash.*
—	**Robert Holborne*, Esq;	*Michell.*
—	*Sir *William Penyman*, Bart.	*Richmond.*
—	** Edward Kirton*, Esq;	*Milborn-Port.*
12	**John Coventry*, Esq;	*Evesham.*
—	*Sir *Edward Rodney*, Kt.	*Wells.*
16	**Nicholas Weston*, Esq;	*Stafford.*
—	*Col. *George Goring*,	*Portsmouth.*
20	*Sir *John Packington*, Bart.	*Aylesbury.*
—	*Sir *H. Herbert*, Knt.	*Bewdley.*
—	**Samuel Sandys*, Esq;	*Droitwitch.*

The three last for executing the Commission of Array.

22	**Gervase Holles*, Esq;	*Grimsby.*

[a] For those Places distinguished thus * the *Journals* only take Notice of Writs being issued for new Elections; and where we have not mentioned the Reasons for the Expulsion of the respective Members, none are assigned by those Authorities.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Aug. 26. Sir *William Widdrington*, Knt. } *Northumberland.*
— Sir *William Carnaby*, Kt. *Morpeth.*
The last two for refusing to attend the Service of the House.

29 *Orlando Bridgeman*, Esq; *Wigan.*
For assisting Lord *Strange* at *Chester*.

— *Roger Kirkby*, Esq; *Lancashire.*
30 Sir *Richard Cave*, Knt. *Litchfield.*

MEMBERS *expelled in* September, 1642.

2 **Christopher Lewkener*, Esq; *Chichester.*
6 Sir *William Savile*, Knt. *and* Bart. } *Old Sarum.*
— *Henry Bellasys*, Esq; *Yorkshire.*
— *John Bellasys*, Esq; *Thirske.*
— Sir *Henry Slingsby*, Bart. *Knaresbrough.*
— Sir *Thomas Danby*, Knt. *Richmond.*
— Sir *George Wentworth*, of *Wooley*, Knt. } *Pontefract.*
— Sir *Thomas Ingram*, Knt. *Thirske.*
— *William Mallory*, Esq; *Ripon.*
— *Richard Aldburgh*, Esq; *Aldburgh.*
The last nine for neglecting the Service of the House, and setting their Hands to a Petition contrived in *Yorkshire*, and sent up to Parliament. [b]

— Sir *John Strangwayes*, Knt. *Weymouth.*
For neglecting the Service of Parliament.

— Sir *Richard Lee* Bart. *Salop.*
— Sir *Robert Howard*, Knt. of the *Bath*, } *Bishops-Castle.*
7 Sir *Christ. Hatton*, Knt. *Higham Ferrers.*
— Sir *Robert Hatton*, Knt. *Castle-Rising.*
These four for executing the Commission of Array after it was declared illegal, and for not appearing on Summons.

Sept.

[b] This Petition may be found in our Eleventh Volume.

Sept. 7. *Geoffrey Palmer*, Esq; *Stamford.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642, November.
For not appearing on Summons.

—*Henry Coke*, Esq; *Dunwich.*
—Sir *Tho. Fanshaw*, Knt. *Lancaster.*
These two for neglecting the Service of the House, and not appearing on Summons.

12 *Richard Rogers*, Esq; *Dorsetshire.*
For sending Forces into *Sherborne* Castle.

—*Richard Herbert*, Esq; *Montgomery.*
For putting the Commission of Array in Execution in the County *Salop.*

16 * *Tho. Chicheley*, Esq; *Cambridgeshire.*
18 Sir *Bevile Grenville*, Knt. *Cornwall.*
22 Lord Viscount *Falkland*, } *Newport*, Isle of *Wight.*
23 Sir *Frederick Cornwallis*, Knt. of the *Bath.* } *Eye.*
29 Sir *Ralph Sydenham*, Knt. *Bossiney.*

We meet with no Expulsions of Members in *October*; but, on the 24th of that Month, one Gentleman was in very great Danger of losing his Seat, if he had not instantly complied with the Terms required by the House for his Continuance in it: For we find in the *Journals* of this Day, That the Vote for assisting the Earl of *Essex*, *&c.* being read to Sir *John Evelyn*, Member for *Blechingley*, and his Answer demanded, he desired Time to consider of that Vote; upon which he was ordered to withdraw. Then the House fell into Consideration of the Quality of his Offence; and finding, That if any Member might have Liberty, when a Question was proposed, to refuse giving any Answer, it would destroy the Course and Proceedings of Parliament: It was thereupon resolved, 'That the said Sir *John Evelyn* shall be suspended from the House, disarmed by the Deputy-Lieutenants of *Surrey*, and committed Prisoner to the *Tower* during the Pleasure of that House.'——But Sir *John Evelyn* desiring to be heard

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

before Judgment given; and, his Requeſt being complied with, he declared himſelf in the Affirmative to the Vote concerning the Earl of *Eſſex*, and offered to lend 100 *l.* upon the Propoſitions. The Houſe accepted his Anſwer and his Offer, and immediately ordered, That the former Votes and Sentences ſhould be revoked.

Thus much may ſuffice to give a View of the State of the Houſe of Commons during the laſt five Months: We ſhall, now, proceed with the Buſineſs of Parliament.

Both Houſes had been buſy in making Orders for oppoſing Sir *Ralph Hopton*'s Armament, in the *Weſt* of *England*, and the other in *Wales*, mentioned in Secretary *Nicholas*'s Letter; which had been communicated to the Citizens of *London* at the *Guildhall*, by the Earl of *Pembroke*, on the 27th of the laſt Month.

Proceedings towards a Peace.

Theſe two new raiſed Armies appeared ſo formidable to the Parliament, that, in all Probability, it ſtirred up the late Motion for ſettling a Peace, and brought on the further Conſideration of it this Day, *November* 2. The Reſult of which was, That to prevent the further Effuſion of Blood, and to ſettle the preſent Diſtractions of the Kingdom, a Conference ſhould be held, in which the following Letter ſhould be communicated to the Commons, which the Committee of Safety had received from their Lord-General, in anſwer to one wrote to him on this Occaſion.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

The Earl of *Eſſex*'s Letter on that Occaſion.

I Have received a Letter from you, that mentions an humble Petition to be directed to his Majeſty, to ſave the Effuſion of more Blood. In the firſt Place, I ought to acknowledge the Favour of your deſiring to hear from me, before you ſend it. In the ſecond Place, To declare that an happy Accommodation for the Advancement of Religion, the Flouriſhing of this Kingdom, with its antient Rights, the Saving the Effuſion

of

of more Blood, and the uniting his Majesty to his Parliament, none shall pray for more, nor receive with more Joy, than myself. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

If I had not, by the Commands of the Parliament, been here to govern this Army, I should have given my Attendance upon you; and should have discharged my Conscience, to the best of my Abilities, honestly and clearly; but, being absent, and not hearing the Debates, nor from whence this hath risen, I must submit myself to their greater Judgments; and shall, with all Obedience, submit both to what they shall do; and to obey their former Commands to advance towards London, *to interpose, with my utmost, between them and all Dangers.*

Your Lordships

Northampton, Nov. 1, 1642. } Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Notwithstanding the last-mentioned Military Preparations, and the Earl of *Essex*'s Declaration of his Readiness to march towards *London*, both Houses thought fit to proceed in their pacific Measures; and ordered a Petition to the King, to be drawn up for that Purpose: But, previous to this, 'lest the Affections of the People should grow cold,' as Mr. *Pymme* expressed himself at the Conference, a Declaration was to be published to this Purport:

'Whereas the Lords and Commons have ordered, That it should be referred to the Committee for Safety of the Kingdom, to prepare Heads for an humble Address to his Majesty, for composing the present Differences and Distractions, and settling the present Peace of the Kingdom, and to present it to the House: Yet to prevent all Misconstructions or Neglects, whereby our just Defence may be hindered, we do declare, That the Preparations of Forces, and all other necessary Means for the Defence of the Protestant Religion, the Privileges of Parliament, and the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, shall be prosecuted with all Vigour.' Both Houses at the same Time provide for their Defence.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Lords agreed to this Declaration, and ordered it to be forthwith printed and publiſhed.

Nov. 3. A Draught of this Petition, or Addreſs, to the King, was read by the Lords this Day; and, afterwards, agreed to by both Houſes, as follows:

Their Petition to the King for Peace.

WE your Majeſty's moſt loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, being affected with a deep and piercing Senſe of the Miſeries of this Kingdom, and of the Danger of his Majeſty's Perſon, as the preſent Affairs now ſtand; and much quickened therein with the ſad Conſideration of the great Effuſion of Blood at the late Battle, and of the Loſs of ſo many eminent Perſons: And further weighing the Addition of Loſs, Miſery, and Danger to your Majeſty and your Kingdom, which muſt enſue, if both Armies ſhould again join in another Battle; as, without God's eſpecial Bleſſing, and your Majeſty's Concurrence with your Houſes of Parliament, will not probably be avoided; we cannot but believe that a ſuitable Impreſſion of Tenderneſs and Compaſſion is wrought in your Majeſty's Royal Heart, being yourſelf an Eye-Witneſs of the bloody and ſorrowful Deſtruction of ſo many of your Subjects; and that your Majeſty doth apprehend what Diminution of your own Power and Greatneſs will follow; and that all your Kingdoms will thereby be ſo weakened, as to become ſubject to the Attempts of any ill-affected to this State.

In all which Reſpects we aſſure ourſelves, that your Majeſty will be inclined graciouſly to accept this our humble Petition, that the Miſery and Deſolation of this Kingdom may be ſpeedily removed and prevented; for the effecting whereof we moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to appoint ſome convenient Place, not far from the City of London, *where your Majeſty will be pleaſed to reſide, untill Committees of both Houſes of Parliament may attend your Majeſty, with ſome Propoſitions for the Removal of theſe bloody Diſtempers and Diſtractions, and ſettling the State of the Kingdom, in ſuch a Manner as may conduce to the Preſervation*

vation of God's true Religion, your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity; and to the Peace, Comfort, and Security of all your People. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Houses next considered of the Manner of delivering this Petition to the King; and, since the Way they sent their last was so disagreeable to him, it was thought proper, That a Committee of Lords and Commons should be sent with it: But, first, that a Letter should be wrote to one of the Secretaries of State, or some Peer near his Majesty, to desire a Safe-Conduct for these Persons; and that a Trumpet should be sent before the Messenger, to desire a Safe-Conduct for the Delivery of their Letter. Accordingly the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, Speaker of the House of Lords *pro Tempore*, wrote the following Letter, directed to the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty, or, in his Absence, for Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, or any of the Lords the Peers, attending his Majesty.

My Lords,

Lord *Grey*'s Letter, desiring a Safe-Conduct for their Messengers.

I Am commanded, by the Lords the Peers, and Commons assembled in Parliament, to address, by you, their humble Desires to his Majesty, that he would be pleased to grant his Safe-Conduct to a Committee of Lords and Commons to pass and repass unto his Majesty, who are directed to attend him with an humble Petition from his Parliament.

This being all I have in Commission, I rest

Your assured Friend and Servant,

Westminster, this 3d of *November*, 1642.

GREY of *Werk*,
Speaker of the House of Peers
pro Tempore.

Nothing intervened, worth Notice, till the 5th; when the Lord *Grey* received an Answer to his Letter to the Secretary, which was read.

To

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. To the Right Honourable the Lord *Grey* of *Ware*, Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

November. My Lord,

Which is granted by the King. *HIS Majesty hath commanded me, to deliver to your Lordship's of the third present, to signify to you, That he alwaies hath been, and is still, ready to receive the humble Petition of either or both Houses of Parliament; and shall take Order, that a Committee of Lords and Commons may pass and repair to him, with the Petition of both Houses, as is desired; so as the said Committee consists of Persons that have not been by his Majesty, either by Name, declared Traitors; or otherwise, in some of his Declarations or Proclamations, excepted against by Name, with his Intention ensuing to proceed against them as Traitors; and so as the said Committee come not with more than thirty Persons in their Company, and give Notice before-hand of their coming: And for the said Committee's better Security, his Majesty, upon the Receipt of their Names, will give a Safe-Conduct for them under his Hand and Signet. This being all I have in Command to deliver to your Lordship, I humbly rest*

Your Lordship's

Reading, Nov. 4, 1642. Most humble Servant,

ED. NICHOLAS.

To this Letter, the Lord *Grey* was directed to return the following Answer; but since this Answer and the consequent Resolutions were the chief Bulwarks of some Days, we shall put them all together, for the Reader's greater Ease in the Perusal.

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majesty; or, in his Absence, to any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majesty,

My Lord,

Several other Letters in consequence thereof. *I Have received a Command from the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to send you the Names of two Lords; that is to say,* Algernon *Earl of* Northumberland,

umberland, Philip *Earl of* Pembroke *and* Mont- An. 18. Car. I. 1642.
gomery, *and of four Members of the Houſe of Commons*, *Mr.* Pierrepont, *the Lord* Wenman, *Sir* John Evelin *of* Wilts, *and Sir* John Hippiſly; *being the Committees of both Houſes appointed to attend his Majeſty with an humble Petition directed from them to his Majeſty*; *deſiring your Lordſhip will be pleaſed to move his Majeſty to ſend a Safe-Conduct, to paſs and repaſs, under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the ſeveral Perſons aforementioned.* November.

This being all that I have in Commiſſion, I reſt

Your Lordſhip's Friend and Servant,

Weſtminſter, *this 5th of* November, 1642.

GREY *of Werk*, Speaker to the Houſe of Peers *pro Tempore*.

To the Right Honourable the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, Speaker of the Houſe of Peers *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

YOUR Lordſhip's Letter, of the fifth of November *I ſhewed his Majeſty, who hath expreſly commanded me to return your Lordſhip this Anſwer in theſe few Words, That his Majeſty hath ſent (which I have incloſed) a Safe-Conduct, under his Royal Hand and Signet, for the Earl of* Northumberland, *and the Earl of* Pembroke *and* Montgomery, *Mr.* Pierrepoint, *the Lord* Wenman, *and Sir* John Hippiſly; *but hath not admitted Sir* John Evelin *of* Wilts *to attend him, as being included in the Exception made by his Majeſty in the Letter ſent by Mr. Secretary* Nicholas *to your Lordſhip of the 4th, as by the incloſed Proclamation, proclaimed at his Majeſty's Court at* Oxford, *and ſent, with a Writ ſealed, into the County of* Wilts, *will appear. His Majeſty hath likewiſe commanded me to ſignify to your Lordſhip, That in caſe the Houſes ſhall think fit to ſend any other Perſon in the Place of Sir* John Evelin, *that is not included in the Exception made in Mr. Secretary's Letter before-mentioned, his Majeſty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects, to ſuffer him*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

him as freely to pass and repass as if his Name had been particularly comprised in this Safe-Conduct. This being all that I have in Commission, I rest

Your Lordship's humble Servant,

FALKLAND.

Reading, *this 6th of* November, 1642.

His Majesty's SAFE-CONDUCT.

CHARLES *R.*

OUR Will and Pleasure is, and we do hereby strictly charge and command all the Officers and Soldiers of our present Army, and all our Ministers and Subjects whatsoever, to suffer our Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousins and Counsellors Algernon *Earl of* Northumberland, *and* Philip *Earl of* Pembroke *and* Montgomery, *and our Right Trusty and Right Well-beloved Cousin* Thomas *Lord Viscount* Wenman, *and our Trusty and Well-beloved* William Pierrepont, *Esq; and Sir* John Hippisly, *Knight, (together with their Attendants, not exceeding the Number of Thirty) to pass and repass to and from us, they being now sent to attend us with a Petition from both our Houses of Parliament. This our Safe-Conduct, under our Royal Hand and Signet, we charge and command them, and every of them, punctually to observe and obey, as they will answer the contrary at their uttermost Perils.*

Given at our Court at *Reading*, this 6th of *November*, 1642.

The King having objected against Sir *John Evelin's* being one of the Committee,

Then was read the Proclamation, mentioned in Lord *Falkland's* Letter, as a Reason why the King excepted against Sir *John Evelin* [g] as one of the Commissioners; after which a great Debate ensued in

[g] Sir *John Evelin*, Sir *Edward Bungerford*, Sir *Henry Ludlow*, and *Walter Long*, Esq; all of them Members of the House of Commons, were, by Name, excepted in the King's Proclamation of Pardon to the County of *Wilts*, dated at *Oxford*, *November* 2. 1642. *Husbands's Collections*, p. 730.

in the Houſe of Lords, and the Queſtion being put, Whether the Lord *Falkland*'s laſt Anſwer ſhould be ſent to the Commons with the Senſe of this Houſe upon it, or without it? It paſſed for the latter, and was ſent down accordingly. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

November 7. The Earl of *Eſſex* being this Day in the Houſe of Lords, they received a Meſſage from the Commons, importing, That now the Lord-General was returned, they ought to remember his great Care of the Army and Hazard of his Perſon, which he ſhewed in this Expedition: And, to that Purpoſe, they deſired the Lords to join with them in appointing a Committee of both Houſes, to draw up an Acknowledgement of Thanks for his Care, and for his Obedience to their Commands.

A Committee of both Houſes was, accordingly, appointed to draw up an Addreſs of Thanks to the Lord-General. The Commons further deſired that his Excellency might be commanded to give his Orders to draw out the Army, as ſpeedily and as conveniently as he could, for the Defence of the Kingdom, and to prevent the Outrages of the King's Troops; that Houſe being informed that Prince *Rupert* was now about *Windſor*.

To this the Lord-General ſaid, That the Army had had a long March; but, as ſoon as they were fit, he would quarter them in ſuch Places as ſhould be moſt convenient for the Preſervation of thoſe Parts.

The ſame Day the Commons ſent up a Vote of their Houſe, on the King's Objection to Sir *John Evelin*, to this Purpoſe:

Reſolved, 'That this Houſe holds it to be a Denial in his Majeſty, and a Refuſal to grant a Treaty with the Parliament, in excepting unto one of the Meſſengers that were to preſent a Petition unto him from both Houſes, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.' Both Houſes declare this to be a Refuſal of Peace on his Part.

The Queſtion being put, by the Lords, Whether the King's Safe-Conduct ſhould be accepted upon theſe Terms? It paſſed in the Negative.

After

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

After this a Committee of both Houſes were appointed to go into the City of *London*, to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament had uſed to procure a Treaty for a Peace, without being able to effect it; and to quicken them to a Reſolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties and Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes. Likewiſe, the Committee of Safety were ordered to prepare a Declaration upon this Denial of the King's to admit ſuch Members as were appointed, by both Houſes, to preſent their Petition; one of the Heads of which was to be, the King's expreſſing a Readineſs to receive a Petition from the Rebels in *Ireland*.

And ſend a Committee to acquaint the City of *London* therewith.

November 8. Two of the Committees from the Parliament to the City, on the above Occaſion, were the Lord *Brooke* and Sir *Henry Vane*, junior; whoſe Speeches, at the *Guildhall*, being yet preſerved, we here ſubjoin them in their own Words as follows: [k]

And firſt Lord *Brooke*.

My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the reſt of the Gentlemen here aſſembled,

Lord *Brooke*'s Speech to the Citizens.

'I Am to deliver a Meſſage to you from the Lords and Commons now aſſembled in Parliament; but before I do that, I ſhall crave Leave to excuſe ſomething that hath happened: There ſhould have been divers Lords, and ſome Gentlemen of the Houſe of Commons here, far fitter to have done this Work that is now put upon me, if they could poſſibly have attended the Service, who were appointed by the Houſe; as the Lord-General of the Horſe, the Earl of *Bedford*, and ſome other Lords; but you will all conceive that they, being all Men employed in the Army, could not attend this your Service; tho' they are about your Service and the Good of the Kingdom, which is giving Order for your Safety, and theirs; and therefore, I hope,

[k] From the Collections of the late *Thomas Sclater Bacon*, Eſq; of *Cambridge*, to which we are obliged for many curious Pamphlets of theſe Times.

hope, you will take it in good Part, that there is no other Appearance here. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Gentlemen, what I have to say to you, in short, is this: I suppose, at this Time of Action, you will not expect long Prefacings; if you do, I am the unfittest Man in the World to do it: I shall therefore shortly deliver my Message. I doubt not but you have heard some Whisperings of an Accommodation; and no Man that is an Honest Man, a Religious Man, a Free Man, that loves Religion and the Kingdom, but would have an Accommodation; for nothing is more miserable, and nothing is more distracting than War: But that an Accommodation should come upon Terms ignoble and disadvantageous, that never was in the Thought of either House, and I hope never will be; and, I am ordered to tell you, never shall be.

'I am at this Time to intreat you, in the Name of both Houses of Parliament, to go on courageously, and fight, and prepare yourselves for that which is at hand: We hear the Enemies approach nearer every Day, who aim at nothing else but to swallow up our Religion, Lives, Liberties, and Estates; and therefore it becomes you to labour to defend them all.

'I have more to say, but it is better said here in the Votes of the Houses of Lords and Commons; I desire they should be read unto you, and therein you will fully understand what their Sense is.

Monday, 7th of November, 1642.

The Question being put, Whether a Safe-Conduct shall be accepted upon these Terms? It pass'd with the Negative.

'This was, first, in the House of Commons. The Meaning of this Vote is, There was a Safe-Conduct desired of his Majesty for six Persons, two of the House of Lords, *viz.* the Earl of *Pembroke* and the Earl of *Northumberland*, and four of the House of Commons; among these there was one Sir *John Evelin*, of *Wiltshire*: The King would not let

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

let him have a Safe-Conduct, because he was one that was named, by him, a Traitor the Day before; and that was done, as is thought, on purpose to take him off from being one; therefore the House of Commons did look upon that as a Denial, in that he could not have a Safe-Conduct. This Vote of theirs was presented to the House of Lords, and they concurred with it, *viz.*

Resolved, upon the Question,

That this House holdeth this to be a Denial of his Majesty, and a Refusal to grant a Treaty to the Parliament, in accepting against one of the Messengers that was to present a Petition to his Majesty from both Houses to that Purpose, and denying to grant him a Safe-Conduct.

Resolved, &c.

That Committees of both Houses shall be appointed to go to the City of London, *to acquaint the Common-Hall with all the Ways the Parliament hath used to procure a Treaty for a Peace, and could not effect it; and to quicken them to a Resolution of defending and maintaining their Liberties, and their Religion, with their Lives and Fortunes; and that they have appointed a Committee to prepare a Declaration, upon this Denial of his Majesty to admit such Members as were appointed, by both Houses, to present a Petition to his Majesty for a Treaty; and of his Majesty's expressing his Willingness to receive a Petition from the Rebels in* Ireland.

'Here is one Thing more, Gentlemen, that is worth your taking Notice of; this is so well said, I shall not need to say it over again; only here, in the latter End, you see there is a Committee appointed to come hither, to give you an Account of the Reasons moving them on to this Action; and to shew you all the Ways they have used, if it were possible, to have procured a Treaty for a Peace.

'There is another Thing in the End, very remarkable, which you may very well take Notice of: His Majesty will not, but upon Terms altogether unfitting, accept of any Treaty from us; yet,

at

at the same Time, is willing to receive a Petition from the Rebels in *Ireland*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'We are no Rebels; but dutiful in all we do: They are Rebels and Traitors in the Judgment of all Men; and yet he will receive no Petition from us; but he will receive a Petition from them!'

Sir *Henry Vane* spoke to this Effect:

My Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and the rest of the Gentlemen here assembled,

Sir *Henry Vane*'s,

'IT is not unknown to you, with what Difficulties, with what Dangers, both Houses of Parliament have a long Time conflicted, for to bring the Liberties, and the Religion, and the Welfare, of this Kingdom into such a Posture as might give all the Inhabitants thereof full Satisfaction. It is not unknown likewise, how busy the Enemies of this great Work have been, to cast Scandals, to cast false Aspersions, upon the Proceedings, upon the Carriage of Parliament; they therefore thought fit, (that they might undeceive all Persons of the greatest Malice, and of the greatest Opposition to their Endeavours) not long since, to frame a Petition; a Petition full of Humility, a Petition full of Modesty, whereby they did desire his Majesty that they might apply themselves to make such Propositions to him, as might effect this great Work.

'This Petition, that it might be delivered, they thought fit for to name (as this Noble Lord hath told you) six Persons; two of the Lords House, and four of the House of Commons; Men that they thought altogether without the least Scruple, without the least Exception, knowing that nothing in the Carriage of these Persons could render them liable to Exception, but their Duty and Observance to the Commands of both Houses. When the Names of these Persons were sent to his Majesty, for to have a Safe-Conduct, immediately, I think the very Day before, there came out a Proclamation against one of them, excepting him out of the Grace and

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Favour of his Majesty, as it is termed, and laying him in the Condition of a Rebel and of a Traitor against him, for his Obedience to, and Observance of, the Commands of Parliament.

'This being brought to both Houses, they looked on it as a Business of such great Importance, that if they should suffer any one Member, or any one Person, that, through his Dutifulness and Observance of their Commands, should lie under a Cloud with his Majesty, so as not to be admitted to his Presence, but be looked at in such a Condition, as this Proclamation put him in: They looked on it, I say, as the greatest Indignity, and the greatest Calumny that could befall a Parliament; and the greatest Discouragement that should lie upon all Men to stand to a Parliament, if they should not be defended and protected: Hereupon they resolved to declare, That the Unwillingness lay not in them to make Peace; but it lay in that ill Counsel, and that desperate Counsel, that hath hemm'd in his Majesty; and will not suffer such Points, will not suffer such Propositions as these, to take Effect with him; but will labour to destroy all your Estates and Properties, and all that is near and dear to you in this Kingdom.

'The House of Commons, therefore, have thought it fit to acquaint you with these Proceedings; to let you know how careful they are, by all good Ways, and by all good Means, to present their Loyalty and Duty to his Majesty, to take Care of themselves, and all that belongs to you: But, when they see all will not take Effect, they doubt not but you will join cordially, and join resolutely, with your Purses, and with your Endeavours, and with all that lies in your Power, to acquit yourselves like Men; to defend yourselves; to defend them that have laboured in your Work, in your Cause, and who are willing to spend their Lives and Blood in your Service to the utmost Man: Therefore they desire this of you, that, since they have taken this Care, you will hearken to no Reports that shall tend to the Disparagement of their Proceedings; but

but will unanimouſly concur to defend yourſelves againſt that Violence and Oppreſſion, that is now almoſt at your Doors.—And this is that we have to recommend to you.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Then the Lord *Brooke* ſpoke again.

Gentlemen,

'I Have but one Word more to trouble you with. This Honourable Gentleman, Sir *Henry Vane*, hath expreſs'd ſo fully all that was in the Meſſage, that, truly, I ſhould wrong him and myſelf too, if I ſhould ſay any more; therefore I ſhall now ſpeak to you of another Thing. It is not fit any thing that concerns you ſhould be concealed from you. Lord *Brooke*'s ſecond Speech.

'I came this Day to this Place, to this Houſe, about another Buſineſs, which I have already communicated to my Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, and the Committee. I think it will not be unfit you ſhould know it. I have the Conſent of ſome, that underſtand this Buſineſs very well, to what I now ſhall do. Gentlemen, the Meſſage was this, it was a Meſſage from his Excellency; it is to let you know how near the Danger is at Hand, that ſo you may gird up the Loins of your Reſolution, and act like Men of Courage. Gentlemen, Citizens of *London*, (better than whom no Man did in that Army we had lately in the Field) the Enemy's Foot, as we underſtand, are very near *Staines*, their Horſe are about *Kingſton*. We cannot ſay that all are there; but that there are both Horſe and Foot, and it is certain our Foot are going to them: So that the Queſtion is now, What is to be done? This is a certain Truth among all Soldiers, That you muſt keep Evil as far off you as you can; you muſt not let it come near your Doors: You muſt not think to fight in the Sighs, and Tears, and Eyes, and Diſtractions of your Wives and Children; but to go out, and meet it valiantly as you have done.

'God hath ſhewed himſelf a God of Love and Mercy, and truly we muſt give him all the Honour of that Day; certainly it is the greateſt Victory that

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

ever was gotten; near 2000 (I love to ſpeak with the leaſt) on their Side ſlain; and, I am confident, not 100 on our Side, unleſs you will take in Women and Children, Carmen, and Dogs; for they ſlew the very Dogs and all. If you take in Women, Children, Carmen, and Dogs, then they ſlew about 200. But that 100 ſhould be ſlain on one Side, and 2000 on the other Side, is a very miraculous Thing.

'God that dealt ſo wonderfully heretofore, it were to diſtruſt him, if we did not think he would do ſo again. Truly he hath a People among us exceedingly beloved.

'What is it we fight for? It is for our Religion, and for our God, and for our Liberty, and all. And what is it they fight for? For their Luſt, for their Will, and for their Tyranny; to make us Slaves, and to overthrow all.

'Gentlemen, methinks I ſee your Courage by your Faces. I ſpy you ready to do any thing; and the General's Reſolution is, to go out To-morrow, and do as a Man of Courage and Reſolution; and never Man did like him; for he was not only General, but Common Soldier; for he led up his own Regiment, he led up his own Troop in his own Perſon; and when the Left Troops of Horſe deceived him, he brought up the Right Troops. He himſelf will go out again, and do again as much as he hath done: All this is for your Sakes, for he can be a Freeman, he can be a Gentleman, he can be a great Man, he can go where he will; therefore it is only for your Sakes he is reſolved to go out To-morrow. His Forces are weary, his Forces are ſpent, ſome came but laſt Night into Town, ſome marched above twenty Miles, which is a great March, as ſome that know what it is can tell; but, as weary as they are, he is reſolved to go out; and if you will affect the Cauſe, and join with him Hand, and Heart, and Sword, he will take it as a Favour; but if you will not, he doubts not but *Gideon*'s Sword will do the Work alone.

'I

'I speak not this that I doubt you, but that you would resolve, that when you hear the Drums beat, (for it is resolved that the Drums shall beat To-morrow; our Drums shall beat to lead out our Men, and the Committee's Drums shall beat to lead out their Men) say not, I beseech you, I am not of the Trained-Band, nor this, nor that, nor t'other; but doubt not to go out to the Work, and fight courageously, and this shall be the Day of your Deliverance.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Nov. 9. Notwithstanding the foregoing Speeches to the Citizens of *London* seem to breathe nothing but War, yet the House of Commons thought fit to soften the Harshness of their Vote of the 7th; for, this Day, Mr. *Pymme* brought up a different Resolution, to which he desired their Lordships Concurrence, *viz.*

'Resolved, That the Petition shall be sent to his Majesty; and the Reasons which induced the Commons to make this Vote, he said, were these; The Commons resolve, again, to send their Petition to the King;

First, 'The great Advantage which should be gained by a settled Peace; for, thereby, they should better attend to the War in *Ireland*; and it would unite the King and Kingdom more closely, and prevent the Loss of our Religion and the Liberties of the Subject; for Peace, upon other Terms than these, they resolve never to accept: That,

Secondly, 'The House of Commons did, also, consider the Danger the King's Person was in at the last Battle; and the great Mischiefs that War had already brought upon the Commonwealth, which would be increased if it should be continued; so much Blood being already spilt and many of great Quality slain; and that Sir *John Evelin* should be left to his Liberty to go along with the rest if he think fit.'[f]

To this pacific Vote the Lords readily agreed; but as though the Commons designed to shew the King the Olive Branch in one Hand and the Sword in the other, Which the Lords agree to:

[f] Lord *Clarendon* remarks, That, by this Expedient, the Commons satisfied themselves, that the leaving Sir *John Evelin* behind them, without bringing another in his Room, was no Submission to the King's Exception.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

other, the subsequent Request came along with it; which was to desire the Lords to join with them in ordering the Lord-General to draw out his Army the next Morning; and that a Proclamation should go out that Afternnoon for all Soldiers, on Pain of Death, to repair to their Colours: And that the Army might not be at a Loss for Recruits, the Commons sent up the following Ordinance.

But, at the same Time, order all Soldiers to join their Regiments,

And pass an Ordinance for encouraging Apprentices to list.

'WHereas, in Times of Common Danger and Necessity, the Interest of private Persons ought to give Way to the Public: It is ordained and declared, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that such Apprentices as have been, or shall be, listed to serve as Soldiers, for the Defence of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, his Majesty's Royal Person, the Parliament, and the City of *London*; their Sureties, and such as stand engaged for them, shall be secured against their Masters, their Executors, and Administrators, from all Loss and Inconveniences, by Forfeiture of Bonds, Covenants, Infranchisements, or otherwise: And that after this public Service is ended, the Masters of such Apprentices shall be commanded and required to receive them again into their Service, without imposing upon them any Punishment, Loss, or Prejudice for their Absence, in the Defence of the Commonwealth.

'And the Lords and Commons do further declare, That, if it shall appear that the Masters of such Apprentices have received any considerable Loss by the Absence of their Apprentices, they will take Care that reasonable Satisfaction shall be made unto them, out of the Public Stock of the Kingdom, according to Justice and Indifferency.'

The Commons, also, desired the Lords to join with them in sending a Committee of both Houses again to the City, to acquaint them with the Reasons that moved the Parliament to send this Petition to his Majesty; and to let them know the Resolution

tion of the Parliament is, That they will not agree to any Peace, but what ſhall be fully for the Preſervation of Religion, the Liberty of the Subject, and the ſettling the Quiet of the Kingdom: That if this cannot effectually be done, both Houſes are reſolved to ſpend their Lives and Fortunes in the Maintenance thereof. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

To this the Lords agreed; and ordered, That the Lord Mayor ſhould be deſired to call a Common-Hall, at Six that Evening, if he could, or elſe at Nine o'Clock next Morning. A Committee of four Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners, were appointed to go to the City on this Occaſion. At the ſame Time the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords was ordered to write the following Letter:

To the Right Honourable the Lord Viſcount *Falkland*, Principal Secretary to his Majeſty; or, in his Abſence, to any of the Lords the Peers attending his Majeſty.

My Lord,

I Am commanded, by the Peers aſſembled in Parliament, to deſire your Lordſhip to advertiſe his Majeſty, that the late Petition, reſolved on by both Houſes of Parliament, will be preſented unto him; which they believe proper for your Lordſhip's Knowledge, that ſo his Majeſty may be acquainted with it; and thus I reſt A Letter ſent to inform the King of the ſaid Petition.

Your Lordſhip's

November 9, 1642.

affectionate Servant,

GREY.

November 10. Committees of both Houſes being gone out, on their ſeveral Embaſſies, one to the King, and the other to the City, the Houſe of Lords only met and adjourned to the next Day. In the Committee for the latter, were the Earl of *Holland* and Mr. *Pymme*, whoſe Speeches at the *Guild-* And a Committee go to acquaint the City of *London* therewith.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Guildhall on the Occaſion, not being printed in *Ruſhworth's Collections*, we think deſerve a Place in theſe Enquiries. [g]

The Earl of *Holland*'s Speech.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen and Inhabitants of the City,

The Earl of *Holland*'s Speech on that Occaſion.

'WE are commanded by both Houſes of Parliament to come hither, and to deliver to you, that are their great Aſſiſtants, an Account of a Reſolution they have taken to ſend a Petition to his Majeſty, grounded upon theſe Reaſons:

'The firſt is, That there is a Duty towards God to ſeek Peace, indeed to ſeek it with all Men; therefore properly and naturally with the King: This they are directed to do. If Peace flies from us, to purſue it, to follow it: This is their holy Duty.

'They have likewiſe taken into their Thoughts, very ſeriouſly, that which may concern the Safety of the King's Perſon, being engaged in this laſt Battle, through his own Reſolution and Adventures, to put his Perſon in ſome Hazard; they have a Tenderneſs of that; and, amongſt other Conſiderations, it is that which prevails with them to deſire that He may not be in Danger, if it be poſſible, by a further Purſuance of this Action; which, in all Probability, muſt come to a ſecond Blow, and that ſpeedily, if there be not ſome other Way taken for an Accommodation.

'There is another Reaſon that they are likewiſe perſuaded the more willingly thus to petition and to deſire Peace; that is, for the Saving and Recovering the Kingdom of *Ireland* out of the Diſtreſs that you have long ſeen it in. They know the Impoſſibility for this Kingdom to relieve that, if we continue in theſe Diſtractions and Confuſions within ourſelves; and, therefore, believe nothing can contribute or conduce towards the recovering of that Kingdom, and the delivering of thoſe Perſons from Danger

[g] *London*, Printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal-Exchange*.

ger that you ſent thither, but our Quietneſs and our Peace here. If that Kingdom ſhould fall into other Hands, ſuch Hands as it may likely and probably do, what Inconvenience, what Danger, muſt fall upon this Kingdom, from the Power and the Neighbourhood of that, you all muſt imagine. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'They do likewiſe conſider what Advantages, in the Diſtractions amongſt ourſelves, Foreign States may take, when our own Hands are weakened, and a Deſolation through the whole Kingdom: Thoſe that do malign our Religion, their Conſciences direct them to deſtroy it, as well as their Ambitions to make a Conqueſt of the Nation; how open we ſhall be likewiſe to them for any Prejudice, or any Danger that may fall upon us.

'Beſides, they have a Conſideration of the whole Kingdom, that have ſo long continued in Peace, in the Bleſſings of Peace, ſo long in the Beds of Peace, and in the Arms of Peace, (for theſe hundred Years there have been no Civil Diviſions nor Diſtractions within this Kingdom) and thoſe Abundances that Peace hath procured, and thoſe Happineſſes which are all likely to be devoured by the Sword of War; as in every Part of the Kingdom, already you ſee how it begins to deſtroy, with what Height, with what Power, with what Inſolency.

'Theſe are Conſiderations, that have made them believe, that as it is a Duty to God, it is that which they owe likewiſe to the King; it is that which they owe to the Kingdom, in which they have been born and bred; it is likewiſe a Diſcharge of their own Conſciences, that every Body may ſee that it is not their Faults, if Peace be not procured.

'But though they are thus reſolved, and upon theſe Reaſons, to offer a Petition, and to ſeek Peace by all the Ways that are poſſible, yet they have commanded me to let you know, that, as they deſire Peace, they will prepare for War; they have given Directions, that this Day my Lord-General ſhall carry his Army out of the City; there is a Rendezvous appointed; they ſhall there draw themſelves together in ſuch a Condition, as, we are very confident,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

fident, and very hopeful, we ſhall be able to defend it.

'We are likewiſe reſolved, and ſo I am commanded to deliver to you, That as we have long kept together with Reſolutions to defend our Privileges, our Religion, our Liberties, and Laws; ſo we will continue in the ſame Reſolution, and the ſame Purpoſe to do ſo; nothing ſhall deter us from it. If we can find Peace from his Majeſty upon theſe Conditions, that Religion, and Laws, and our Liberties, and all, may be happily ſecured to the Kingdom and to you all, we ſhall be glad of it; and it will be a Bleſſing to us, and to you all: If it cannot be done, we are reſolved, and ſo I am commanded to let you know, nothing ſhall diſcourage us, neither Danger, nor Power, nor any thing; but if we cannot maintain our Religion, our Laws, and our Liberties, we will periſh and die for it.'

Mr. *Pymme*'s Speech.

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

And Mr. *Pymme*'s.

'THere is little to be added to that which was ſaid by this Noble Lord, who hath repreſented to you (to you of this famous City of *London*, who will make it much more famous by theſe noble Affections, which you have ſhewed ſtill to the Public Good, and by yielding ſo much Aid, and ſo much Encouragement as you have done, to the Parliament in maintaining it) the Senſe of both Houſes, the Reaſons and Motives upon which they did deſire Peace: Motives, indeed, that have wrought with us from the Beginning of this War to this Time; for we ſhould never have ſtepped one Step towards War, if we might have had, or hoped for, ſuch a Peace as might have ſecured Religion and Liberty, and the Public Good of the Kingdom; but truly ill Counſel did exclude us from ſuch Hope.

'We now conceive that the King, having ſeen the Courage of his Subjects, having ſeen the Danger of

of his own Perſon, and ſo much Blood ſhed about him, he will be more tractable to good Conditions of Peace, than he would have been before; and that is the Reaſon why we do think fit to try him, once more, after this Battle that hath been lately fought, before it come to another Battle. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'It is true, that this may ſeem a Reſolution contrary to that which was opened to you within theſe few Days; but you will conceive, that all great Councils are ſubject to alter their Reſolutions, according as Matters alter, and as the Apprehenſions of Matters alter; for if Things appear more clear and hopeful to them at one Time than at another, it is no Diſhonour for them to vary according to their Appearance, Judgments, and beſt Reaſons; ſo long as they do it with Affections to the beſt Purpoſe; which you may reſt aſſured the Parliament hath done: And though we deſire Peace very much, yet a Peace to betray Religion, or to betray our Liberties, we ſhall always eſteem worſe than War; therefore we ſhall put it to a very quick Iſſue, if the King receive the Petition, to make ſuch Propoſitions as you may ſee:

'*Firſt*, Whether you ſhall be ſecured in your Religion; in your Religion with a Hope of Reformation; ſuch a Reformation as may maintain the Power of Religion, and the Purity of Religion, as well as the Name of Religion; for we ſhall not be contented with the Name, nor without a Reformation that ſhall maintain the Power of it.

'*Next*, We ſhall purſue the Maintenance of our Liberties; Liberties that may not only be in Laws and Statutes; but Liberties that may be in Practice and in Execution; and to take ſuch Courſe, that you may have the Effects of them in Truth: For to have printed Liberties, and not to have Liberties in Truth and Reality, is but to mock the Kingdom; and I hope we ſhall take Care for that in the ſecond Place.

'*Thirdly*, We ſhall take Care to maintain the Dignity and the Honour of Parliament; for that is

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

is what will be a lasting Security to you in your Liberty and Religion.

'We shall take Care, in the *fourth* Place, to answer the Affections of the City of *London*, That we will not consent to any Thing that shall be prejudicial to them: We will preserve them in the highest Degree of Honour, that ever this City of *London* was in; and truly it is now in the highest Degree of Honour that ever it was; for you have carried yourselves in such a Regard to the Public, that never any of your Predecessors did so before; and therefore we shall, in a Peace, be as careful of you as of ourselves; and you may be assured of this, that if we have not this Peace, our Lives, our Pains, our Estates, they shall all join with you, in maintaining that with the Sword, which we shall not get in an humble Way by Petition; and this we shall bring to a quick Issue.

'Therefore I shall only move you, as I am commanded to do from the Parliament, that you will not think there is any Fainting on our Parts; that we are more cold, or less affectionate to any of these good Ends than heretofore we have been; but that we would compass them with more secure Advantage: For if you can get these by Peace, you will have great Advantages by it; you will hinder foreign Invasions from beyond the Seas; you will quickly be able to Master the Rebels in *Ireland*; you will quickly be able to suppress the Papists that begin to rise in *England*; then you shall have a perpetual Security, that they shall never be able to hurt you more: Therefore, if we can have such a Peace, without further Hazard and Blood-shedding, we shall praise God, and esteem it as a great Blessing; but if not, pray lay not down the same Spirits, for we have the same Hearts, and Multitudes of Spirits, and the Kingdom inclinable to us. Where the King has been, many, to save their Estates and Lives, have shewed themselves but Men; for it was not to be thought that single Counties should maintain themselves against an Army; but they have

have Hearts as they had before; and no doubt but they will join with us, with more Alacrity, when they see we have desired Peace by all the Ways we could, and cannot have it. An. 18. Car. I. 1642, November.

'We shall, by this Means, satisfy our own Consciences; we shall satisfy many Members of Parliament, that desired it might be put on this Way; we shall satisfy many of the Kingdom too, that have held themselves indifferent; but when they see there is no Hope of Peace, in such a Way, without Blood, certainly they will stand to us for Religion and Liberty; which must be destroyed if we cannot secure them without War: Therefore, I shall commend to you, that you would not let fall any Part of your Contributions, for it is that which must maintain the Army; nor entertain ill Apprehensions of the Parliament; but go on so as you have done, and I hope it will be such an End as God may have all the Glory, and you all the Comfort.'

November 11. A Letter was read in the House of Lords, directed to their Speaker *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

WE were got near Maidenhead, *when Sir* Peter Killegrew *met us, and told us that his Majesty was on Horse-back, on his Way towards* Colebrook; *and that his Pleasure was, we should return thither and attend him there. When, soon after his Arrival, his Majesty sent for us, and we presented the Petition as we were commanded. His Majesty returned an Answer, which we here inclose, in the same Words, or as near as we can recollect them. This is all the Account that can be given by* Account of the Petition's being presented to the King.

Your Lordship's Servants,

Uxbridge, Nov. 10, 1642.

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.
PEMBROKE *and* MONTGOMERY.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The King's Anſwer, referred to in the foregoing Letter, was then read.

His Majeſty's firſt Anſwer.

I Know you do not expect that I ſhould give you an Anſwer now to this, which is of ſo great Importance; but ſomething I will ſay, at this preſent, to the Preamble, mentioning the ſaving of the Effuſion of Blood. I have often profeſſed, and called God and Man to witneſs, that if other Men, whom a ſhort Time will diſcover, had been as careful as myſelf, this War had not happened. What I have done was for my own Safety, and to maintain that Government with Honour, which my Father left me. I will not hinder your Return to London, *but will, in Part, deliver my Anſwer to you To-morrow, and ſend it more fully by ſome Meſſengers of my own.*

Amongſt other Buſineſs done this Day, in the Houſe of Lords, we find a Form of Thanks drawn up to be preſented to their Lord-General; which, for its extraordinary Style, and high Expreſſions of Gratitude, deſerves our Notice.

Both Houſes return Thanks to the Earl of *Eſſex* for his Conduct.

'THE Lords and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, having, upon mature Deliberation, and aſſured Confidence in the Wiſdom, Courage, and Fidelity of *Robert* Earl of *Eſſex*, choſen and appointed him Captain-General of the Forces raiſed by the Authority of Parliament, for the Defence of the true Proteſtant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, now in great and apparent Danger; do find, That the ſaid Earl hath managed this Service, of ſo high Importance, with ſo much Care, Valour, and Dexterity; as well as by the extremeſt Hazard of his Life, in a bloody Battle, near *Keynton*, in *Warwickſhire*, as, by all the Actions of a moſt excellent and expert Commander, in the whole Courſe of this Employment, as doth deſerve their beſt Acknowledgement. We do, therefore, declare and publiſh, to the laſting Honour of the ſaid Earl, the great and acceptable Service which he hath, herein, done to the Commonwealth; and ſhall be ready

and

'and willing, upon all Occasions, to express the 'due Sense which we have of his Merit, by assisting 'and protecting him, and all others employed under 'his Command, in this Service, with our Lives 'and Fortunes, to the uttermost of our Power. 'This to remain, upon Record, in both Houses of 'Parliament, as a Mark of Honour to his Person, 'Name, and Family, and for a Monument of his 'singular Virtue, to Posterity.' g

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

But the Commons were of Opinion, that the Earl of *Essex* deserved more than an Address of Thanks; for they resolved, That 5000 *l.* be forthwith presented to his Excellency from that House.

And the Commons vote him 5000 *l.*

The last Thing we shall take Notice of, in the Business of this long Day, is an Order of Parliament for a strict Search to be made, in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and their Suburbs, *Southwark*, &c. for all Officers and common Soldiers, belonging to the Earl of *Essex*'s Army; and to bring them to the Palace-Yard, *Westminster*, that they might be sent forthwith from thence to the Army. And all Alehouse-Keepers, or other Housholders, were strictly prohibited from harbouring any such, on very severe Penalties. This to be published, by beat of Drum, throughout the Places above-mentioned. And for a greater Inducement for all the Soldiery to repair to their Colours, at the Time appointed, the Commons ordered every Foot-Soldier Half a Crown, and the Horse Five Shillings a-piece, over and above their Pay.

Orders for assembling all the Soldiers of the Parliament's Army.

November 12. The Earls of *Northumberland* and *Pembroke* reported to the Lords, That they had waited on the King, Yesterday; who, to save Time, had returned a full Answer, by them, to their Petition.

His Majesty's ANSWER *to the aforesaid* PETITION.

'WE take God to witness how deeply we are 'affected with the Miseries of this King-'dom, which, heretofore, we have strove, as much 'as

The King's further Answer to the Parliament's Petition for Peace.

g It is accordingly entered in both *Journals*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'as in us lay, to prevent; it being sufficiently known 'to all the World, That as we were not the first 'that took up Arms, so we have shewed our Readiness of composing all Things in a fair Way, by 'our several Offers of Treaty; and shall be glad, 'now at length, to find any such Inclination in 'others: The same Tenderness to avoid the Destruction of our Subjects, whom we know to be 'our greatest Strength, which would always make 'our greatest Victories bitter to us, shall make us 'willingly hearken to such Propositions whereby 'these bloody Distempers may be stopped, and the 'great Distractions of this Kingdom settled, to 'God's Glory, our Honour, and the Welfare and 'Flourishing of our People; and, to that End, shall 'reside at our own Cattle at *Windsor*, if the Forces 'there shall be removed, till Committees may have 'Time to attend us with the same; which, to prevent the Inconveniences that will intervene, we 'wish may be hastened, and shall be ready there; 'or, if that be refused us, at any Place were we shall 'be, to receive such Propositions as aforesaid, from 'both Houses of Parliament. Do you your Duty; 'we will not be wanting in ours: God of his Mercy give a Blessing.'

After the reading of this Answer, it was resolved to communicate the Contents of it to the Commons. Then the Lord-General stood up, and desired he might receive Directions from the House how he should order his Forces during the Time of this Treaty: For, if he should advance his Quarters towards the King, it might be thought an Act of Hostility; and, if he should omit any Thing, then he might be looked upon as remiss. Thereupon the House resolved to write a Letter to the King's Secretary, to know his Majesty's Pleasure concerning a Cessation of Arms, during the Time of this Treaty; and gave the Lord-General Directions to forbear doing any Act of Hostility while further Orders. The Commons having given their Concurrence, a Letter was sent to the Secretary in these Words:

My

My Lord,

I Am commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to signify to your Lordship, that, with much Joy, they received his Majesty's Gracious Answer unto their Petition; expressing his pious Inclinations unto Peace. They do resolve, with all Diligence, to send their humble Propositions unto his Majesty, and, likewise, their Answer concerning Windsor-Castle; *in the mean Time, they desire to know his Majesty's Pleasure, how the Armies shall govern themselves, and whether he does not resolve on a Cessation of all Acts of Hostility, upon the Overture for Peace. This is all I have, at present, unto your Lordship, adding Duty unto it, and an Assurance of being*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Lord *Grey*'s Letter concerning a Cessation of Hostilities.

Your Lordship's

most affectionate Friend

and humble Servant,

GREY.

The House of Commons, however, did not wait for any Answer from the King; for this Day they agreed to send a Message to the Lord-General, to desire him to proceed according to his best Advantages, notwithstanding the foregoing Letter sent to the King by Sir *Peter Killigrew*, or any Proceedings thereon; in regard the other Side had begun to act Hostilities since that Letter was agreed upon. The General answered, That he did not intend to be amused by Treatics; but, since they had begun with Acts of Hostility, to pursue and see what they would do.

Nov. 13. The Parliament had now the City of *London* so much at their Devotion, that, this Day, the Commons being informed, That several Citizens were at the Door, who desired to offer something to their Consideration, they were called in: And one Mr. *Shute*, a Merchant, in the Name of the rest, addressed the House in a Speech, which appears to have been a very long one by the following

A Petition and Propofals from the City of *London* to the Commons.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

lowing Heads of it taken and entered in the *Commons Journals:*

'That they did acknowledge, with all Thankfulneſs, the continued and unwearied Care and Pains of this Houſe, for the Preſervation of the true Proteſtant Religion, the Liberty of the People, and the Privileges of Parliament.

'They have preſented a Petition of ten Particulars; to which they expect an Anſwer in convenient Time.

'They ſpeak in the Language of many Thouſands: That they fear they are bought and ſold.

Theſe Things they preſent:

1. 'That in a Caſe of ſo much Danger, and ſo great Concernment, there ſhould be but one Army to rely upon.

2. 'That, in all this Time, the King's Strength lying in Horſe, that the City ſhould not appear in a conſiderable Body of Horſe.—Though it has been offered, and not effectually yet put in a Way, they do now again offer it.

3. 'That *Windſor-Caſtle* ſhould not be provided for as it ought.

4. 'That Col. *Hollis*'s Regiment, Men of that Courage, and ſo conſiderable, ſhould be expoſed to a Place of ſo imminent Danger, lying next to the Enemy's Forces, and almoſt naked.

5. 'The Point of Accommodation is another Reaſon of their Grief.

They are come to this Reſolution:

'That they will man out every Man his Man, and make their own Captains and Officers, and live and die with the Houſe of Commons, and in Defence thereof: And if there be any in the Lords Houſe, that do any way retard or hinder this public Defence, they wiſh they would declare themſelves; and that they were with the King.

6. 'Another Matter of their Grief was, That the *Sabbath Day* ſhould be ſo long profaned by public Authority; and the Book that enjoins it, not yet burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.

They

They observe that this Day they have so profaned has been the Day of their Ruin. [a] An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

7. 'The Blood of the Martyrs, shed in Queen *Mary*'s Days, done by public Acts of Parliament, and no Expiation as yet made for it.

8. 'The Officers in the Army (though they must always mention my Lord-General with Honour, as one in whom they absolutely confide) not so careful and diligent as they ought, nor all of them so trusty.

9. 'The Numbers of the Prisoners very great, and of dangerous Condition; and the Masters and Keepers of those Prisons not to be confided in. [b]

10. 'The good Ministers in Time past silenced, and put out by the Bishops.

'You have our Persons, Purses, and Estates, all at your Command: You may do with us at your Pleasure.

'We come in the Name of the Godly and Active Part of the City.'

The Citizens being withdrawn, the Commons came to the following Resolutions:

1. 'That the Book concerning Injoining and Tolerating of Sports upon the *Sabbath* Day, be forthwith burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman, in the usual Places.

2. 'That this House doth accept of the Offer of the Citizens, of furnishing Horse and Foot; and doth account it to be a Service much importing the Safety of the Commonwealth; and doth return them public and hearty Thanks.'

The Citizens being called in again, the Speaker, by the Command of the House, told them, 'They found that what was said was expressed with a zealous and earnest Care of the Commonwealth; for which they returned them public and hearty Thanks.

[a] He means, we suppose, the Battle of *Edge-Hill*, fought on a *Sunday*.

[b] About this Time the Commons resolved, That the Bishop of *Winchester*'s House, in *Southwark*, should be appointed as a Prison for Delinquents; probably for the Reason here assigned.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For the Particular of Horſe and Foot, they accept it; and have appointed a particular Committee to treat about it.

'The Book of Sports they have voted to be burnt by the Hands of the common Hangman.'

Mr. *Shute* having deſired to ſpeak again, ſaid 'That the coming of the Lord General's Army into the City of *London*, and ſtaying here ſo long as they did, is another Thing that troubles them; which they forgot to expreſs before.

'Another Thing is, That ſome preſent and more ſevere Courſe might be taken with Malignants; and, amongſt them, with the malignant Miniſters.'

And then the Citizens withdrew.

November 14. A Letter from the King, directed to the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords, was read; which was only a Command to him to communicate the incloſed Paper to the whole Houſe; the Purport of which was this:

The King's Meſſage concerning his marching to *Brentford*;

'WHereas the laſt Night, being the 11th of *November*, after the Departure of the 'Committee of both our Houſes, with our gracious 'Anſwer to their Petition, we received certain In- 'formation (having till then heard nothing of it, 'either from the Houſes Committee, or otherwiſe) 'that the Earl of *Eſſex* had drawn his Forces out of '*London* towards us, which hath neceſſitated our 'ſudden Reſolution to march with our Forces to '*Brentford*; we have thought fit hereby to ſignify 'to both our Houſes of Parliament, that we are no 'leſs deſirous of the Peace of the Kingdom, than 'we expreſſed in our aforeſaid Anſwer; the Propo- 'ſitions for which we ſhall willingly receive, where- 'ever we are; and deſire, if it may be, to receive 'them at *Brentford* this Night, or early To-mor- 'row Morning, that all poſſible Speed may be 'made in ſo good a Work; and all Inconve- 'niences, otherwiſe likely to intervene, may be 'avoided.'

The

The Houſe was likewiſe informed, That Sir *Peter Killigrew*, who was to carry the Letter ſent laſt from the Parliament to the King, went as far as *Brentford*, where he found the King's Army engaged with ſome Regiments of the Lord-General's; and that then endeavouring to go by *Uxbridge*, he was there alſo ſtopp'd by ſome Dragoons belonging to the King's Army; and upon that he returned back with the Letter, which he deſired to know what to do with. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November. Where both Armies engage.

The Lord-General ſaying, at the ſame Time, That he had placed three Regiments at *Brentford*, before the Committee of Lords and Commons came from the King, it was reſolved to have a Conference with the Commons on all theſe Matters; and to appoint a Committee to draw up a Declaration; which, with the Letters *pro* and *con*, were to be forthwith printed and publiſhed, in order to vindicate the Actions and Deſires of both Houſes, concerning Peace and a Ceſſation of Arms. At this Conference, however, it was recommended to the Lord-General, by both Houſes, to take all Advantage againſt the Enemy, wherever he found them. The Parliament deſire the Earl of *Eſſex* to make uſe of all Advantages.

Nov. 15. The Commons reſolved to accept of an Offer of the Citizens of *London*, whereby they engaged to raiſe 1000 Light Horſe and 3000 Dragoons, for the Service of the Parliament, to be commanded by the Lord-General alone, and to be accountable to none but himſelf by the Advice of both Houſes. They alſo recommended Serjeant-Major-General *Skippon*, who formerly had commanded the Guard appointed to attend both Houſes, to command thoſe Horſe and Dragoons in Chief under the Lord-General; and Col. *Hurrey* under Mr. *Skippon* [k]. Mr. *Whitlocke* gives us the following Speech of the latter to his Soldiers; who, he The Citizens of *London* raiſe Light Horſe and Dragoons.

[k] Both Lord *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke* agree in aſcribing this extraordinary Offer of the Citizens, to the indefatigable Zeal and Activity of the Lord Mayor *Pennington*, who ſucceeded to that Office by the Removal of Sir *Richard Gurney*, and was again elected for the Year 1643.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

says, were more taken with it than with a formal Oration.

Mr. *Skippon*'s Speech to those Troops.

COME my Boys, my brave Boys, let us pray heartily and fight heartily, I will run the same Fortunes and Hazards with you. Remember the Cause is for God, and for the Defence of yourselves, your Wives, and Children. Come my honest brave Boys, pray heartily and fight heartily, and God will bless us.

Nov. 16. The Committee of Safety having drawn up an Answer to the King's last Message, it was this Day read and agreed to by both Houses, and was *in hæc Verba:*

The Parliament's Answer to the King's last Message.

'TO your Majesty's Message of the 12th of this 'Month of *November*, we the Lords and 'Commons in Parliament do make this humble 'Answer, That this Message was not delivered to 'us till *Monday* the 14th. We thought it a strange 'Introduction to Peace, that your Majesty should 'send your Army to beat us out of our Quarters at '*Brentford*, and then appoint that Place to receive 'our Propositions; which yet, it plainly appears, 'your Majesty intended not to receive, 'till you 'had first tried whether you could break through 'the Army, raised for the Defence of this Kingdom 'and Parliament, and take the City, being unpro-'vided and secure in Expectation of a fair Treaty 'made to secure the City: If herein your Majesty 'had prevailed, after you had destroyed the Army 'and master'd the City, it is easy to imagine what 'a miserable Peace we should have had: And whe-'ther those Courses be suitable to the Expressions 'your Majesty is pleased to make, in your Answer 'to our Petition, of your Earnestness to avoid any 'further Effusion of Blood, let God and the World 'judge.

'As for our Proceedings, they have, in all 'Things, been answerable to our Professions: We 'gave Directions to the Earl of *Essex* to draw the 'Army under his Command out of the City and 'Suburbs, before we sent any Message to your Ma-

jesty,

'jesty, so that Part of it was quartered in *Brentford* before the Committee return'd with your Answer; and immediately upon the Receipt thereof, that very Morning, Order was taken that the Soldiers should exercise no Acts of Hostility against any of your Majesty's People: We sent a Letter by Sir *Peter Killigrew* to know your Majesty's Pleasure, whether you intended the like Forbearance of Hostility; but the Fury of your Soldiers, thirsting after Blood and Spoil, prevented the Delivery of the Letter; for coming, upon *Saturday*, in his Way towards your Majesty, as far as *Brentford*, he found them in Fight there, and could pass no farther. God, who sees our Innocency, and that we have no Aims but for his Glory and the Public Good, will, we hope, free your Majesty from these destructive Counsels of some, who labour to maintain their own Power by Blood and Rapine; and bless our Endeavours, who seek nothing but to procure and establish the Honour, Peace, and Safety of your Majesty and Kingdoms, upon the sure Foundations of Religion and Justice.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Lord *Grey*, as Speaker, was ordered to send this Answer to the King, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, by Sir *Peter Killigrew*.

Nov. 18. Though both Houses were so much employed in the Military Service, that little or nothing else can be found in the *Journals* of either of them; yet, this Day, an Accident happened which diverted them a little from that Pursuit, and turned their Thoughts towards Law-Affairs and Courts of Justice. The Lords were informed, That a Messenger had been apprehended by the Lord-General, who finding about him a Proclamation and Writs for the Adjournment of the present Term, the said Papers were sent to the House of Commons; and, upon opening, they found the Proclamation for Adjournment was to take Place as that very Day. This the Commons conceived to be very destructive and prejudicial to the whole Kingdom, if it should be so; there being three Days in the Law, one for

His Majesty having proposed to adjourn *Michaelmas* Term,

Ef-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Eſſoigns, another for Returns, and a third for Appearances. And if the Term ſhould be adjourned, according to this Proclamation and Writ, it would be obſtructive to the whole Proceedings of the Law, and many Evils would enſue. For,

1. All former Proceedings, at the laſt Aſſizes, would be loſt, ſo that no Judgment could be given therein.

2. No original Writs, or meſne Proceſs, could iſſue out, on any Occaſion, though it be to deliver any out of Priſon.

3. If the Term ſhould be adjourned, there being an Army in the Field, and the King's Colours flying, it would be accounted *Tempus Belli*, when all Laws ſleep, are ſilent and diſſolved; and then there would be no Property, nor would any Violence be counted an Injury.

4. No Fines nor Recoveries could be taken, whereby Men may paſs common Aſſurances for ſettling their Eſtates; beſides many other Evils would enſue, to the Obſtruction of the whole Law.

Therefore the Houſe of Commons deſired, that their Lordſhips would give Direction to the Judges to keep this Term, and not to make Adjournments of it, either by virtue of theſe Writs, or any other Writs whatſoever they ſhall receive.

The Writs were not opened, but the Proclamation was read as follows:

And iſſued a Proclamation for that Purpoſe,

'WHereas his Majeſty did adjourn Part of this Term of *St. Michael*, from the firſt Return, called *A Die S. Michaelis in tres Septimanas*, untill the Return, *Octab. S. Martini*; his Majeſty, conſidering the preſent Diſtractions of this Kingdom, doth declare, That the Reſidue of the ſaid Term, beginning at the ſaid Return of *Octab. S. Martini*, be wholly adjourned, as to all Appearances, Cauſes, Matters, and Things, which ſhould have been made or done in any of his Majeſty's Courts at *Weſtminſter*, untill *Octab. Hilarii* next following; and that Writs of Adjournment ſhall be made by one Judge of each Bench, giving them

'them Power to adjourn the Reſidue of the ſaid 'Term of St. *Michael*'s; and the ſaid Adjourn-'ment ſhall be made on the firſt Day of the ſaid '*Octab. S. Michaelis*, commonly called the Day of 'Eſſoigns.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Given at Oatlands, *the* 15*th of* November, *in the* 18*th Year of his now Majeſty's Reign.*

The Lords taking theſe Matters into ſerious Conſideration, as a Thing of great Importance to the Good of the whole Kingdom, agreed with the Houſe of Commons in the Matter of this Meſſage, and made the following Order:

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, 'That the Judges of the King's Bench, Court of Common Pleas, and Barons of the Exchequer, are hereby enjoined that they do not, neither by virtue of theſe Writs of Adjournment now ſent, nor any other Writs whatſoever which ſhall be ſent, adjourn this Term of St. *Michael*; but that they ſhall ſit and proceed to diſpatch the public Juſtice of the Kingdom, according as is uſual in their ſeveral Courts.

The Parliament forbid the Judges to adjourn the ſaid Term.

This Order was read in the Houſe; and the Judges preſent commanded to take Notice, and obey it.

There had been ſome Intimations, for ſeveral Days laſt paſt, entered in the *Journals*, for calling in the *Scots* to the Aſſiſtance of the Parliament; and this Day a Declaration was ſent up from the Commons, whereby one Mr. *Pickering* was authorized and required to deliver the ſame to the Council of State in that Kingdom, and otherwiſe to publiſh it as he ſhould ſee Occaſion; and that Inſtructions be ſent to him to ſollicit the Effect of it. It was alſo ordered, That the ſaid Declaration ſhould be deliver'd to the *Scots* Commiſſioners reſiding in *London*. To all which the Lords agreed, and is as follows:

And reſolve to call in the Aſſiſtance of the *Scots*.

'WE the Lords and Commons aſſembled in 'the Parliament of *England*, conſidering 'with what Wiſdom and public Affection our Bre-'thren

Their Declaration to that Kingdom.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'thren of the Kingdom of *Scotland* did concur with 'the Endeavours of this Parliament, and the De- 'fires of the whole Kingdom, in procuring and 'eſtabliſhing a firm Peace and Amity between the 'two Nations; and how lovingly they have ſince 'invited us to a nearer and higher Degree of Union, 'in Matters concerning Religion and Church-Go- 'vernment, which we have moſt willingly and af- 'fectionately embraced and intend to purſue, can- 'not doubt but they will, with as much Forward- 'neſs and Affection, concur with us in ſettling Peace 'in this Kingdom, and preſerving it in their own; 'that ſo we may mutually reap the Benefit of that 'Amity and Alliance, ſo happily made and ſtrongly 'confirmed betwixt the two Nations. Where- 'fore, as we did about a Year ſince, in the firſt Ap- 'pearance of Trouble then beginning amongſt them, 'actually declare, That, in our Senſe and Appre- 'henſion of the National Alliance betwixt us, we 'were thereby bound to apply the Authority of Par- 'liament and Power of this Kingdom to the Preſer- 'vation and Maintenance of their Peace: And ſee- 'ing now that the Troubles of this Kingdom are 'grown to a greater Height, and the ſubtle Prac- 'tices of the common Enemy of the Religion and 'Liberty of both Nations do appear with more 'Evidence, Strength, and Danger, than they did at 'that Time: We hold it neceſſary to declare, That, 'in our Judgment, the ſame Obligation lies upon 'our Brethren by the afore-mentioned Act, with 'the Power and Force of that Kingdom to aſſiſt us, 'in repreſſing thoſe amongſt us who are now in 'Arms and make War, not only without Conſent 'of Parliament, but even againſt the Parliament, 'and for the Deſtruction thereof.

'Wherefore we have thought good to make 'known to our Brethren, that his Majeſty hath gi- 'ven Commiſſion to divers eminent and known 'Papiſts, to raiſe Forces, and compoſe an Army 'in the *North*, and other Parts of this Kingdom; 'which is to join with divers foreign Forces intended

to

'to be transported from beyond the Seas, for the 'Destruction of this Parliament, and of the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom. And that the 'Prelatical Part of the Clergy, and their Adherents, 'have likewise invited his Majesty to raise another 'Army; which, in his own Person, he doth conduct 'against the Parliament and the City of *London*, 'plundering and robbing sundry well-affected 'Towns, within their Power: And that, in Prosecution of their Malice, they are so presumptuous 'and predominant of his Majesty's Resolutions, 'that they forbear not those Outrages in Places to 'which his Majesty hath given his Royal Word 'and Protection. A great Cause and Incentive of 'which Malice proceeds from the Design they 'have to hinder the Reformation in Ecclesiastical 'Government in this Kingdom, so much longed 'for by all true Lovers of the Protestant Religion.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'And hereupon we further desire our Brethren of 'the Nation of *Scotland*, to raise such Forces as they 'shall judge sufficient for the securing the Peace of 'their own Borders, against the ill-affected Persons 'there; as likewise to assist us in suppressing the 'Army of Papists and Foreigners, which, as we 'expect, will shortly be on Foot here; and, if they 'be not timely prevented, may prove as mischievous and destructive to that Kingdom as to ourselves.

'And though we seek nothing from his Majesty, 'that may diminish his just Authority or Honour; 'and have, by many humble Petitions, endeavoured 'to put an End to this unnatural War and Combustion in the Kingdom; and to procure his Majesty's Protection and Security for our Religion, 'Liberty, and Persons, according to that great Trust 'which his Majesty is bound to by the Laws of the 'Land; and shall still continue to renew our Petitions in that Kind: Yet, to our great Grief, we 'see the Papistical and Malignant Counsel so prevalent with his Majesty, and his Person so engaged 'to their Power, that we have little Hope of better

'Success

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Succeſs of our Petitions than we formerly had; 'and are thereby neceſſitated to ſtand upon our juſt 'Defence, and to ſeek this ſpeedy and powerful 'Aſſiſtance of our Brethren of *Scotland*, according 'to that Act agreed upon in the Parliament of both 'Kingdoms, the common Duty of Chriſtianity, 'and the particular Intereſts of their own King-'dom: To which we hope God will give ſuch a 'Bleſſing, that it may produce the Preſervation of 'Religion; the Honour, Safety, and Peace of his 'Majeſty, and all his Subjects; and a more ſtrict 'Conjunction of the Counſels, Deſigns, and En-'deavours of both Nations, for the Comfort and 'Relief of the Reformed Churches beyond the 'Seas.'

JOHN BROWN, *Cler. Parl.*
Nov. 7, 1642. HEN. ELSYNGE, *Cler. Dom. Com.*

In Anſwer to the foregoing Declaration of Parliament, the King ſent the following Meſſage to the Lords of his Privy Council of *Scotland*, ſome Time after: But we bring it in here for the Sake of Connection.

Right Truſty and Right Well-beloved Couſins and Counſellors, and Right Truſty and Well-beloved Counſellors, we greet you well,

The King's Anſwer, addreſſed to the Privy-Council of *Scotland*.

'WE have lately ſeen a Paper, preſented to us by the Earl of *Lindſay*, as a Declaration 'of the Lords and Commons aſſembled in the Par-'liament of *England*, of the ſeventh of *November*, 'to our Subjects of our Kingdom of *Scotland*; 'which, after many high Taxes of us and our Go-'vernment, very earneſtly invites, and in a Man-'ner challenges, Aſſiſtance from that our Native 'Kingdom, of Men and Arms for making a War 'againſt us; making a Claim to that Aſſiſtance, by 'virtue of the late Act of Pacification, to the which '(out of our Deſire to make a perpetual Union be-'tween our two Kingdoms, for the Happineſs of 'both, and by it the more firmly to eſtabliſh our

'own

'own Greatneſs and juſt Power) we chearfully con- An. 18. Car. I.
'ſented. 1642.

'As we are, at our Soul, afflicted that it hath been November.
'in the Power of any factious, ambitious, and
'malicious Perſons, ſo far to poſſeſs the Hearts of
'many of our Subjects of *England*, as to raiſe this
'miſerable Diſtemper and Diſtraction in this King-
'dom, againſt all our real Actions and Endeavours
'to the contrary; ſo we are glad that this Rage
'and Fury hath ſo far tranſported them, that they
'apply themſelves, in ſo groſs a Manner, to our
'Subjects of *Scotland*; whoſe Experience of our
'Religion, Juſtice, and Love of our People, will
'not ſuffer them to believe thoſe horrid Scandals
'laid upon us; and their Affection, Loyalty, and
'Jealouſy of our Honour, will diſdain to be made
'Inſtruments to oppreſs their Native Sovereign, by
'aſſiſting an odious Rebellion.

'We have, from Time to Time, acquainted our
'Subjects of that Kingdom with the Accidents and
'Circumſtances which have diſquieted this; how
'(after all the Acts of Juſtice, Grace, and Favour
'performed on our Part, which were, or could be,
'deſired to make a People completely happy) we
'were driven, by the Force and Violence of rude
'and tumultuous Aſſemblies, from our City of
'*London*, and our two Houſes of Parliament: How
'Attempts have been made to impoſe Laws upon
'our Subjects without our Conſent, contrary to the
'Foundation and Conſtitution of this Kingdom:
'How our Forts, Goods, and Navy were ſeized
'and taken from us by Force, and employed againſt
'us: Our Revenue and ordinary Subſiſtence wreſted
'from us: How we have been purſued with ſcan-
'dalous and reproachful Language; bold, falſe, and
'ſeditious Paſquils and Libels publickly allowed
'againſt us; and been told, *That we might, with-*
'*out Want of Modeſty and Duty, be depoſed.*

'Now, after all this, before any Force was raiſed
'by us, an Army was raiſed, and a General ap-
'pointed to lead that Army againſt us; with a
'Commiſſion to kill, ſlay, and deſtroy all ſuch who

'ſhould

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'ſhould be faithful to us. That when we had been, 'by theſe Means, compelled, with the Aſſiſtance 'of our good Subjects, to raiſe an Army for our 'neceſſary Defence; we ſent divers gracious Meſ-'ſages, earneſtly deſiring that the Calamities and 'Miſeries of a Civil War might be prevented by a 'Treaty, and ſo we might know the Ground of 'this Miſunderſtanding. How we were abſolutely 'refuſed to be treated with; and how, at laſt, the 'Army (raiſed, as was pretended, for the Defence 'of our Perſon) was brought into the Field againſt 'us, gave us Battle; and, though it pleaſed God to 'give us the Victory, deſtroyed many of our good 'Subjects, with as imminent Danger to our own 'Perſon and our Children, as the Skill and Malice 'of deſperate Rebels could contrive. Of all which, 'and the other Indignities which have been offered 'us, we doubt not the Duty and Affection of our 'Scots Subjects will have ſo juſt a Reſentment, that 'they will expreſs to the World the Senſe they 'have of our Sufferings. And our good Subjects 'of *Scotland* are not, we hope, ſo great Strangers 'to the Affairs of this Kingdom, to believe that this 'Misfortune and Diſtraction is begot and brought 'upon us by our two Houſes of Parliament; tho', 'in Truth, no unwarrantable Action againſt the 'Law can be juſtified, even by that Authority. 'They well know how the Members of both 'Houſes have been driven thence, in ſo much that, 'of above five hundred Members of the Houſe of 'Commons, there are not now there above eighty; 'and of above one hundred of the Houſe of Peers, 'not above fifteen or ſixteen: All which are ſo 'awed by the Multitude of Anabaptiſts, Browniſts, 'and other Perſons, deſperate and decayed in their 'Fortunes, in and about the City of *London*, that, 'in Truth, their Conſultations have not the Free-'dom and Privilege which belongs to Parliaments.

'Concerning any Commiſſions granted by us to 'Papiſts to raiſe Forces, we muſt refer our good 'Subjects to a Declaration, lately ſet forth by us 'upon the Occaſion of that Scandal, which we

'ſend

'send together with this; and for our own true and 'zealous Affection to the Proteſtant Religion, the 'Advancement whereof our Soul deſires, we can 'give no other Inſtance, than our conſtant Practice, 'on which Malice itſelf can lay no Blemiſh, and 'thoſe many Proteſtations we have made in the 'Sight of Almighty God; to whom we know we 'ſhall be dearly accountable, if we fail in the Ob-'ſervation. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'For that ſcandalous Imputation of our Inten-'tion of bringing in foreign Forces; as the ſame is 'raiſed without the leaſt Colour or Shadow of Rea-'ſon, and ſolemnly diſavowed by us in many of 'our Declarations; ſo there cannot be a clearer 'Argument to our Subjects of *Scotland*, that we 'have no ſuch Thought, than that we have hither-'to forborne to require the Aſſiſtance of that our 'Native Kingdom; from whoſe Obedience, Du-'ty, and Affection, we ſhould confidently expect 'it, if we thought our own Strength here too weak 'to preſerve us; and of whoſe Courage and Loy-'alty we ſhall look to make uſe, before we ſhall 'think of any foreign Aid to ſuccour us. And we 'know no reaſonable or underſtanding Man can 'ſuppoſe our good Subjects of *Scotland* are obliged, 'or enabled, by the late Act of Parliament in both 'Kingdoms, to obey the Invitation which is made 'to them by this pretended Declaration; when it 'is ſo evidently provided for by that Act, *That as* 'the Kingdom of England *ſhall not make War againſt* 'the Kingdom of Scotland, *without Conſent of the* 'Parliament of England; *ſo the Kingdom of* Scot-'land *ſhall not make War againſt the Kingdom of* 'England, *without the Conſent of the Parliament* 'of Scotland;' and when they have always decla-'red themſelves ſo careful of our Honour, Safety, 'and juſt Rights, which now undergo ſo great Vi-'olation;

'This we have thought fit to ſay upon Occaſion 'of this late Declaration; and do commend it to 'you, the Lords of our Privy Council of our King-'dom of *Scotland*, to be communicated and pub-'liſhed

An. 18. Car. I. 1642, November.

'liſhed to all our loving Subjects there: And if 'the grave Counſel and Advice, which you derived 'hither by your Act of the 22d of *April* laſt [c], had 'been followed here, in a tender Care of our Royal 'Perſon, and of our Princely Greatneſs and Autho- 'rity, then would not this Face of Confuſion have 'appeared, which now threatens this Kingdom: 'And therefore we require you to uſe your utmoſt 'Endeavours to inform our Subjects of that our 'Kingdom of the Truth of our Condition; and 'that you ſuffer not the Scandals and Imputations, 'laid on us by the Malice and Treaſon of ſome 'Men, to make any Impreſſion in the Minds of 'our People, to the leſſening or corrupting their 'Affection and Loyalty to us; but that you aſſure 'them the Hardſhips we now undergo. and the 'Arms we have been compelled to take up, are for 'the Defence of our Perſon, and the Safety of our 'Life; for the Maintenance of the true Proteſtant 'Religion; for the Preſervation of the Laws, Li- 'berties, and Conſtitutions of this Kingdom; and 'for the juſt Privileges of Parliament; and we look 'no longer for the Bleſſing of Heaven, than we en- 'deavour the Defence and Advancement of all 'theſe: And we doubt not a dutiful Concurrence 'in our Subjects of *Scotland*, in the Care of our 'Honours and juſt Rights, will draw down a Bleſ- 'ſing upon that Nation too.'

Nov. 19. A Letter was read, directed to the Lord *Grey* of *Werk*, as Speaker, from the Lord *Falkland*, with his Majeſty's Reply, incloſed, to the Anſwer of both Houſes to his Majeſty's Meſſage of the 12th Inſtant, which was alſo read as follows:

The King's Reply to the Parliament's laſt Anſwer.

'THAT his Meſſage of the 12th, though not 'received by them till the 14th, was ſent to 'them, firſt, upon the ſame Day on which it was 'dated; and, meeting with Stops by the Way, was 'again ſent upon the 13th, and taken upon that 'Day,

[c] In our Tenth Volume.

'Day, at Ten in the Morning, by the Earl of *Essex*; and, tho' not to him directed, was by him opened; so the Slowness of the Delivery is not so strange, as the Stop of that Letter said to be sent by Sir *Peter Killegrew*, which his Majesty hath not yet received; but concludes, from the Matter expressed to have been contained in that Letter, (to wit, to know his Pleasure, whether he intended the Forbearance of Hostility) and by the Command of such Forbearance, said to be sent to the Lord of *Essex*'s Army, that no such Forbearance was already concluded; and, consequently, neither had his Majesty Cause to suppose that he should take any of their Forces unprovided and secure, in an Expectation of a fair Treaty; neither could any hostile Act of his Majesty's Forces have been a Course unsuitable to his Expressions; much less could an Endeavour to repossess that Place (for so he hop'd he might have done, which might have stopped the further March of these Forces towards him; which, for ought appeared to him, might as well have been intended to *Colebrook* as *Brentford*; and, by that, the further Effusion of Blood) deserve that Style.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'His Majesty further conceives, That the printing, so out of Time, such a Declaration as their Reply [g] to his Answer to theirs of the 26th of *May*, but the Day before they voted the Delivery of their Petition; and the March of the Earl of *Essex*'s Forces to *Brentford*, so near to his Majesty, when the Committee at the same Time attended him with a Petition for a Treaty, (the Earl of *Essex* being before possessed of all the other Avenues to his Army, by his Forces at *Windsor*, *Acton*, and *Kingston*) was a more strange Introduction to Peace, than for his Majesty not to suffer himself to be cooped up on all Sides, because a Treaty had been mentioned; which was so really

[g] This Reply, which on account of the excessive Length of it, we omit, was not ordered to be printed till the 2d of *November*, though passed by both Houses in *July*. It may be found both in *Rushworth* and *Husbands*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'and so much desired by his Majesty, that this Proceeding seems to him, purposely, by some intended 'to divert, which it could not do, that his Inclination.

'That his Majesty had no Intention to master 'the City by so advancing, besides his Profession, 'which how meanly soever they seem to value it, 'he conceives a sufficient Argument, especially being only opposed by Suspicions and Surmises, may 'appear by his not pursuing his Victory at *Brentford*; 'but giving Order to his Army to march away to '*Kingston* as soon as he heard that Place was quitted, 'before any Notice or further Appearance of Forces 'from *London*; nor could he find a better Way to 'satisfy them before-hand, that he had no such Intention, but that his Desire of Peace and of Propositions that might conduce to it still continued, 'than by that Message of the twelfth; for which 'Care of his he was requited by such a Reception 'of his Message and Messenger, as was contrary at 'once both to Duty, Civility, and the very Customs 'and the Law of War and Nations; and such as 'theirs, though after this Provocation, have not 'have found from him. [b]

'His Majesty wonders that his Soldiers should be 'charged with thirsting after Blood, who took above '500 Prisoners in the very Heat of the Fight; his 'Majesty having since dismissed all the common 'Soldiers, and entertained such as were willing to 'serve him, and required only from the rest an Oath 'not to serve against him.[c] And his Majesty supposes such most apt and likely to maintain their 'Power by Blood and Rapine, who have got it only 'by Oppression and Injustice; that his is vested in 'him by the Law, and by that only (if the destruc-

'tive

[b] Mr. *White*, the King's Messenger, was very roughly used by the Earl of *Essex*, and the Parliament committed him to the *Gatehouse*, not without the Motion of some Men, That he might be executed as a Spy. *Clarendon*, 8vo. Vol. III. p. 76.

[c] Two of the Parliament's most eminent Chaplains, Dr. *Downing*, and Mr. *Marshal*, publickly avowed, That those Men were not obliged by that Oath. *Ibid.* p. 81.

'tive Counſels of others would not hinder ſuch a 'Peace, in which that might once again be the 'univerſal Rule, and in which Religion and Juſtice can 'only flouriſh) he deſires to maintain it. And if 'Peace were equally deſired by them, as it is by his 'Majeſty, he conceives it would have been proper 'to have ſent him ſuch a Paper, as ſhould have con'tained juſt Propoſitions of Peace, and not an un'juſt Accuſation of his Counſels, Proceedings, and 'Perſon. And his Majeſty intends to march to ſuch 'a Diſtance from his City of *London*, as may take 'away all Pretence of Apprehenſion from his Army, 'that might hinder them, in all Security, from yet 'preparing them to preſent to him; and will there 'be ready either to receive them, or end the Preſ'ſures and Miſeries which his Subjects, to his great 'Grief, ſuffer thro' this War, by a preſent Battle.'

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. November.

When this was read, the Earl of *Northumberland* informed the Houſe, That he had received a Packet of Letters taken about Mr. *Murray*, who brought this Reply from the King; and deſired to be directed what to do with them. Hereupon the Lords opened and peruſed the Papers, and found a Copy of the Reply, with a Declaration of his Majeſty, and a Warrant ſent to the King's Printer to print them. Upon which a Conference was reſolved on with the other Houſe, to deſire them to join in appointing a Committee, to conſider what Anſwer was fit to be given to this Reply of the King's; it being a Buſineſs of ſo great Conſequence, that either a great deal of Miſery, or a great deal of Happineſs, would follow upon the Reſolution to be taken thereupon.

A Conference thereupon.

November 21. Mr. *Shute*, at the Head of ſeveral Citizens of *London*, appeared this Day again before the Commons. What he had to offer ſtands thus upon their *Journals*, 'That he came to ſpeak to 'them from the moſt Active and the moſt Religious 'Part of the City, to acquaint the Houſe they under'ſtood that an Accommodation was on Foot; which 'grieved their Hearts, conſidering what followed on

Farther Propoſals from the Citizens of *London*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

the laſt: But if the Accommodation went not on, then to conſider how Monies might be raiſed, in ſuch ſort as that the whole Charge might not lay upon the Good and Godly Party; but that the Malignant Party might be forced to bear their Share, fully, according to their Abilities.

'Another Thing which troubled them, he ſaid, was an Imputation caſt upon the Godly Part of the City, by the Malignant Party, as if they deſired an Independent Government ſhould be ſet up in the Church, which they deſired might be wiped off.'

After returning Thanks to the Citizens for their Propoſitions, and the Affection expreſſed in them, the King's laſt Meſſage was read; and the Queſtion being put, Whether the Houſe would, forthwith, reſolve itſelf into a Committee to take it into Conſideration? It paſſed in the Affirmative, only by 75 againſt 65; when, after ſome Debate on the Meſſage, the Queſtion being again put, Whether the Houſe ſhould be reſolved into a Committee To-morrow Morning to reſume this Debate? The Houſe divided, when the Numbers were 67 for the Queſtion and 66 againſt it: Two ſmall Majorities to carry ſuch important Queſtions, upon which, as the Lords had before obſerved, depended the Good or the Miſery of the Kingdom.

November 22. This Anſwer took up a great deal of Time in perfecting; for though a Committee of both Houſes went immediately upon it, yet, this Day, we find Mr. *Murray*, the King's Meſſenger, was diſcharged from Attendance, and ſent back; becauſe, it is ſaid, it was uncertain how long it might be e'er the Anſwer would be ready; and the Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord *Falkland*, to acquaint the King with the Reaſon for this Delay.

The ſame Day the Commons being informed, That divers Citizens were at the Door, they were called in; and Mr. *Shute*, once more, told them, in the Name of the reſt, That one Thing, which exceedingly troubled them, was, the Point of Accommodation

commodation of Peace, more to be feared than their Power. —— If the Accommodation proceed not, Monies then to be raiſed. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'They would propound three Ways:

1. 'Concerning Plate in the Halls of *London*.

2. 'Subſcriptions in the ſeveral Wards underwritten, not yet brought in.

3. 'Weekly Subſcriptions to be advanced.

'The Means for ſaving of Monies.

1. 'To cut off ſuperfluous Charges by unneceſſary Officers in the Army.

2. 'That there may be due Muſters.

3. 'Indifferent honeſt Men to be choſen in every Ward, to raiſe and advance the Subſcriptions.—— Foreign Merchants to be brought in, to give their Aſſiſtance to the Public.—Then they withdrew.

And being again call'd in, Mr. Speaker, by Command of the Houſe, return'd them Thanks, as before.

November 23. A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held the Day before; which Mr. *Pymme* ſaid, was appointed by the Houſe of Commons, to acquaint their Lordſhips with ſome Votes paſs'd by that Houſe, in Anſwer to the King's Reply, to which they deſired the Lord's Concurrence. Theſe were divided into two Parts:

1. 'That in the Anſwer to his Majeſty's Meſſage, the Houſes ſhould deſire the King to return to his Parliament; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be ſecured by the Advice of Parliament; that the Proceſs and Juſtice of Parliament, being the Supreme Court of Judicature, might have its free Courſe, and be executed on Delinquents; and that they might not be protected and kept from Juſtice by Force. In particular, that the Lord *Digby* and Mr. *Henry Wilmot*, be, preſently, delivered over to the Juſtice of Parliament. That the Commons remember what Misfortune lately befell the two Regiments, at *Brentford*, upon the laſt Treaty; therefore they now think fit to declare, That both Armies ſhall be left to take all Advantage they can, on both Sides, in the mean Time.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

2. 'Concerning the Challenge; the House of Commons say, They think it strange that the King of *England* should send a Challenge and Invitation to a Battle with his own Subjects; seeing, heretofore, his Majesty seemed to decline the Effusion of Blood, and professed using all Means to prevent the same: Therefore the House of Commons resolve to be in Readiness; but if his Majesty will withdraw himself from his Cavaliers and the Army, he shall be received; if not, they will not decline, if he has a Mind, to give a Battle, the Time and Place being first appointed.

'These are the Heads the House of Commons have resolved on; which, if their Lordships should concur with, they desired that Committees of both Houses might be appointed to put them into a Form fit to be sent to his Majesty.'

A Petition drawn up by the Lords in Answer to the King's last Reply.

This Report being made, the Lords ordered, That the Consideration of this Matter should be put to a Committee of their whole House then present; and immediately the House was adjourned, during Pleasure, the Lords going into the Prince's Lodgings to debate it. And, in the Afternoon of this Day, the Earl of *Holland*, one of the Committee appointed, in the Morning, to consider of the foregoing Votes, delivered in a Draught of a Petition, to be presented to the King, in which they thought fit to leave out the whole, relating to the Challenge, and only to send the following:

May it please your Majesty,

IT is humbly desired by both Houses of Parliament, That your Majesty would be pleased to return to your Parliament with your Royal, not your Martial, Attendants; to the end that Religion, Laws, and Liberties, may be settled and secured by their Advice; finding, by a late and sad Accident, that your Majesty is environed by some such Counsels, as do rather persuade a desperate Division, than a Joining and a good Agreement with your Parliament and People; and we shall be ready to give your Majesty Assurances of such

such Security, as may be for your Honour and the Safety of your Royal Person. An 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Or else we shall, in convenient Time, consider of fit Propositions to be sent to your Majesty, such as may be for the Preservation of God's true Religion, your Majesty's Honour, Safety, and Prosperity, and to the Peace and Happiness of this and your other Kingdoms.

The Lords, on the Question, agreed to this Petition, and ordered it to be sent down to be communicated to the Commons at another Conference.

Which, after some Alterations by the Commons, is sent to the King.

Next Day a Report of this second Conference was made in the House of Lords, That the Commons said, They studied nothing more than the good Correspondency between the two Houses, and they desired a Continuance of it; though they differed somewhat in Opinion, about the Conference the last Night, on the last Petition intended to be sent to his Majesty. That they agreed to the first; but had resolved, That the latter Part, beginning with the Words, *Or else*, &c. should be left out. To this the Lords consented; and also to another Vote of that House, to send to the Lord-General, the Earl of *Essex*, to desire him to go on, notwithstanding, with all Advantages, in prosecuting the War. Accordingly the former Part of the Petition was sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, to be by him presented to the King.

The same Day we meet with, in the *Commons Journals*, a Vote and Division of that House, which shews the great Jealousy they had of any Intelligence being carried to the King: For the Question being propounded, Whether Mr. *Jessy*, the King's Servant, should have Mr. Speaker's Warrant to go to the King, to carry him Stockings and other Necessaries; it pass'd in the Affirmative by 26 against 18, but this on Condition of Mr. *Wheeler*'s undertaking, that Mr. *Jessy* should carry nothing else. The Tellers upon this Occasion were Sir *Edward Ascough*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Ascough and Mr. *Trenchard*, for the Yeas; Mr. *Marten* and Mr. *Long*, for the Noes.

A Committee appointed to desire a farther Supply from the Citizens of *London*.

Nov. 25. An Order had been made, the Day before, for sending to the Lord Mayor to call a Common-Hall; and this Day a Committee of five Lords, with a proportionable Number of Commoners, were appointed to go thither. At this Meeting the Earl of *Manchester* [f], one of the Committee, and Mr. *Pymme* another, were the Mouths of the rest; whose Speeches best explain the Errand they were sent upon [g]. And first the Earl.

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

The Earl of *Manchester*'s Speech to them, proposing an Assessment for that Purpose.

'I Am commanded to come hither upon an Errand, that I know, in the general, is never pleasing; which is, to express Wants and Necessities; but I know very well to whom I speak, it is to the Worthy, the Generous, and the Loyal Citizens of *London*; who have exceeded all Story, in their Care for the Life and Preservation both of the Parliament and the whole Kingdom; therefore it would imply a Distrust of your present Care to make a Supply, if I should use any Arguments to you: I shall only say this, That if there be not an Enlargement of yourselves in some Measure at the present, I shall be very unwilling to express the Condition that I fear our Army will be reduced to: This is all that I shall say, that if there be a present Supply, I do not doubt but the Army will move with that Effect, as it will prevent all those barbarous and savage Plunderings of the Forces that are now under the Command of those Officers of the King.

'I confess the Burden hath lain very heavy upon the City of *London* only; but you shall have the Grace and the Honour of the Preservation both of

[f] This Lord [*Edward Montague*] has been formerly spoken of under the Title of Lord *Kimbolton*; but, about this Time, succeeded to the Earldom of *Manchester* by the Death of his Father.

[g] *London*, printed for *Peter Cole*, near the *Royal Exchange*, 1642.

of Religion and the Laws and Liberties of this Kingdom. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'This Gentleman, that is by me, will let you know that it is already in Propoſition, (and I do not doubt but it will ſpeedily have the Concurrence of the Lords with it) to take that Care, that the future Burden ſhall not lie upon thoſe here in the City of *London*, that have been careful to make Supplies, even to the exhauſting of themſelves; but that it ſhall go generally to all thoſe that have ſhrowded themſelves under a Kind of Neutrality here in *London*; and that it ſhall go generally throughout all the Counties of *England*; that ſo the common Calamities ſhall be prevented, or ſupported by the common Burden laid upon the whole Kingdom.'

Then Mr. *Pymme* ſpoke to this Effect:

My Lord Mayor and Gentlemen,

'WE come not to tell your Lordſhip and theſe worthy Citizens only our Wants and Dangers, but we come to ſpeak the Thanks of the Parliament to you, for that which you have already done; that you have ſhewed ſo much Affection to the Public, and that it hath produced ſo good Effects throughout the whole Kingdom, as that now you have an Army raiſed, moſt out of this City, able to defend (with God's Bleſſing) the Religion and Liberty of the Kingdom, if it may be upheld: And we come not only to give you Thanks for that which you have done, but to ſtir you up to join with us in giving Thanks to God that hath given ſuch a Bleſſing to our Endeavours, that when, by Letters ſent into all Parts almoſt, they did preſume before-hand to triumph in the Ruin and Plundering of this City, God prevented it, and hath kept you ſafe; kept your Houſes, your Walls, your Suburbs, ſafe from that that was intended againſt you; and truly as we have ſought for this Bleſſing, by Faſting and by Prayer, ſo it is fit And Mr. *Pymme*'s in Support thereof.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

fit that we ſhould teſtify our Thankſgiving for it, and this is a neceſſary Part of our Errand which we are ſent about: And that we may be ſerviceable to God's Providence ſtill, as he hath ſtirred up your Hearts to do ſo much already, ſo that he would ſtir you up ſtill to continue to do that which is fit to be done for the future; and that you will do it in ſuch a Way as may be moſt pleaſing to yourſelves.

'We come not hither, that, by any Conſent here in public, you ſhould bind yourſelves in particular; but we come to let you know the Dangers of the Kingdom, the Senſe the Parliament hath of it, and of the City eſpecially, that you may not loſe that which hath been already done; but that you may go on ſtill chearfully to do the full Work. And we come to tell you, that the Parliament doth intend the Burden ſhall not lie upon you that are well affected and come in voluntarily; but that they have thought upon a Way, and have begun it already, and I hope, within two or three Days at the moſt, it ſhall be publiſhed to you, that all that are indiſpoſed ſhall be forced to do that, which, out of Readineſs and Chearfulneſs to the Public Good, they will not do of themſelves: Neither limit we it to the City and Suburbs; but we are in a Courſe to draw in all the Counties of the Kingdom, that as the Burden is univerſal, ſo the Aid may be univerſal; for theſe are the Thoughts of the Parliament.

'If it pleaſe God to bleſs your Forces that are already raiſed and continued, we hope you ſhall not only ſee Peace again in the Kingdom, and Security for your Religion, but ſee that the Burden ſhall lie upon thoſe who have been the Engines and Actors of the Miſchiefs and Troubles that are come upon us, that they ſhall recompence the Charges you have been at already.

'This is the Intention of the Parliament, only for the preſent do ſomewhat; every Man, as God ſhall enable him, do ſomewhat that may meet the preſent

present Necessities; and prevent the Dangers that require a present Subsistence, and present Supply of the Army; without which what is it will follow, but the Danger of the City, the Ruin of the Countries about, the Stopping up of the River which is almost taken from you, and the Loss of the Sea Coasts? You cannot have better Hearts than you have; God hath enabled many of you with Purses; I hope it will be so readily disposed that we shall have a full Joy in the Recompence of it, and the Retribution; which we shall all pray God to bring to pass.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The Result of this was, That the Citizens desired a Committee of both Houses might be sent to them, with a Power to call some Citizens and others to their Assistance, and then they hoped this Request of Parliament would prove successful.

The Want of Money to carry on the War being now so very urgent, an Ordinance was sent up this Day from the Commons, For Assessing Non-Contributors upon the Propositions for lending Money and raising of Horse and Arms: This being the first Instance of any Assessment laid upon the Subject without the Royal Assent, is too remarkable to be pass'd over.

An Ordinance passed accordingly, for assessing Non-Contributors to the Parliament's Army.

'WHereas the King, seduced by wicked Counsel, hath raised an Army, and levied War against the Parliament, and great Numbers of Forces are daily raised under the Command of Papists, and other ill-affected Persons, by Commission from his Majesty: And whereas divers Delinquents are protected from public Justice by his Majesty's Army; and sundry Outrages and Rapines are daily committed by the Soldiers of the said Army, who have no Respect to the Laws of God or the Land, but burn and plunder the Houses, and seize and destroy the Persons of divers of his Majesty's good Subjects: And whereas, for the Maintenance of the said Army, divers Assessments are made upon several Counties, and his Ma-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642, November.

'Majeſty's Subjects are compelled by the Soldiers 'to pay the ſame; which ſaid Army, if it ſhould 'continue, would ſoon ruin and waſte the whole 'Kingdom, and overthrow Religion, Law, and 'Liberty: For ſuppreſſing of which ſaid Army and 'ill-affected Perſons, there is no probable Way, 'under God, but by the Army raiſed by Authority 'of Parliament; which ſaid Army ſo raiſed cannot 'be maintained without great Sums of Money; yet 'for raiſing ſuch Sums, by reaſon of his Majeſty's 'withdrawing himſelf from the Advice of the Par-'liament, there can be no Act of Parliament paſſed 'with his Majeſty's Aſſent, albeit there is great 'Juſtice that the ſaid Money ſhould be raiſed; the 'Lords and Commons in Parliament have taken the 'ſame into their ſerious Conſideration, and know-'ing that the ſaid Army, ſo raiſed by them, hath 'been hitherto, for the moſt, maintained by the 'voluntary Contributions of divers well-affected 'Perſons, who have freely contributed according to 'their Abilities:

'But conſidering there are divers others within 'the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, and the Sub-'urbs of the ſame, and alſo within the Borough of '*Southwark*, that have not contributed at all towards 'the Maintenance of the ſaid Army; or if they 'have, yet not anſwerable to their Eſtates, who, 'notwithſtanding, receive Benefit and Protection by 'the ſaid Army, as well as others; and therefore it 'is moſt juſt that they ſhould, as well as others, 'be charged to contribute to the Maintenance 'thereof:

'Be it therefore ordained by the Lords and Com-'mons in Parliament aſſembled, and by Authority 'thereof, That *Iſaac Pennington*, Lord Mayor of 'the City of *London*, Sir *John Woolaſton*, Knight 'and Alderman, Alderman *Towes*, Alderman *War-'ner*, Alderman *Andrews*, Alderman *Chambers*, 'Alderman *Fowke*, Sir *Thomas Soame*, Knight and 'Alderman; *Samuel Vaſſal*, *John Ven*, *Morris 'Thompſon*, and *Richard Waring*, Citizens, or any

'four

'four of them, shall hereby have Power and Au- An. 18. Car. I.
'thority to nominate and appoint, in every Ward 1642.
'within the City of *London*, six such Persons as they, November.
'or any four of them, shall think fit; which said six
'so nominated, or any four of them, shall hereby
'have Power to inquire of any that shall remain or
'be within the said several Wards, that have not
'contributed upon the Propositions of both Houses
'of Parliament, concerning the raising of Money,
'Plate, Horse, Horsemen, and Arms, for Defence
'of the King and both Houses of Parliament, and
'also of such as are able Men, that have contributed,
'yet not according to their Estates and Abilities.

'And the said six Persons so nominated, or any
'four of them, within their several and respective
'Wards and Limits, shall have Power to assess such
'Person and Persons as are of Ability and have not
'contributed, and also such as have contributed, yet
'not according to their Ability, to pay such Sum
'or Sums of Money, according to their Estates,
'as the said Assessors, or any four of them, shall
'think fit and reasonable, so as the same exceed
'not the twentieth Part of their Estates, and to
'nominate and appoint fit Persons for the Collec-
'tion thereof.

'And if any Person so assessed shall refuse to pay
'the Money assessed upon him, it shall be lawful
'to and for the said Assessors and Collectors, or any
'of them, to levy the said Sum so assessed, by way
'of Distress and Sale of the Goods of the Person so
'assessed, and refusing.

'And if any Person so distrained shall make Re-
'sistance, it shall be lawful to and for the respective
'Assessors and Collectors, or any of them, to call
'to their Assistance any of the Train'd Bands of the
'said City of *London*, or any other his Majesty's
'Subjects, who are hereby required to be aiding and
'assisting to the said Assessors and Collectors in the
'Premises.

'And it is hereby further ordained, That the re-
'spective Burgesses of *Westminster* and *Southwark*,
'to-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'together with the several Committees appointed 'for the Subscriptions of Money, Plate, Horse, 'Horsemen, and Arms within the said City and 'Borough, shall respectively have Power hereby to 'nominate Assessors for the same City and Borough, 'in such Manner as the Lord Mayor, *&c.* hath for 'the City of *London*; and the said Assessors, or 'any four of them, to name Collectors as aforesaid; which said Assessors and Collectors shall 'have the same Power respectively, within their respective Limits, as those to be nominated within 'the said City of *London* have hereby limited to 'them.

'And for the Suburbs of *London* and *Westminster*, 'the respective Rights of the Shire where the said 'Suburbs are, shall have hereby the like Power to 'name Assessors; and they so named, or any four 'of them, and the Collectors by them to be nominated, or any of them within their respective Limits, shall have the like Power respectively, as 'the Assessors and Collectors for *London* have by 'virtue of this Ordinance.

'And be it ordained, That the Sums so assessed 'and levied as aforesaid, shall be paid in at *Guildhall*, *London*, to the Hands of Sir *John Wollaston*, 'Knight, *John Warner*, *John Towes*, and *Thomas Andrews*, Aldermen, or any two of them; and 'the Assessors and Collectors, to be nominated by 'virtue hereof, shall Weekly report to the Committee of the House of Commons for the Propositions 'aforesaid, what Sums of Money have been assessed 'and what Sums have been levied Weekly, according to the Purport hereof; and the said Monies so 'levied and paid in, shall be issued forth in such 'Sort, as the other Monies raised upon the Propositions, aforesaid, and not otherwise.'

Which being reinforced by several others,

In consequence of this Ordinance the Parliament proceeded to raise Money by an Assessment: But meeting with some Difficulties in the Collection thereof, they made another Ordinance to explain the

the First; whereby it was ordained, That if the Collectors could not find sufficient Assets to distrain upon the Refusers, they had Power to enquire what Rents, Tithes or Debts were owing to them, and to demand the same of their respective Tenants or Debtors. This was followed by a Third Ordinance, for the speedy Execution of the First. Soon after came out another, impowering the Collectors to break open any Chests, Trunks, Boxes, Doors, or other Things, whereby to take a Distress for the Sums assessed. But all these not answering the urgent Necessities of the Parliament, yet another Ordinance was made; whereby, in such Cases where the Collectors should certify that a sufficient Distress was to be had, but they could not come at it without Opposition, two Colonels and three Captains, named in the said Ordinance, and such Captains, Lieutenants, Officers, and Soldiers as they should appoint, were authorized to search for the Refusers of such Assessment; and bring them before the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations, who had Power given them, by this last Ordinance, to imprison the Refusers in such Places of the Kingdom, and for so long Time, as they should appoint and order; and that the Families of all such Persons, so imprisoned, should no longer remain within the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, the Suburbs, and the Counties adjacent.—But at the same Time that the Parliament took such effectual Care to raise this Assessment upon the Subjects at large, they made an Ordinance, That the several and respective Assessors should not assess any Members of either of the Houses of Parliament, or the Assistants of the House of Peers; any thing in the preceding Ordinances, or any of them, to the contrary notwithstanding: But that the Members of either House shall be assessed by that House whereof they were Members, and the Assistants of the Peers by the House of Peers. [q] This last Ordinance, however,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

[q] The above-mentioned Ordinances may be seen at Length in *Husbands's Collections* from p. 766, to p. 777.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

ever, for impowering the Members to tax themſelves, was carried in the Houſe of Commons by a Majority of only 43 Voices againſt 40.

On Occaſion of all theſe Ordinances the King publiſhed the following Declaration, addreſſed to all his loving Subjects:

The King publiſhes an Anſwer to them.

'IT would not be believed (at leaſt great Pains have been taken that it might not) that the 'pretended Ordinance of the Militia, (the firſt Attempt that ever was to make a Law by Ordinance 'without our Conſent) or the keeping us out of '*Hull*, and taking our Arms and Munition from 'us, could any way concern the Intereſt, Property, 'or Liberty of the Subject; and it was confeſſed 'by that deſperate Declaration itſelf of the 26th of '*May*, *That if they were found guilty of that Charge 'of deſtroying the Title and Intereſt of our Subjects 'to their Lands and Goods, it were indeed a very 'great Crime*.[p] But it was a ſtrange fatal Lethargy 'which had ſeized our good People, and kept 'them from diſcerning, that the Nobility, Gentry, and Commonalty of *England*, were not only 'ſtripped of their Pre-eminences and Privileges, 'but of their Liberties and Eſtates, when our juſt 'Rights were denied us; and that no Subject could, 'from thenceforth, expect to do well at home, 'when we were driven from our Houſes and our 'Towns.

'It was not poſſible that a Commiſſion could be 'granted to the Earl of *Eſſex*, to raiſe an Army 'againſt us; and, for the Safety of our Perſon and 'Preſervation of the Peace of the Kingdom, to purſue, kill, and ſlay us, and all who wiſh well to 'us; but that, in a ſhort Time, inferior Commanders, by the ſame Authority, would require our 'good Subjects. for the Maintenance of the Property of the Subject, to ſupply them with ſuch 'Sums of Money as they think fit, upon the Penalty

[p] This Declaration is in our Eleventh Volume.

'nalty of *being plundered with all Extremity of War*; (as the Style of Sir *Edward Baynton's* Warrant runs 'againſt our poor Subjects in *Wiltſhire*) and by ſuch 'Rules of unlimited Arbitrary Power, as are incon-'ſiſtent with the leaſt Pretence or Shadow of that 'Property it would ſeem to defend. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'If there could be yet any Underſtanding ſo un-'ſkilful and ſupine to believe, that theſe Diſturbers 'of the Public Peace do intend any thing but a 'general Confuſion, they have brought them a ſad 'Argument to their own Doors to convince them: 'After this Ordinance and Declaration it is not in 'any ſober Man's Power to believe himſelf worth 'any thing, or that there is ſuch a Thing as Law, 'Liberty, or Property left in *England*, under the 'Juriſdiction of theſe Men; and the ſame Power 'that robs them now of the twentieth Part of their 'Eſtates, hath, by that, but made a Claim, and 'intitled itſelf to the other nineteen, when it ſhall 'be thought fit to haſten the general Ruin.

'Sure, if the Minds of all Men be not ſtubbornly 'prepared for Servitude, they will look on this Or-'dinance as the greateſt Prodigy of Arbitrary Power 'and Tyranny that any Age hath brought forth in 'any Kingdom: Other Grievances, and the great-'eſt, have been conceived intolerable, rather by the 'Logic and Conſequence, than by the Preſſure it-'ſelf; this, at once, ſweeps away all that the Wiſ-'dom and Juſtice of Parliaments have provided for 'them. Is their Property in their Eſtates, (ſo 'carefully looked to by their Anceſtors, and ſo amp-'ly eſtabliſhed by us againſt any Poſſibility of Inva-'ſion from the Crown) which makes the meaneſt 'Subject as much a Lord of his own, as the greateſt 'Peer, to be valued or conſidered? Here is a twen-'tieth Part of every Man's Eſtate (or ſo much 'more as four Men will pleaſe to call the twentieth 'Part) taken away at once; and yet a Power left 'to take a twentieth ſtill of that which remains; 'and this to be levied by ſuch Circumſtances of Se-'verity, as no Act of Parliament ever conſented to. 'Is their Liberty, which diſtinguiſhes Subjects from

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Slaves, and in which this Free-born Nation hath 'the Advantage of all Chriſtendom, dear to them? 'They ſhall not only be impriſoned in ſuch Places 'of this Kingdom, (a Latitude of Judgment no 'Court can challenge to itſelf in any Caſes) but 'for ſo long a Time as the Committee of the 'Houſe of Commons for Examinations ſhall ap- 'point and order; the Houſe of Commons itſelf 'having never aſſumed, or, in the leaſt Degree, 'pretended to a Power of Judicature; having no 'more Authority to adminiſter an Oath, (the only 'Way to diſcover and find out the Truth of Facts) 'than to cut off the Heads of any of our Subjects; 'and this Committee, being ſo far from being a 'Part of the Parliament, that it is deſtructive to the 'whole, by uſurping to itſelf all the Power of King, 'Lords, and Commons.

'All who know any thing of Parliaments, know 'that a Committee of either Houſe ought not, by 'the Law, to publiſh their own Reſults; neither are 'their Concluſions of any Force without the Con- 'firmation of the Houſe, which hath the ſame 'Power of controling them, as if the Matter had 'never been debated: But that any Committee 'ſhould be ſo contracted (as this of Examinations, 'a Style no Committee ever bore before this Parlia- 'ment) as to exclude the Members of the Houſe, 'who are equally truſted by their Country, from 'being preſent at their Counſels, is ſo monſtrous to 'the Privileges of Parliament, that it is no more in 'the Power of any Man to give up that Freedom, 'than of himſelf to order, that, from that Time, 'the Place for which he ſerves ſhall never more ſend 'a Knight or Burgeſs to the Parliament; and, in 'Truth, is no leſs than to alter the whole Frame of 'Government, to pull up Parliaments by the Roots, 'and to commit the Lives, Liberties, and Eſtates 'of all the People of *England*, to the Arbitrary 'Power of a few unqualified Perſons; who ſhall 'diſpoſe thereof according to their Diſcretion, with- 'out Account to any Rule or Authority whatſo- 'ever.

'Are

'Are their Friends, their Wives, and Children An. 18. Car. I.
'(the greateſt Bleſſings of Peace, and Comforts of 1642.
'Life) precious to them? Would their Penury and November.
'Impriſonment be leſs grievous by thoſe Cordials?
'They ſhall be divorced from them, baniſhed, and
'ſhall no longer remain within the Cities of *London*
'and *Weſtminſter*, the Suburbs and the Counties
'adjacent; and how far thoſe adjacent Counties
'ſhall extend no Man knows.

'Is there any thing now left to enjoy, but the
'Liberty to rebel, and deſtroy one another? Are
'the outward Bleſſings only of Peace, Property, and
'Liberty, taken and forced from our Subjects? Are
'their Conſciences free and unaſſaulted by the Vi-
'olence of theſe Fire-brands? Sure the Liberty and
'Freedom of Conſcience cannot ſuffer by theſe Men!
'Alas! all theſe Puniſhments are impoſed upon
'them, becauſe they will not ſubmit to Actions con-
'trary to their natural Loyalty, to their Oaths of
'Allegiance and Supremacy, and to their late vo-
'luntary Proteſtation, which obliges them to the
'Care of our Perſon and our juſt Rights.

'How many Perſons of Honour, Quality, and
'Reputation, of the ſeveral Counties of *England*,
'are now impriſoned without any Objections againſt
'them, but Suſpicion of their Loyalty? How ma-
'ny of the graveſt and moſt ſubſtantial Citizens of
'*London*, by whom the Government and Diſcipline
'of that City was preſerved, are diſgraced, robb'd,
'and impriſoned, without any Proceſs of Law, or
'Colour of Accuſation, but of Obedience to the
'Law and Government of the Kingdom; whilſt
'Anabaptiſts and Browniſts, with the Aſſiſtance of
'vitious and debauched Perſons of deſperate For-
'tunes, take upon them to break up and rifle Houſes,
'as public and avowed Miniſters of a new-invented
'Authority? How many godly, pious, and painful
'Divines, whoſe Lives and Learning hath made
'them of reverend Eſtimation, are now ſlandered
'with Inclination to Popery; diſcountenanced and
'impriſoned, for diſcharging their Conſciences, in-
'ſtructing the People in the Chriſtian Duties of Re-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

ligion and Obedience; whilſt ſchiſmatical, illiterate, and ſcandalous Preachers fill the Pulpits and Churches with Blaſphemy, Irreverence and Treaſon, and incite their Auditory to nothing but Murder and Rebellion?

'We paſs over the vulgar Charm, by which they have captivated ſuch who have been contented to diſpenſe with their Conſciences for the Preſervation of their Eſtates; and by which they perſuade Men, chearfully, to part with this twentieth Part of their Eſtates to the good Work in hand; for whoever will give what he hath, may eſcape Robbing: They ſhall be repaid upon the Public Faith, as all other Monies lent upon the Propoſitions of both Houſes. It may be ſo; but Men muſt be condemned to a ſtrange Unthriftineſs who will lend upon ſuch Security. The Public Faith indeed is as great an Earneſt as the State can give, and engages the Honour, Reputation, and Honeſty of the Nation, and is the Act of the Kingdom; it is the Security of the King, the Lords, and Commons, which can never need an Executor, can never die, never be bankrupt; and therefore we willingly conſented to it for the Indemnity of our good Subjects of *Scotland* (who, we hope, will not think the worſe of it, for being ſo often and ſo cheaply mentioned ſince); but that a Vote of one or both Houſes ſhould be an Engagement upon the Public Faith, is as impoſſible as that the Committee of the Houſe of Commons for Examinations ſhould be the High Court of Parliament.

'And what is or can be ſaid, with the leaſt Shadow of Reaſon, to juſtify theſe Extravagances? We have not lately heard of the old Fundamental Laws which uſed to warrant the Innovations; this needs a Refuge even below thoſe Foundations. They will ſay, They cannot manage their great Undertakings without ſuch extraordinary Ways. We think ſo too; but that proves only they have undertaken ſomewhat they ought not to undertake; not that it is lawful for them to do any thing that is convenient for thoſe Ends.

'We

'We remembered them long ago, and we can- An. 18. Car. I.
'not do it too often, of that excellent Speech of 1642.
'Mr. *Pymme: The Law is that which puts a Dif-* November.
'*ference betwixt Good and Evil, betwixt Juſt and*
'*Unjuſt*; *if you take away the Law, all Things will*
'*fall into Confuſion, every Man will become a Law*
'*unto himſelf*; *which, in the depraved Condition of*
'*human Nature, muſt needs produce many great*
'*Enormities*; *Luſt will become a Law, and Envy*
'*will become a Law*; *Covetouſneſs and Ambition will*
'*become Laws*; *and what Dictates, what Deciſions,*
'*ſuch Laws will produce, may eaſily be diſcerned.* It
'may indeed, by the ſad Inſtances over the whole
'Kingdom: But will Poſterity believe, that, in the
'ſame Parliament, this Doctrine was avowed with
'that Acclamation, and theſe Inſtances after pro-
'duced? That, in the ſame Parliament, ſuch Care
'was taken, that no Man ſhould be committed, in
'what Caſe ſoever, without the Cauſe of his Impri-
'ſonment expreſſed, and that all Men ſhould be
'immediately bailed, in all Caſes bailable: And,
'during the ſame Parliament, that Alderman *Pen-*
'*nington*, or indeed any Body elſe but the ſworn
'Miniſters of Juſtice, ſhould impriſon whom they
'would, and for what they would, and for as long
'a Time as they would? That the King ſhould
'be reproached with Breach of Privilege for accuſing
'Sir *John Hotham* of High Treaſon, when, with
'Force of Arms, he kept him out of *Hull*, and
'deſpiſed him to his Face; becauſe, in no Caſe, a
'Member of either Houſe might be committed or
'accuſed, without Leave of that Houſe of which
'he is a Member: And yet that, during the ſame
'Parliament, the ſame Alderman ſhould commit
'the Earl of *Middleſex*, a Peer of the Realm, and
'the Lord *Buckhurſt*, a Member of the Houſe of
'Commons, to the Counter without Reprehenſion?
'That to be a Traitor (which is defined, and every
'Man underſtands) ſhould be no Crime; and to
'be called a Malignant, (which Nobody knows the
'Meaning of) ſhould be Ground enough for cloſe
'Impriſonment? That a Law ſhould be made,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'That whoſoever ſhould preſume to take Tunnage 'and Poundage, without an Act of Parliament, 'ſhould incur the Penalty of a Premunire; and, in 'the ſame Parliament, that the ſame Impoſition 'ſhould be laid upon our Subjects, and taken by an 'Order of both Houſes, without and againſt our 'Conſent! Laſtly, That, in the ſame Parliament, 'a Law ſhould be made to declare the Proceedings 'and Judgment upon Ship-Money to be illegal and 'void; and, during the Parliament, that an Or-'der of both Houſes ſhall, upon Pretence of Ne-'ceſſity, enable four Men to take away the twen-'tieth Part of their Eſtates from all their Neigh-'bours, according to their Diſcretion.

'But our good Subjects will no longer look upon 'theſe and the like Reſults, as upon the Counſels 'and Concluſions of both our Houſes of Parlia-'ment, tho' all the World knows even that Autho-'rity can never juſtify Things unwarrantable by 'Law; they well know how few of the Perſons 'truſted by them are preſent at their Conſultations; 'of above 500, not 80; and of the Houſe of Peers, 'not above a fifth Part; that they who are preſent, 'enjoy not the Privilege and Freedom of Parlia-'ment; but are beſieged by an Army, and awed 'by the ſame Tumults, which drove us and their 'Fellow-Members from thence, to conſent to what 'ſome few ſeditious, ſchiſmatical Perſons amongſt 'them do propoſe.

'Theſe are the Men who, joining with the Ana-'baptiſts and Browniſts of *London*, firſt changed the 'Government and Diſcipline of that City; and 'now, by the Pride and Power of that City, would 'undo the Kingdom, whilſt their Lord Mayor, (a 'Perſon accuſed and known to be guilty of High 'Treaſon) by a new Legiſlative Power of his own, 'ſuppreſſes and reviles the Book of Common Prayer, 'robs and impriſons whom he thinks fit, and, with 'the Rabble of his Faction, gives Laws to both 'Houſes of Parliament; and tells them they will 'have no Accommodation: Whilſt the Members, 'ſent and intruſted by their Counties, are expelled

'the

'the Houſe, or committed, for refuſing to take the 'Oath of Aſſociation to live and die with the Earl 'of *Eſſex*, as very lately Sir *Sidney Montague*. [p] An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'Theſe are the Men who have preſumed to ſend 'Ambaſſadors, and to enter into Treaties with fo-'reign States, in their own Behalfs; having, at this 'Time an Agent of their own with the States of '*Holland*, to negotiate for them upon private In-'ſtructions.

'Theſe are the Men who, not thinking they have 'yet brought Miſchief enough upon this Kingdom, 'at this Time invite and ſollicit our Subjects of *Scot-'land* to enter this Land with an Army againſt us. 'In a Word, theſe are the Men, who have made this 'laſt devouring Ordinance to take away all Law, 'Liberty, and Property from our People; and have, 'by it, really acted that upon our People, which, 'with infinite Malice, and no Colour or Ground, 'was laboured to be infuſed into them, to have 'been our Intention by the Commiſſion of Array.

'We

[p] Tho', for the ſake of Connection, we have given this Declaration under the Month of *November*, it was not publiſhed till *December*; which gave the King Occaſion to take Notice of a Tranſaction that ſtands thus in the *Commons Journals*:

December 3, 1642.

The Queſtion for adhering to the Earl of *Eſſex* in this Cauſe, for the Maintenance and Preſervation of the true Proteſtant Religion, the King's Perſon, the Laws of the Land, the Peace of the Kingdom, the Liberty and Property of the Subject, and the Rights and Privileges of Parliament, was this Day read to Sir *Sidney Montague*, [Member for *Huntingdonſhire*] and his Vote being demanded, he gave his Negative Voice unto it.

Hereupon the Commons reſolved, [but by a Majority of only 48 Voices againſt 45] *1ſt*, 'That he be diſabled from continuing any longer a Member of that Houſe, during this Parliament. *2dly*, 'That his Perſon be forthwith ſecured. And, *3dly*, 'That he be forthwith committed Priſoner to the *Tower*.—Sir *Sidney Montague* was then called to the Bar, and, kneeling there, Mr. Speaker pronounced Sentence againſt him accordingly; For not yielding his Conſent to aſſiſt the Earl of *Eſſex* in the Maintenance of Religion, the King's Perſon, the Liberty of the Subject, the Rights and Privileges of Parliament; and giving for his Reaſon, That the King had declared ſuch to be Traitors, as ſhould adhere to the ſaid Earl in this Cauſe, and pulling ſuch a Declaration out of his Pocket; thereby ſeeming to lay an Imputation upon all the Members, and others, that had declared to aſſiſt the ſaid Earl in this Cauſe: The Houſe thinking it a Crime, that any Member ſhould be guided by Declarations from abroad, and not by his own Judgment, in giving his Vote.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'We have now done. What Power and Authority theſe Men have, or would have, we know not: 'For ourſelf, we challenge none ſuch; we look 'upon the Preſſures and Inconveniences our good 'Subjects bear, even by us and our Army, (which 'the Army firſt raiſed by them enforced us to levy 'in our Defence, and their Refuſal of all Offers and 'Deſires of Treaty enforceth us to keep) with very 'much Sadneſs of Heart: We are ſo far from requiring a twentieth Part of their Eſtates, (though 'for their own viſible Preſervation) that, as we 'have already ſold or pawned our own Jewels, and 'coined our own Plate, ſo we are willing to ſell all 'our own Land and Houſes for their Relief; yet 'we do not doubt but our good Subjects will ſeriouſly conſider our Condition, and their own Duties, and think our Readineſs to protect them with 'the utmoſt Hazard of our Life, deſerves their Readineſs to aſſiſt us with ſome Part of their Fortunes; 'and whilſt other Men give a twentieth Part of 'their Eſtates, to enable them to forfeit the other 'nineteen, that they will extend themſelves to us in 'a liberal and free Proportion for the Preſervation of 'the reſt; and for the Maintenance of God's true 'Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Liberty of 'the Subject, and the Safety and very Being of Parliaments and of this Kingdom; for if all theſe ever 'were, or can be, in manifeſt Danger, it is now 'in this preſent Rebellion againſt us.

'Laſtly, We will and require all our loving Subjects, of what Degree or Quality ſoever, as they will 'anſwer it to God, to Us, and to Poſterity, by their 'Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy; as they would 'not be looked upon now, and remembered hereafter, as Betrayers of the Laws and Liberty they were 'born to; that they, in no Degree, ſubmit to this 'wild pretended Ordinance; and that they preſume 'not to give any Encouragement, or Aſſiſtance, to 'the Army now in Rebellion againſt us. Which if, 'notwithſtanding, they ſhall do, they muſt expect 'from us the ſevereſt Puniſhment the Law can inflict, and a perpetual Infamy with all good Men.'

A

A Letter from the *Hague*, directed to Secretary *Nicholas*, supposed to come from Col. *Goring*, having been taken from the Gentleman who brought it, and carried to the Parliament: It was this Day, *November* 26, read in both Houses, and by them ordered to be printed; and also to be read in all the Churches of *London*, and the Suburbs thereof. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

Hague, Nov. 22, 1642.

An intercepted Letter from Col. Goring.

IT is now long since I had the Opportunity of writing to you; but, since my first, have not heard any thing from you at all. The Occasion of our long Stay here was, first, the Expectation of our Irish *Ships; next, the Raising of Money, which the Proposition of* Newcastle *drew as fast as it could advance.*

The Failing of the Ships, had it not been supplied by the Reputation of the King's Success at Land, had given us a dangerous Blow here; but that hath so supported our Credit, that the Prince of Orange *hath since played his Part, and advanced all those Sums we were to expect; of which* 20,000 l. *is sent towards you,* 20,000 l. *to* Newcastle, *and* 20,000 l. *at least, we bring with us; besides the great Business, which we expect this Day a final End of, which will advance* 60,000 l. *more, in which we are ascertained of the Prince of* Orange's *utmost Power; such, nevertheless, we apprehend the Importance of the Queen's being in* England, *that we had gone this last Week, and expected the Coming of that after, had not an unseasonable Compliment from your Side stopped us, till this Express sent to you.*

The Fleet is now ready, and this Week we certainly go, if those Counsels, or Chances, that tend to dilatory Resolutions, move not more effectually than the certain Advantages of our Expedition and Dispatch from hence; all our Affairs being now done, and nothing more to be expected.

That you may know upon what Grounds we go, and what Security we expect there, and what Advantage you in the South *are to derive from it, you must know we have sent over* 10,000 *Foot Arms besides the Garrison, near* 2000 *Horse Arms, and* 20 *Pieces*

of

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

of Cannon. We bring over Waggons, and all Accommodation, to march so soon as we arrive; we carry very considerable Officers from hence, and, by the Advice we receive from that Side, 8000 *Men are on foot already, and six Troops of Horse; the rest will not be long in raising after we come there. General* King *is designed for Lieutenant-General, and hath been with the Queen, and will be suddenly there.*

From Denmark *are likewise sent Arms for* 10,000 *Foot, and* 1500 *Horse, with a Train of Artillery, and every Thing proportionable, to the very Drums and Halberds. Two good Men of War come their Convoy, and in them an Ambassador to his Majesty, a Person of great Quality in* Denmark: *I hope it will be a general Care there to see him nobly treated; for the Entertainment and Neglect of the last was much complained of, and is so much resented by that King, that it had like to have frustated all our Expectations in that Court, had not* Cochran *very handsomely evaded it: He comes along with the Ambassador; with whom if you encounter, he will communicate some Propositions of great Importance; which, in how much the fewer Hands they are carried, will be so much the better liked by them you are to deal with; if any Employment in this Affair may fall upon your Servant that writes to you, I know you will not be unmindful of him.*

We have great Apprehensions here, by something intimated from my Lord of Holland, *of a Treaty further entered into than we have Advertisement of, or can well approve; we have confidently believed your approaching* London *(if you had not made too long Stay upon the Way) would have determined that Matter; and what the Difficulties are now of that, we cannot yet understand, for if Intelligence from hence came as freely to you as to us, the King's Party there are very considerable, and full of that Expectation; and a Day or two's Loss of Time, by the late Example of* Hull, *may be judged what contrary Consequences it may produce.*

We hear my Lord of Essex *approaches* London, *but believe he will be so waited on by the King's Horse, as*

not

not to let him join with their Forces there; being now so lame an Army, without Horse or Cannon, as the Relations you send hither make him to be. We believe the King's Horse now likewise so great a Body, that it will be as troublesome as unnecessary for them to subsist together; and think so many Troops might be well spared as might be sent into Kent, *to countenance a Party to be set on Foot there; which, according to our Intelligence here, would undoubtedly be found very affectionate and considerable; so that by sparing* 500 *Horse, you might possibly add to your Army* 5000 *Foot, to be employed upon the River on that Side the Town.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

If the unhappy Interception had not come of the last Week's Letters, we had undoubtedly been with you, on the other Side, in Norfolk *and* Essex, *within three Weeks; and, in that Condition, having all the Kingdom behind us on every Side, it will not be hard to judge whether would have been better able to subsist, they within the Town, or the King's Army without; admit my Lord of* Essex *were gotten in, or that the Town had not yielded itself so soon as you had approached, you may yet certainly presume on this, that, by our being once on Foot, we shall be able to collect for you all the* 400,000 l. *Subsidies, universally throughout the Kingdom; which will make the King's Army subsist, and wear out theirs, besides the Money which we bring.*

What we expect from Denmark *and* France, *are all Encouragements to make us expect no Treaties to be admitted, but upon Terms of great Advantage and Honour to his Majesty; these you are best able to judge of upon the Place.*

If the King have Use of them, I am confident you may expect from France *(so soon as you set Foot in* Kent, *and shall intimate your Desire of the same) the three Regiments of his Majesty's own Subjects there, employed under Colonel* Hill, *Colonel* Fitz-Williams, *and Colonel* Bealing. *Your Letters directed to* Newcastle *will direct our Addresses to* France, *for I hope we shall yet be there before you can return any in Answer to this.*

We

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

We find, both in *Rushworth*'s and *Husband*'s *Collections*, the following Account of the Manner how this Letter was intercepted and taken:

The Manner of its being intercepted.

'On *Saturday* Morning the Gentleman that brought this Letter from *Holland*, came up to *London* in a *Gravesend* Boat, intending to land at *Brentford*, and therefore, for the more Expedition, shot the Bridge; which being perceived by one of the Pinnaces that lay on this Side for the Guard of the City and Parliament, and being known to be a *Gravesend* Boat, which always land on the other Side at *Billingsgate*, they called to them to know their Business; but they, not regarding their Summons, still posted away; whereupon the Men in the Ship made after them and hauled them in, examined the Gentleman, and, having some Suspicion, searched him and found this, with some other Letters about him; whereupon they presently carried him up to the Parliament; where, after Examination, his Letters were taken from him, and he committed to safe Custody.

Nov. 28. The King's Answer to the Parliament's last Petition to him, inclosed in a Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, was read in that House, as follows:

The King's Answer to the Petition of both Houses, of the 24th.

'WE expected such Propositions from you, as might speedily remove and prevent the 'Misery and Desolation of this Kingdom; and that, 'for the effecting thereof, (we now residing at a con- 'venient Place, not far from our City of *London*) 'Committees from both our Houses of Parliament 'should attend us; for you pretended, by your Mes- 'sage to us at *Colebrooke*, that those were your De- 'sires: Instead thereof (and thereby let all the World 'judge of the Design of that Overture) we have only 'received your humble Petition, *That we would be* 'pleased to return to our Parliament with our Royal, 'not our Martial, Attendants.

'All our good Subjects that remember what we 'have so often told you and them upon this Sub-

ject,

'ject, and what hath since passed, must, with In- An. 18. Car. I.
'dignation, look upon this Message, as intended 1642.
'by the Contrivers thereof for a Scorn to us; and November.
'thereby designed by that Malignant Party (of
'whom we have so often complained, whose Safety
'and Ambition is built upon the Divisions and Ruins
'of this Kingdom, and who have too great an In-
'fluence upon your Actions) for a Wall of Separa-
'tion betwixt us and our People.

'We have told you the Reason why we parted
'from *London*; how we were chased thence, and
'by whom: We have often complained that the
'greatest Part of our Peers, and of the Members of
'our House of Commons, could not, with Safety
'to their Honours and Persons, continue and vote
'freely among you; but, by Violence and cunning
'Practices, were debarred of those Privileges which
'their Birth-rights, and the Trust reposed in them
'by their Counties, gave them; the Truth whereof
'may sufficiently appear by the small Number of
'those that are with you.

'We have offered to meet both our Houses in
'any Place free and convenient for us and them,
'but we could never receive the least Satisfaction in
'any of these Particulars, nor for those scandalous
'and seditious Pamphlets and Sermons which swarm
'amongst you. That's all one you tell us: It is now
'for our Honour, and for the Safety of our Royal
'Person, to return to our Parliament. But herein
'your formerly Denying us a Negative Voice gives
'us Cause to believe, that, by giving yourselves
'that Name without us, you intend not to acknow-
'ledge us to be Part of it.

'The whole Kingdom knows that an Army was
'raised under Pretence of Orders of both Houses,
'an Usurpation never heard of before in any Age;
'which Army hath pursued us in our own King-
'dom, gave us Battle at *Keynton*, and endeavoured
'to take away the Life of us and our Children; and
'yet (these Rebels being newly recruited, and pos-
'sessed of our City of *London*) we are courteously in-
'vited to return to our Parliament there; that is,

'into

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

'into the Power of their Army. Doth this signify 'any other Thing, than that, since the traiterous 'Endeavours of those desperate Men could not snatch 'the Crown from our Head, (it being defended by 'the Providence of God, and the Affections and Loy-'alty of our good Subjects) we should now tamely 'come up and give it them; and put ourselves, our 'Life, and the Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes of all 'our good Subjects into their merciful Hands?

'Well, we think not fit to give any other Answer, 'to this Part of your Petition: But as we impute not 'this Affront to both our Houses of Parliament, nor 'to the Major Part of those that are now present 'there, but to that dangerous Party we and the whole 'Kingdom must cry out upon; so we shall, for our 'good Subjects Sake, and out of our most tender 'Sense of their Miseries and the general Calamities 'of this Kingdom, which must, if this War con-'tinue, speedily overwhelm this whole Nation, take 'no Advantage of it. But, if you shall really pur-'sue what you presented to us at *Colebrooke*, we 'shall make good all we then gave you in Answer to 'it, whereby the Hearts of our distressed Subjects 'may be raised with the Hopes of Peace; without 'which Religion, the Laws, and your Liberties, 'can no way be settled and secured.

'Touching the late and sad Accident you men-'tion, if you thereby intend that of *Brentford*, we 'desire you, once, to deal ingenuously with the 'People; and to let them see our last Message to 'you, and our Declaration to them, concerning the 'same; (both which we sent to our Press at *Lon-'don*, but were taken away from our Messenger, and 'not suffered to be published) and then we doubt 'not but they will be soon undeceived, and easily 'find out those Counsels, which do rather persuade 'a desperate Division than a good Agreement be-'twixt us, our two Houses, and People.'

The Lords ordered, That this Message should be communicated to the Commons forthwith; and it was sent down to them accordingly.

Nov.

Nov. 29. The Meſſengers were diſmiſſed that brought the laſt Meſſage from the King; and a Letter was wrote to the Lord *Falkland*, intimating, That the Houſes would ſend an Anſwer to it by an Expreſs of their own. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. November.

The ſame Day an Ordinance of Parliament was made, For the ſpeedy ſetting forth certain Ships, in all Points furniſhed for War, to prevent the bringing over Soldiers, Money, Ordnance, and other Ammunition from beyond the Sea, to aſſiſt the King againſt the Parliament of *England*. By this Ordinance it was declared, That all Adventurers in this Enterprize ſhould have and enjoy all Ships, Goods, Money, Plate, Arms, Ammunition, Victuals, Pillage, and Spoil, which ſhould be ſeized or taken, as their own proper Goods. An Ordinance for fitting out Ships to cut off all Supplies from the King.

Thus much for the Proceedings in *November*.

So many and various are the Orders, Inſtructions, Letters of Intelligence, *&c.* from different Parts of the Kingdom, all relating to War, and entered in the *Journals* of both Houſes, in the Beginning of *December*, that it would be tireſome to repeat them: We will not therefore trouble the Reader with any of them, but caſt an Eye to ſee what was doing without Doors at this Time; and how the King's or Parliament's Power roſe, or fell, in different Parts of the Kingdom.

After the late Rencounter at *Brentford*, the King withdrew his Army over *Kingſton-Bridge* to *Oatlands*; and from thence, by *Colebrooke* and *Reading*, to *Oxford*. The State of the Kingdom at this Time.

At the ſame Time the Earl of *Newcaſtle* [a] had aſſociated all the Counties *North* of *Yorkſhire*, for the King; on which Commiſſions were ſent down from the Parliament, to the Lord *Fairfax* and others, to aſſociate the laſt-named County with all the Midland Counties up to *North-Wales*. However the Earl marched forward, with a gallant Army of *Northumbrians*, *&c.* towards *York*. At *Pierſbridge*, a Paſs over the River *Tees*, he was oppoſed by a Party of Lord *Fairfax*'s Horſe, commanded

[a] *William Cavendiſh*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

manded by Capt. *Hotham*, whom the Earl diſperſed, and marched ſtreight to *York*; where he publiſhed a Declaration °, ſetting forth the Reaſons for his taking up Arms for the King.

The Parliament had alſo brought ſeveral Counties, in the *Weſt* of *England*, into an Aſſociation; and ſome Matters are entered in the *Journals*, for the Encouragement of this Project.

In the *South* the Event was various; *Farnham* Caſtle, in the County of *Surry*, was taken by the High Sheriff, for the King; which Sir *William Waller* ſoon after retook for the Parliament. But this Loſs was amply made up by the King's Forces taking the Town of *Marlborough* by Storm, under the Command of Lord *Digby*, Lord *Grandiſon*, Lord *Wilmot*, Lord *Wentworth*, &c. ſo that now the Kingdom, tho' in the Depth of Winter, was in a Flame, from one End to the other of it.

The miſerable State of *Ireland*, alſo, during theſe Combuſtions, was really to be pitied; both Parties in *England* laid the Blame on each other, for neglecting the Succours that were to be ſent to that Kingdom; but the true Reaſons thereof, we think, will beſt appear by the following Extracts from the *Lords Journals* of the 9th of this Month.

To the High and moſt Honourable Court of Parliament,

The PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardreſs Waller*, Knights and Colonels, and of Colonel *Arthur Hill* and Colonel *Audley Mervine*, in Behalf of themſelves and other Commanders in his Majeſty's Army in *Ireland*,

Moſt humbly ſheweth,

A Petition, from ſeveral Officers in *Ireland*, to the Parliament.

THat your Petitioners, by particular Truſt devolved from conſiderable Parts of the Army in Ireland, *have, theſe* 26 *Weeks, attended for ſome timely Succour to be diſpatched to that deplorable Kingdom; and finding, to our unſpeakable Grief, that the Diſtractions of this Kingdom afforded us very weak Hopes of any com-*

° See this at Length in *Ruſhworth's Collections*, Vol. V. p. 78.

competent Supplies: As we did, in a tender Resent- An. 18 Car. I.
ment of the bleeding Condition thereof, petition the 1642.
High Court of Parliament, so, by Licence first ob- December.
tained from the Committee of Safety, out of the same Sense, in all Humility, we address'd ourselves to his Majesty, whose gracious Answer we received in Writing, and his Command to publish the same.

May it therefore please your Lordships, in Obedience to his Majesty's Commands, and out of a constant Inclination to observe the Directions of this most Honourable Assembly, to grant us Leave to present to your Honours the Copy of our Petition to his Majesty, his Majesty's Answer to us, and also the best and only Remedies appearing unto us for the present Preservation and future Being of that perishing Kingdom; accepting and humbly praying therein the further Resolutions and Directions of this High Court, in a Matter of so great Importance; wherein God's Glory, the interwoven Safety of his Majesty's Dominions, and so much Protestant Blood as yet unspilt, are so highly concern'd; their Wants being so pressing, the Power of the Enemy daily increasing, and their Ruin, without present Relief, inevitable, constrain your Petitioners humbly to beg a speedy Answer, further Delays being to them as dangerous as a Desertion; and if further Satisfaction of the particular Condition of every Part of the Army, and of those distressed Protestants there, be desired, your Petitioners are ready to remonstrate the same. And, as in Duty bound, shall pray, &c.

The Petitioners were called in, and presented the said Copy, which was read *in hæc Verba:*

To the KING's Most Excellent Majesty,

The HUMBLE PETITION of Sir *James Montgomery* and Sir *Hardress Waller*, Knights and Colonels, Colonel *Arthur Hill*, and Colonel *Audley Mervin*, in Behalf of themselves and others, Commanders in his Majesty's Army in *Ireland*.

May it please your Sacred Majesty,

WE your Majesty's most humble Subjects, being intrusted from considerable Parts of your Majesty's Forces in the Kingdom of Ireland, *to petition* And to the King's

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

your Majesty and your Parliament for Supplies; and finding that your Majesty had committed the Care and Managing of that War to your Parliament here, we addressed ourselves unto the same; whose Sense of our Miseries, and Inclination to redress them appeared very tender unto us; but the present Distempers of this your Majesty's Kingdom of England *(to our unspeakable Grief) are grown so great, that all future Passages, by which Comfort and Life should be conveyed unto that gasping Kingdom, seem totally to be obstructed; so that, unless your gracious Majesty, out of your singular Wisdom and fatherly Care, apply some speedy Remedy, we your distressed and loyal Subjects of that Kingdom must inevitably perish.*

Our Condition represents unto your Majesty the Estate of all your faithful Protestant Subjects in Ireland: *The Influence of Princely Favour and Goodness so actively distilled upon your Kingdom of* Ireland, *before the Birth of this monstrous Rebellion there, and since the same so abundantly expressed in Characters of a deep Sense, and lively Resentment of the bleeding Condition thereof, give us Hope, in this our deplorable Extremity, to address ourselves unto your sacred Throne; humbly beseeching that it may please your most gracious Majesty, amongst your other weighty Cares, to reflect upon the bleeding Condition of that perishing Kingdom, that timely Relief may be afforded; otherwise your loyal Subjects there must yield their Fortunes a Prey, their Lives a Sacrifice, and their Religion a Scorn, to the merciless Rebels powerfully assisted from abroad.*

Whilst we live, we rest in your Majesty's Protection; if our Deaths are signed in that Cause, we will die in your Obedience; living and dying ever pray for your Majesty's long and prosperous Reign over us.

JA. MONTGOMERY, ARTHUR HILL,
HARD. WALLER, AU. MERVIN.

Next was read his Majesty's Answer, dated at the Court of *Oxford*, the first of *December*, 1642.

His Majesty hath expressly commanded me to give this Answer to this Petition.

THAT

'THAT his Majesty, since the Beginning of that monstrous Rebellion, hath had no greater Sorrow than for the bleeding Condition of that his Kingdom; and as he hath always laboured that timely Relief might be afforded to the same, and consented to all Propositions (how disadvantageous soever to himself) that have been offered him for that Purpose; and not only at first recommended their Condition to both his Houses of Parliament, and immediately, of his own meer Motion, sent over several Commissions, and caused some Proportion of Arms and Ammunition (which the Petitioners well know to have been a great support to the Northern Parts of that Kingdom) to be conveyed to them out of *Scotland*; and not only offered to find 10,000 Volunteers to undertake that War, but hath often since prest, by many several Messages, that sufficient Succours might be hasten'd thither; and other Matters of smaller Importance laid by, which did divert it; and offered, and most really intended, in his own Royal Person, to have undergone the Danger of that War, for the Defence of his good Subjects, and the Chastisement of those perfidious and barbarous Rebels; and, in his several Expressions of his Desires of Treaty and Peace, hath declared the present miserable Condition, and certain future Loss, of *Ireland*, to be one of his principal Motives, most earnestly to desire that the present Distractions of that Kingdom might be composed, and that others would concur with him to the same End: So his Majesty is well pleased that his Offers, Concurrence, Actions, and Expressions are so rightly understood by the Petitioners and those who have employed them, notwithstanding the groundless and horrid Aspersions which have been cast upon him: But wishes that, instead of meer general Complaints (to which his Majesty can make no Return but of Compassion) they could have digested, and offered to him any such Desires, by consenting to which he might convey, at least in some Degree, Com-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

His Majesty's Answer to it.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'fort and Life to that gaſping Kingdom; preſerve 'his diſtreſſed and loyal Subjects of the ſame from 'inevitable periſhing, and the true Proteſtant Re- 'ligion from being ſcorned and trampled on by thoſe 'mercileſs and idolatrous Rebels.

'And if the Petitioners can yet think on any 'ſuch, and propoſe them to his Majeſty, he aſſures 'them that, by his Readineſs to conſent, and his 'Thanks to them for the Propoſal, he will make it 'appear to them, that their moſt preſſing perſonal 'Sufferings cannot make them more deſirous of 'Relief, than his Care of the true Religion, and of 'his faithful Subjects, and of that Duty which 'obliges him, to his Power, to protect both, renders 'him deſirous to afford it to them.

FALKLAND.

Laſtly, were read the Remedies, which they offer'd for the Preſervation of that Kingdom.

The HUMBLE CONCEPTIONS of Sir *James Montgomery*, *&c.* upon the Reſult of their Petition to his Majeſty, and his Anſwer to the ſame.

The Remedies propoſed for the Relief of *Ireland*

UPON our humble Addreſs to his Majeſty to petition for the Relief of the bleeding Condition of Ireland, *his Majeſty, after an Expreſſion of his tender Reſentment of our Sufferings, gave us in Anſwer, That to ſuch general Complaints his Majeſty can make no Return but in Compaſſion; and could wiſh we had digeſted ſuch particular Deſires, that he might have given his Royal Aſſent to convey ſome Comfort, tho' but in a weak Meaſure, to the gaſping Condition thereof: Wherefore, that we might not ſeem inſenſible of his Majeſty's gracious Anſwer and free Propoſals, we have entered into a moſt narrow Diſquiſition to make ſome Overtures, by humble Deſires, as may conduce to the reſtoring the Glory of that Kingdom, and ſecure the interwoven Dependency of it with his Majeſty's other Dominions: And ſince the Managing of the War in that diſtreſſed Kingdom hath been committed*

to

to the Vigilancy and Power of this most Honourable Assembly, and we acknowledge your pious Inclinations in expressing the same; yet, in all Humility to your superior Wisdoms, and in a deep Sense of the imminent Ruin of that Kingdom, if not speedily prevented, we offer these our Desires; which, if they receive your Approbation, we are most happy; if, for Reasons of State, best known to yourselves, they are to be laid aside, then we beg it may be construed as our Zeal, not our Presumption. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

1st, *Since this Kingdom is the Fountain from whence the Streams of Safety must flow, and that the present Distractions have so troubled the same; as we earnestly implore the Throne of Grace both for yourselves and us, so we humbly offer these unto your grave Wisdoms, as the subordinate Instruments of a happy, blessed, and timely Accommodation here, in which the King and People may rejoice; there being no other visible Way to convey such perfect Health unto that Kingdom, but that it may otherwise immediately be subject to a dangerous Relapse.*

2dly, *If this Kingdom must yet longer be diverted from that prosperous Peace, to which, to the Envy of other Nations, she hath been so fortunately wedded, we humbly desire that such competent Supplies of Money, Victuals, Cloaths, and Ammunition, may be timely transported to the Army there, without which there is not the least Hopes of longer Subsistence; that such Protestant Blood there yet unspilt, and by your own Commands there employed, may be preserved; that such Garrisons, Sea-Ports, Forts, Artillery, and other Warlike Provisions, may be secured, untill composed Times may afford such large Supplies, as may promise a Reducement of that Kingdom to their due Obedience.*

3dly, *If neither of these can suit with the present Constitution of these Times, we, in a bleeding Foresight of our miserable distressed Condition, humbly desire (if a fatal Necessity, for Preservation of all that is dear to us and our Posterity, enforce such hard and miserable Conditions upon us, as may prove inconvenient to that, and, in the End, to this Kingdom) that you will be pleased to allow them a favourable Construction.*

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. December.

Thus labouring in these Straits, we address ourselves unto your approved Wisdoms for timely Directions in a Matter of so great Concernment.

These Petitions and Remonstrances, from the Protestants of *Ireland*, the Lords referred to a Committee, as did also the Commons on their being presented unto them. The latter appointed a particular Day for taking them into Consideration; but we do not find any thing further done in this Affair by either House, their own Fears and Distractions being much nearer to them at this Time.

Some Citizens of *London* complain of an intended Petition for an Accommodation.

Two Petitions to Parliament being on Foot, at the same Time, in the City of *London*, but widely different in the Contents of them, Mr. *Shute* appears again in the *Journals* of the Commons, declaring, That, with all Thankfulness, the Godly Party acknowledged the open Care of that House to all their Desires: That they did subject their Money and Lives, to the last Drop of Blood in their Veins, to be disposed of by Parliament:

'But they desired to clear themselves from an Imputation cast upon them by the Malignants, that they petition against Peace. This, he said, was far from their Intentions; but their Desires were for an honourable and secure Peace: That the Malignant Party went about to get Hands to a Petition to procure a Treaty, that the Enemy might gain Time to recollect their broken Strength; well knowing that they are so, and that they want Powder and Ammunition.'

He then presented a Copy of the adverse Petition, which was read; but, after returning Thanks to Mr. *Shute* and the rest of the Citizens, for this fresh Mark of their Esteem, the further Consideration of this Petition was deferred to another Time: And, a Day or two after, Mr. *Shute*, it seems, growing too bold in addressing the House, two of the Members were ordered to acquaint him, That the Commons resented some Expressions used by him, and admonished him how to demean himself hereafter, when he came to give Information to them.

Both

Both Houſes of Parliament had been long jealous of their Neighbours the *Dutch*, for ſending Supplies of Men, Money, *&c.* to the King. And Mr. *Strickland*, their Agent in *Holland*, had often preſented Memorials to the States on this Subject; when, in truth, the King had nothing from thence but what was bought up by the Sale of the Queen's Jewels, or her own Money, except what the Prince of *Orange*, her Son-in-Law, ſupplied: However the Parliament thought neceſſary, at this Time, to draw up a Declaration, and ſent it to Mr. *Walter Strickland* at the *Hague*, to be by him preſented to the States, to prevent any Supplies coming to the King from that Quarter. The Form of which ſtands thus in the *Lords Journals* of the 12th of this Month: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The Parliament's Remonſtrance to the *Dutch* againſt ſelling Ammunition to the King.

'WE the Lords and Commons in the Parliament of *England* aſſembled, did, with much Contentment and Satisfaction, receive the Anſwer of the High and Mighty Lords, the Lords the States General of the United Provinces, to the Declaration preſented to them on our Behalf, by *Walter Strickland*, Eſq; finding therein many lively Expreſſions of their Affections to the Peace and Proſperity of this Kingdom, and a due Reſentment of our Troubles, and of their Care and Reſolution of hindering the Paſſage of any Men, Munition, or Arms, which might foment and increaſe the unhappy Differences and Combuſtions, wherewith this Nation is miſerably diſtracted and diſtempered; which we gladly and thankfully received as a Means of our preſent Safety, and a Help towards the ſettling a deſired Peace betwixt his Majeſty and his moſt loyal Subjects, and a Foundation of more near and beneficial Conjunction betwixt this Kingdom and that State; for Preſervation of the Proteſtant Religion, and Relief of many oppreſſed Princes and States, againſt the common Enemy, both theirs and ours: But this Hope and Contentment hath been much impaired by the

'frequent

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'frequent Experiments we have had of the Tranſportation of Men, Munition, and Arms, from 'thoſe Parts which have been employed againſt us; 'and many undoubted Advertiſements of the continual Preparations and Endeavours of divers Traitors and Fugitives of this Nation, now reſiding 'in the United Provinces, to procure great Quantities of Treaſure and other Warlike Proviſions to be 'conveyed over from thoſe Parts againſt the Parliament and Subjects of this Kingdom; and particularly that Col. *Goring*, Capt. *Byron*, Sir *Francis* '*Mackworth*, Capt. *Lloyd*, Capt. *Brett*, and Capt. '*Wyndham*, with divers Hundreds of Soldiers, being 'in the Pay of that State, are either lately ſhipped, 'or ready to embark, from ſome of thoſe Parts 'belonging to the ſame, for *Newcaſtle*; and to join 'with the Army of Papiſts and other ill-affected 'Perſons, raiſed in the *North* Parts of this Kingdom, againſt the Parliament, and for the Subverſion of the Proteſtant Religion here; which hath 'exceedingly encouraged that Party, and confirmed 'his Majeſty in adhering to thoſe evil Counſellors, 'who have been the Authors of the public Troubles 'and Miſeries of this Kingdom, and the rejecting 'the many humble Petitions that he would be pleaſed, according to the Laws of the Kingdom, to 'return to his Parliament; and, by their Counſel 'and Advice, to ſecure our Religion and the Laws 'againſt the wicked Plots and Deſigns, which have 'long been, and ſtill are, in Agitation for the Subverſion of both; in doing whereof we have offered, 'and are ſtill ready, to ſecure his Majeſty's Perſon, 'Honour and Eſtate, in any Manner which may 'be expected from true Chriſtians and loyal Subjects; and which we ſolemnly profeſs, in the Preſence of Almighty God, to be our real Intention 'and hearty Deſires to perform; and that whatſoever is pretended and publiſhed to the contrary, 'as if we had admitted any Deſign, or expreſſed 'any Endeavours, to the Hurt of his Perſon, or 'Prejudice of his Sovereignty, proceeds from the

'falſe

'false and malicious Scandals of such as are Enemies to the Public Peace: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'Wherefore we entreat that wise and prudent 'State to fulfill those Promises and Declarations, 'which they have made to us, of restraining and 'prohibiting the Transportation of Men, Arms, 'Money, or any Warlike Provisions against us; 'and that they will enquire into the Faults and 'Neglects of those Officers, who have suffered so 'many Breaches and Violations thereof; that they 'will be pleased, with all just Favour, to admit of 'such Complaints and Informations as shall be made 'unto them, by Mr. *Strickland*, in that Behalf; 'and that they will look upon this not only as a Mat-'ter of Civil Respect to this House, but as that which 'concerns the Honour of God, the Defence of Re-'ligion, and their own Safety and Liberty; who, 'if we be ruined, will not only be deprived of an 'affectionate and useful Alliance, but inviron'd with 'such Enemies as, by the same Rules and Princi-'ples by which they have been active to seek our 'Ruin, will be carried on to all Kind of Practices 'and Endeavours to ruin them.'

The History of this Intestine War will be best known by the Letters of Intelligence, which were sent to the Parliament, from different Parts of the Kingdom; and though they may perhaps, sometimes, exaggerate their own Victories, and other Advantages gained over the King's Forces; yet, at the same Time, as these Letters lay open their own Wants and Necessities, the inserting them, in their proper Order of Time, will not only illustrate several Passages in the Course of this Work, but open many Scenes of Importance, hitherto concealed from the Public. We shall begin with a Letter from *Devonshire*, which was, on the 13th of this Month, presented to the House of Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference; and is entered in the *Journals* of the former only. It was addressed to the Lords, and others, of the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom, at *Westminster*.

Right

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

A Letter from *Devonshire*, giving an Account of the State of Affairs in the *West* of *England*.

Right Honourable,

ACcording to our Duty, and Truſt repoſed in us, we have uſed our beſt Endeavours for the Preſervation of this County; and although little Aſſiſtance hath been afforded us by the People here, to what we expected, yet God, that never fails thoſe that go on in his Way, and reſt upon his Power and Goodneſs, hath ſo bleſſed us now in this Time of Straits, that he hath done great Things for us by ſmall Means: To him therefore be the Glory and the Praiſe.

Upon Tueſday *the* 29*th of* November, *Captain* Thompſon *and Captain* Pymme, *by Command of Colonel* Ruthen, *went to* Plimpton, *to keep that Town, with their Troops, and about* 70 *Dragooners and* 200 *Foot, if they ſaw it might have been kept without great Hazard; but, the next Day, hearing the Enemies were marching from* Taviſtock, *with (as was related to us)* 3000 *Horſe and Foot, and eight Pieces of Ordnance; and finding the Town of* Plimpton *not to be kept without as great a Force as ſhould come againſt it, by reaſon the Town lies ſo ſcattering, and ſeveral Villages ſo near it; and ſo, leſt the Enemy ſhould come between them and* Plymouth, *they drew forth towards the Enemy; but, Night coming on, they could not come to give them Charge, without Hazard and Damage one of another in the Dark; they then went to* Plymouth.

The Day after, being Thurſday, *Colonel* Ruthen, *with four Troops of Horſe and the aforeſaid Dragooners, went to* Plimpton *to view the Town, and to ſee the Motion of the Enemy; and, finding the Town as was related to him, he then drew towards* Plymouth, *and ſtood upon the Lary for the Space of three Hours; forcing the Enemy, who attempted one Charge to have drawn us to their Ambuſcades, to fly preſently; and durſt not (with all their Force, which we judge was at leaſt* 2500 *Horſe and Foot then left, for many ran away the Night before) give us a Charge upon fair Ground; but that Night they went to* Plimpton, *where they continued till* Wedneſday *the* 7*th of this preſent Month.*

Colonel

Colonel Ruthen, *with the aforesaid four Troops of Horse and about* 100 *Dragooners, about Three of the Clock in the Morning, marched from* Plymouth *over* Rubart *Downs, being a Bye-way to* Modbury; *where were gathered together, by the Sheriff's Commands,* 3 *or* 4000 *Men, some with Arms, and some without; and we came so privately that they did not discover us untill we were within a Mile of the Town; which did so amaze them, that after Sir* Ralph Hopton *drew up all the Men he could presently get, he, with Sir* Nicholas Slanning, *ran away and escaped; and after a small Skirmish with those that stood to it, with the Loss of one Man and two hurt, and three or four Horses, we took Prisoners, the Sheriff Sir* Edmund Fortescue, *and his Brother; Sir* Edward Seymour, *Knight of the Shire for* Devonshire, *and his Son; Mr.* Basset, *Capt.* Pomeroy, *Capt.* Wood, *Capt.* Penrose, *Lieut.* Barns *of* Exon, *and many others.* An. 18 Car. I. 1642. December.

From thence we marched that Day, a long March of sixteen Hours on Horseback, with our Prisoners, to Dartmouth, *to the Gladding of the Hearts of the good People there; for, while we were upon our March towards* Modbury, *one Mr.* Thomas Leigh *was in Treaty with Sir* Ralph Hopton, *about the Delivery up of the Town, as we were informed; and, by his own Confession since, he had got a Warrant to free his House from Plundering; this Mr.* Leigh *we have also taken, and, with the rest of the Prisoners, have sent to* Plymouth, *this Morning, in a Frigate called the* Crescent, *by one Capt.* Plunket.

We ran a great Hazard in this Service, as your Honours may judge, for the Enemy lay on both Sides with all their Forces; Part at Plimpton *and Part at* Totness: *But the Lord carried us along in our Way, and delivered the Enemies of his Truth and of our Liberties, into our Hands, and made many more to fly before us: The Prisoners Colonel* Ruthen *hath ordered to be sent from* Plymouth, *with the first fair Wind, to* London; *and we now lie here, expecting some Force from* Exon *to join with us; and, if we can have but* 1000 *Dragooners, we hope to do the Enemy much Damage.*

We

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

We hear, this Day, that since our Coming hither the Enemy is advanced with the greatest Part of their Force to Totnes; *what are left at* Plimpton *we know not. If speedy Supply comes not of Men, Money, and Arms, we fear they will plunder most of the good Towns in this County; and what it may grow to, if God doth not mightily work for us, we know not. Your Honours know of what great Concernment the Keeping of this County is, and we doubt not but the great Need of Assistance will be sufficient to move your Honours to take into Consideration the Premises; which that your Honours would be pleased to do, is the humble Petition of*

Your obedient Servants,

Dartmouth, December 9, 1642

WILLIAM RUTHEN.
ALEXANDER PYMME.
GEORGE THOMPSON.
ANTHONY ROUSE.
LEWIS DICK.

At the foregoing Conference the Lords were informed, That, upon Occasion of this Letter, the Commons had passed these Votes following, wherein they desired their Lordships Concurrence:

Mr. *Holles* appointed Commander of those Parts in Chief.

1. 'That Mr. *Holles* be desired to command the Forces in the *Western* Parts in Chief.

2. 'That the Lord-General be desired to grant a Commission to Mr. *Holles* accordingly.

3. 'That a Committee of Lords and Commons may recommend to the City the State of the *Western* Counties, and earnestly move them, in regard of the Importance of those Counties, to assist the setting forth of a considerable Strength to be sent into those Parts; that the Letter from *Dartmouth* be communicated to the City of *London*; and that those Committees of both Houses may be a standing Committee, to take Care of the Furtherance and Sending away such Supplies as are resolved to be sent.'

The Lords agreed to all these Votes, and the following Peers were appointed to be Committees to join

join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons, *viz.* the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Bolingbroke*, the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*, the Lords *Grey de Werk*, *Brooke* and *Wharton*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Nothing further occurs worth our Notice till *December* 16. When a Message came from the Lord-General, with a Relation that the Parliament's Forces had taken the Castle and City of *Winchester*, with the Lord *Grandison* and 24 other Commanders Prisoners, 700 Soldiers, 600 Horse, and 600 Arms, with the Loss of a few Men only. For which Victory the Lord-General intended to give public Thanks to God, the next Lord's Day, at *Windsor*, for this great Success without Loss of Blood. His Lordship desired the Lords would give Order that a public Thanksgiving might be observed, the same Day, in *London* and *Westminster*. On which the House ordered, That the Lord Mayor be desired to cause public Thanks to be given within the said City and Liberties; the Justices of Peace for *Westminster* and *Middlesex* were also ordered to do the same, and every where to express their Joy, by ringing of Bells, *&c.* for this Victory. The Parliament order a Day of Thanksgiving for the taking of *Winchester*.

At the same Time a Letter from Lord *Fairfax*, was read, giving a very particular Account of the State of Affairs in the *Northern* Counties; which we shall give at Length, as well as all other Matters of Intelligence sent up to Parliament. It was address'd to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

May it please your Lordship,

UPON Saturday *last I received a Declaration of Parliament, with a Commission from his Excellency the Earl of* Essex, *to command in Chief over the Forces of the* North, *and other adjacent Counties; which great Honour and Trust, far above my Ambition or Merit, by your Lordships conferred on me, I shall exercise with all Care and Fidelity; not doubting but that your Lordships will enable me therein, with such other Supplies as the Necessity of the Service shall require, and that represented from hence.* Lord *Fairfax's* Account of the State of the *Northern* Counties.

The

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The State of Affairs in these Parts, since my last Dispatch of the first of this Month, stands in this Manner: The Earl of Newcastle *is come to* York, *and joined his Forces to the Earl of* Cumberland, *making in all, as I am informed, about* 8000 *Men, Horse and Foot, of which there is about* 2000 *Horse and Dragooners; a Strength far too potent to be resisted by the small Power which I have here, whereof I send a List inclosed: Our Strength was once estimated by ourselves far greater than now it appears; for upon the Earl of* Newcastle's *coming over the* Tees, *Sir* Edward Loftus *with all the* Richmondshire *Men, and Sir* Henry Anderson *with all the* Cleveland *Men and the rest of the* North-Riding, *which were estimated at* 1000 *Men, did all return to their own Houses, save about* 130 *Men brought hither by Sir* Matthew Boynton, *some other Gentlemen, and one Troop of Horse raised by Sir* Henry Foulis, *and about forty Horse more brought hither by Capt.* Anderson. *Besides this Defect, our Numbers are decreased by Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *to whom I have sent divers Orders to march* Northward, *to join with Capt* Hotham *and the rest, in resisting the Earl of* Newcastle's *Entry, before he came into* Yorkshire; *and since his Entry, to come to me and the rest of the Army at* Tadcaster, *but he found such Impediments as he could do neither; and now I hear he is gone to* Scarbrough, *and taken his Forces with him, which were about* 700 *Men; Col.* Boynton, *whose Regiment consisted of* 800 *Foot, is likewise marched towards* Hull, *although I sent him divers Orders to march up hither to assist the Forces at* Tadcaster, *giving me neither Reason of his not coming to me, nor of his March towards* Hull. *I understood that Sir* John Gell *had raised* 800 *Men in* Derbyshire, *and sent unto him to march hither to our Succour; but I have received an Answer from him, that he is not able yet to stir from thence: From Sir* Anthony Irby, *nor the* Lincolnshire *Men, I hear nothing, though I have sent to them express Messengers: So our whole Strength here (upon Return of the former sent into the* North*) consisting of twenty-one Companies of*

of Foot, and seven Troops of Horse, and one Company of Dragooners, we did send, of them, two Companies of Foot to secure Selby, *and one Company to secure* Cawood *Castle; and quartered the rest, part of them at* Wetherby, *under Command of Capt.* Hotham, *whom I have nominated to be Lieutenant-General of the Army, and the rest at* Tadcaster, *under my own Command.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Upon Tuesday *receiving Intelligence that the Earl of* Newcastle, *with his whole Forces, intended to fall upon our Quarter at* Tadcaster, *I sent to Capt.* Hotham, *to bring up the Forces at* Wetherby; *which being done, and the Earl of* Newcastle's *Army come in Sight, we drew our Men into the uttermost Part of our Quarter, where we had raised some Breast-Works for our Musqueteers: There the Fight began about Eleven of the Clock, and so continued, in sharp Dispute, untill about Four of the Clock in the Evening; in which Time there was at least* 40,000 *Musquet-Shot discharged on both Sides, and great Numbers of Canon-Shot.*

The Enemy had once won Part of the Town and beaten our Men, and placed some of their Companies in two or three Houses, which did much endanger us; but in the End our Men, with great Courage, forced them out again, recovered and burnt the Houses, and killed many of the Enemy's Men that were there placed; and, in Conclusion, forced the whole Army to retreat, leaving very many of their Men dead, and very great Numbers wounded: The certain Numbers, nor Qualities of the Persons we could not take, but it is generally said by the Country People that there were at least one hundred found killed and burnt, and we took seventeen Prisoners in the Fight: On our Part we lost six Men, and Capt. William Lister, *a valiant and gallant Gentleman, who was shot with a Musquet Bullet in the Head; we had about twenty more wounded, but lost not one Prisoner in the Battle; tho' divers of our Men, being negligent of their Duty, stayed behind us when we quitted the Quarter; and so were taken there by the Enemy, the next Day, and made Prisoners. In this Fight our Men behaved themselves*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

selves with very great Resolution, far beyond Expectation, in so much, as I conceive, we might have maintained the Place still, if we had been furnished with Powder and Shot; but having spent in a Manner all our whole Store of Bullet, Match, and Powder, I advised with the Commanders, and, by general Consent, it was thought fit to rise with our Forces, and to march to Cawood *and* Selby, *to secure those Places; and there to receive Supplies of Ammunition and Men: This was accordingly done, and now I am at* Selby *with Part of the Army, and the rest with Capt.* Hotham, *at* Cawood.

Yesterday I sent my Son, Sir Thomas Fairfax, *with five Companies of Foot, and two Troops of Horse to* Leeds; *intending he should continue there to secure that Place, and the other Clothing Towns, against the Earl of* Newcastle's *Forces, if it were possible; but the Enemy's Forces were laid so strong in the Way, as he could not pass, so he only beat up a Quarter of the Enemies in a small Village, took five Prisoners, and retreated to* Selby.

This Letter was ordered, by both Houses, to be printed: And it is highly probable that no more of it was then thought proper to be laid before the Public, because in *Rushworth*'s *Collections* all the following Paragraphs are left out, but are here supplied from the *Lords Journals*.

Thus, my Lord, I have briefly represented the Condition of the Army at present; which, I must confess, I fear will very suddenly grow worse, if not utterly broken up; and that especially for want of Money, I having not above a Week's Pay provided before-hand, and no visible Means left to raise Maintenance for them, unless I should give the Soldiers free Quarters upon the Country: A Cure, in my Conceit, as dangerous as the Disease, and peradventure not possible to be effected if the Enemy be still Masters of the Field, and cut off our Men as they go abroad to levy Sustenance; which they may do, and yet not able to beat up our Quarters.

I

I have hitherto supported this Army by the Loans and Contributions, for the most Part, of the Parishes of Leeds, Halifax, *and* Bradford, *and some of the small Cloathing Towns adjacent; being the only well-affected People in the Country; who, I much fear, may suffer by this Popish Army of the North, meerly for their good Affection to Religion and the Public Liberty. Of the rest of the Country I was not able to draw any considerable Help, the Enemy having Garrisons in so many Places, who threaten to ruin any that should assist the Parliament and their Cause with Money, or other Helps.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

My Lord, in Sum, the State of the Country is thus: The Enemy is mighty, and Master of the Field, plentifully supplied from his Majesty, and the Popish and Malignant Party, with Monies and all other Necessaries. The well-affected Party, as now it is divided, not considerable; the Aid from Lincolnshire, Derbyshire, *and other Counties, very uncertain; the Want of Money here such as will force us to disband within ten Days. If the Enemy become once absolute Masters of* Yorkshire, *they will force Contributions and Succours from the Country, which will raise a very formidable Army, and put the whole Cause in Peril, if God do not miraculously defend it.*

I beseech their Lordships seriously to consider of it, and send such speedy Supplies of Men and Money, as may enable me to go forward in the Service; which I shall not fail to do with a constant Fidelity.

Their Lordships have, heretofore, assigned 2000 *l. for our Succour; but the most Part of it is still at* London, *where it lies for want of Exchange or Convoy: And therefore what shall now be sent must come either by sufficient Convoy of Forces by Land, or else by Sea to* Hull, *and so hither to me. The* Scots *Officers came hither Yesterday; but now we are so straitned that we have no Men to resort to us to put under their Command, nor have we any Money to pay them.*

The further Relation of these Affairs I leave to Capt. Hatcher, *who follows these Letters purposely to give true Relation to the House of these Affairs; he hath been an Eye-Witness to most of the Passages in*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

this Country, from the first of raising of Arms; to his farther Expression I shall leave it, with this Addition only, That if the Country or Cause suffer, their Lordships will discern, by this Relation, in whom the Fault hath been, and impute it accordingly; for nothing hath been omitted, possible to be effected, by

Your Lordship's most faithful

Dated *December* 10, 1642, from *Selby*.

and humble Servant,

FERD. FAIRFAX.

Some Votes were also sent up, this Day, from the Commons, and agreed to by the Lords; amongst which was one for securing all Popish Lords, and others of Quality, within the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, and *Southwark*; and for effectually and speedily sequestring their Estates, Offices, &c. towards the Advancement of Money for the Army.

Another, That the Earl of *Warwick*, and other Commissioners of the Admiralty, should take Care to send some Ships to ride upon the Northern Coasts, to prevent the Arrival of any Forces or Ammunition from *Holland* or elsewhere; the Parliament having then received fresh Intelligence of such being ready to embark from those Parts.

It was ordered, also, That if any Colonel, Captain, or other Officers of *Scotland*, should bring into *England* any Forces of Horse or Foot, by Contract of their Agents there, to oppose the Army of Papists and their Adherents now raised, they should be entertained.

December 17. There had been some Time canvassing, in both Houses, certain Articles, as Propositions for a Peace, to be presented to the King; and, this Day, the remaining Part of them was debated in the House of Lords; but the farther Consideration thereof deferred to the 19th.

Some Prisoners having been taken at *Brentford*, *Marlborough*, and elsewhere, the King now resolved to proceed against them in a legal Way, for High

High Treason. The famous Col. *John Lilburn* was one of the first brought to the Bar, at *Oxford*, before Judge *Heath*; and was indicted for actual levying War against the King, by the Name of *John Lilburn*, Yeoman. He demurred to this Indictment, on account of his being a Gentleman, of an antient Family in the Bishoprick of *Durham*; the Record being therefore amended, he pleaded, That what he did was in his own Defence, and by Command of Parliament; and that he never had, nor ever would bear Arms against the King, *&c.* He and others were found guilty; but, to prevent the Execution of them, the Parliament threatened the *Lex Talionis*, and published a Declaration in this Form:

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Col. *Lilburn*, *&c.* having been convicted, at *Oxford*, for High Treason,

'WHereas Information hath been given to the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That *Clifton Cateſby*, *John Lilburn*, and *Robert Vivers*, Captains in the Army, raised by Authority of both Houses of Parliament, for the necessary Defence of the true Protestant Religion, the King, Parliament, and Kingdom, under the Command of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*. Captain-General thereof, were taken Prisoners by the Forces raised against the Parliament, in executing their several Duties and Services, according to the Ordinances of both the said Houses, and after carried Prisoners to *Oxford* Goal; and, having been most barbarously used, are now questioned and proceeded against by way of Indictment, before Sir *Robert Heath*, Knight, one of his Majesty's Justices of the King's Bench, and others, by Colour of some Commission or other Authority from his Majesty, for High Treason and other supposed Misdemeanors; whereas many have been taken Prisoners by the Parliament's Forces, in the Act of War against the Parliament; which, by the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, is Rebellion and High Treason against the King and Kingdom, and the Actors therein Traitors; and yet none of them

To prevent their Execution the Parliament declare they will make Reprizals.

An. 18 Car. 1. 1642. December.

'hath hitherto been put to Death, or otherwiſe 'ſeverely dealt with by the Parliament:

'It is therefore ordered and declared by the ſaid 'Lords and Commons, That all ſuch Indictments 'and other Proceedings againſt the ſaid Capt. *Cateſ-* 'by, Capt. *Lilburn*, and Capt. *Vivers*, or againſt 'Capt. *Wingate*, who have done faithful and good 'Service to the Commonwealth; or againſt any 'other Perſon, or Perſons, who have done, or ſhall 'do, Service in the ſaid Army; or for the Raiſing 'of any Money, Plate, Horſe, or Arms, for the 'Maintenance thereof; or otherwiſe in Execution 'of, or Purſuance of, an Order or Ordinance of both 'or either of the ſaid Houſes of Parliament, for the 'Defence of the Public Safety, are unjuſt and ille- 'gal; and the ſaid Sir *Robert Heath*, and all other 'Commiſſioners, Juſtices, Sheriffs, Jurors, and 'other Officers and Miniſters of Juſtice, and other 'Perſons whatſoever, are hereby required and in- 'joined to ſurceaſe any further Proceeding againſt 'the ſaid Perſons before-named, or any other, for 'any the Cauſes aforeſaid, upon the ſaid Indict- 'ments or otherwiſe.

'And the ſaid Lords and Commons do further 'declare, That if the ſaid Perſons before-named, or 'any of them, or any other, ſhall be put to Death, 'or other Hurt or Violence offered to their or any 'of their Perſons, for, or by reaſon of, any ſuch 'Service done, or to be done, by, or according to 'any Order or Ordinance of both or either the ſaid 'Houſes, the like Puniſhment ſhall be inflicted by 'Death, or otherwiſe, upon ſuch Priſoners as have 'been, or ſhall be, taken by the Forces raiſed by 'Authority of both Houſes of Parliament; and if 'the ſaid Sir *Robert Heath*, or any other Com- 'miſſioner, Juſtice, Sheriff, Juror, or other Of- 'ficer, or Miniſter of Juſtice, or other Perſon, ſhall do 'contrary to this Ordinance in any the Premiſſes, 'they and every of them for ſo doing ſhall be 'proceeded againſt, and dealt with, as Enemies to 'the King and Kingdom.'

December

December 19. The Lords went again on the Propositions for Peace, and a great Debate ensued thereupon. The third Article, concerning Delinquents, was read, and put to the Question, Whether the House shall make this Proposition to the King, That All which are impeached by the House of Commons, at this Time, shall be left to take their Trial by Parliament? It passed in the Negative. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

On the same Day the City of *London*, by an Order of Common Council, presented a Petition to the House of Lords and Commons, in which was inclosed another to his Majesty; which, after their Approbation, they desired might be conveyed to him. At the same Time was presented another Petition from many Citizens and Inhabitants of that City. Both these were for Peace and a speedy Agreement: Upon the former the House of Commons passed two Votes, to which the Lords consented, declaring their great Approbation thereof, and that it was fit this Petition to the King should be presented to him. The other met with a quite different Reception. From the Fate of these two Petitions the Reader will be enabled to form a Judgment of the Temper and Disposition of the Parliament. Neither of them are mentioned in the Collections of the Times; but we meet with a Copy of the latter in the *Lords Journals*.

To the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers Citizens, Inhabitants of the City of *London* and Liberties thereof, with the Inhabitants of the Borough of *Southwark* and Places adjacent,

Sheweth,

A Petition from several Citizens of *London* to the Parliament for Peace;

THAT the present Sense of our Miseries, and the Apprehension of the inevitable Ruin both of the Church and Commonwealth, make us become Suitors to this Honourable Assembly, the likeliest Means, under God, for our Relief; to consider our distressed Estate, and provide a speedy Remedy for our present and fu-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

ture Evils; earneſtly to deſire you to weigh the Care and Judgment of your Predeceſſors; who, by a known Law, ſettled and preſerved our Proteſtant Religion, our Liberties and Properties, with a right Underſtanding between King and Subject, which produced Peace and Plenty in our Eſtates; and to reflect, with ſerious Thoughts, upon our preſent Diſtempers, violating Religion by Papiſts and Sectaries, engaging our Nation in a civil and deſtructive War, invading our Laws and Liberties, endangering all our Lives, and utterly diſabling us to relieve our diſtreſſed Brethren in Ireland.

We beſeech you likewiſe to conſider the Effects of a Civil War, as the Deſtruction of Chriſtians, and the unnatural Effuſion of Blood; Fathers againſt Sons; Brothers by Brothers, Friends by Friends, ſlain; then Famine and Sickneſs, the Followers of a continued War, making Way for a general Confuſion and Invaſion by a foreign Nation; whilſt our Treaſure is exhauſted, our Trade loſt, and the Kingdom diſpeopled: Theſe Things, weighed and enlarged by your Wiſdoms, we doubt not will be as ſtrong a Motive in you to labour, as in us to deſire, a ſpeedy Peace and happy Accommodation.

Wherefore we humbly crave that, not lending Ear to any the Fomenters of the preſent War, under what Pretence ſoever; or remembering ought that may increaſe Jealouſies or continue Diviſions between his Majeſty and the Houſes of Parliament; you will tender his Majeſty, according to his Royal Intimations, ſuch Propoſitions for Accommodation as he may, with Honour and Safety to the whole Kingdom, accept; for the effecting whereof we ſhall be ready to aſſiſt you with the beſt and utmoſt of our Abilities; and, whilſt you endeavour for Peace, we ſhall ſend up our Prayers to Heaven for the Bleſſing of Peace upon you and all that deſire it.

The Petitioners withdrew, and the Houſe took into Conſideration what Anſwer to give to their Petition; and, after Debate, the Gentleman-Uſher was

was commanded to let those that brought this Petition know, That their Lordships have received a Complaint against this Petition from the House of Commons, and will take the same into Consideration: And a Committee was appointed to consider of, and to take Examinations about, the managing and procuring of this Petition. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December. Which is ill received by them,

The Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council of the City, upon presenting their own Petition to the Commons, protested against this latter, saying, They had damned it by a public Act; and did desire that when hereafter any Petition came to Parliament, in the Name of the City of *London*, and was not attested by the Hand of the Town-Clerk, it might be rejected, and not esteemed as a Petition from their City. And protested against by the Lord Mayor, &c.

Dec. 20. Although a Vote had passed the Day before concerning Delinquents, That they were not All to be included in their designed Propositions to the King for Peace, the House of Commons had got that Order, in some Measure, over-ruled: For tho' a Committee of Lords had been appointed to consider of the naming of such Delinquents as were to be excepted out of their Act of Grace, who this Day brought in their Opinion, That those only who had been impeached before the first of *January* last, should be proceeded against in Parliament; yet the Lord *Digby*, particularly, though he had been impeached since that Time, was left to the Judgment of Parliament. The Lords resolve to except some Delinquents from Trial by Parliament.

Then the Committee proceeded to name such Persons as were fit to be removed from the King; as, the Marquis of *Hertford* to lose his Office about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, (eldest Son of the Earl of *Worcester*) Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jermyn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, to be removed from Court. And, as the *Journal* says, after a long Debate, the following Question was put: 'Those that are of Opinion to agree with the Committee, That, at this Time, such as the Committee have named to be impeached by the House of

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

of Commons, ſhould be left to the Trial of Parliament, omitting the reſt of thoſe which are impeached, ſay Content; and it paſſed affirmatively.' On which the following Lords entered their Diſſent; and, after repeating the two laſt Queſtions of Yeſterday and To-day, carried againſt them, they proceeded to ſay,

A Proteſt enter'd thereupon.

'WE, whoſe Names are ſubſcribed, do conceive that the Demanding, by this Houſe, of ſome to be left to Juſtice, and leaving out of others, who are under the like Impeachment of High Treaſon, and have been, by Force of Arms, protected from being brought to a Trial in the higheſt Court of Judicature, is an Example of very ill Conſequence: Becauſe we conceive that it is not proper for this Houſe to move the Houſe of Commons, in the Stopping of their Proceedings upon Impeachments; and that it doth not only give Encouragement to a King to attempt the like Stoppage of Juſtice by Force, and, from this Precedent, to ſtand upon the Protecting of Perſons impeached; but to Subjects alſo, who may be induced to undertake any Thing in Hopes of Impunity, even from the Deſires of this Houſe; which hath not demanded any one of thoſe to be left to Trial, who, ſince his Majeſty's Going to *York*, have been impeached of High Treaſon, for actual levying War againſt the King and Kingdom.

'Upon theſe, amongſt other Reaſons, we have demanded our Right of Proteſtation; and do now accordingly enter it, to clear ourſelves from any Inconveniences that may follow from theſe Votes; which are, in our Opinion, very prejudicial to the Privileges of Parliament and the Liberty of the Subject.'

WARWICK.
PETERBOROUGH.
MANCHESTER.
SAY *and* SELE.
WHARTON.
BOLINGBROKE.
WILLOUGHBY *of* Parham.
BROOKE.
GREY *de* Werk.

Next

Next was read the Whole of the Propoſitions for Peace, which were agreed on by the Lords, and ordered to be ſent down to the Commons; but, as they laid a long Time in that Houſe, being not preſented to the King till above a Month after this, and were alſo much altered from this Copy, it cannot be amiſs to give it here, and poſtpone the other to its proper Place. By this Means may be evidently ſeen, That the Lords were much more inclined to an Agreement than the Commons, by the Softneſs of theſe Propoſitions, and the Harſhneſs of the other. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

The ſaid Propoſitions were as follow:

The Propoſitions to the King for Peace, as drawn up by the Houſe of Lords.

'YOUR Majeſty's moſt humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, having always in their Thoughts the Glory of God, your Majeſty's Honour, and the Proſperity of your People; and being moſt deſirous to put an End to theſe Miſeries which now infect, and further threaten, a Deſolation of this Kingdom if not timely prevented; and that they may provide for the Safety of your Majeſty's Royal Perſon, and for the Defence of your loyal Subjects, againſt all ſuch as would, in their Mind, deſtroy the Worſhip of God in his true Religion, the Laws of this Land, and the Rights and Privileges of Parliament; and alſo to ſettle ſuch Way for the future, as the like or other Diſtractions and Diſtempers may not again break forth, do moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to accept of and grant theſe their moſt humble Deſires and Propoſitions, as the moſt neceſſary and effectual Means thereunto, through God's Bleſſing; and that thereby your Majeſty may live in as great Honour as any of your Royal Anceſtors have done, and be as formidable to your Enemies as any of your Predeceſſors have been; and that your Subjects, with Peace and Plenty, may, with Gladneſs of Heart, perform their Duties to God and your Ma-

'jeſty,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

'jesty, and enjoy their just Liberties under your 'most gracious Protection.

'That your Majesty will be pleased to give the 'Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away super-'stitious Innovations,

'To the Bill against scandalous Ministers,

'To the Bill against Pluralities,

'To the Bill for a Consultation to be had with 'godly, religious, and learned Divines: And

I. 'That your Majesty would be pleased to pro-'mise to pass such other good Bills, for settling of 'the Church Government, as, upon Consultation 'with the Assembly of the said Divines, shall be 'resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and, 'by them, to be presented unto your Majesty: 'And that your Majesty will confirm the Decla-'ration, passed in both Houses, for the taking away 'of Bishops, Deans and Chapters; and that such 'unnecessary Ceremonies, as are offensive to tender 'Consciences, may not be pressed upon your Maje-'sty's good Subjects, as hath already been graciously 'promised by your Majesty.

II. 'That the Rights, Liberties, and Privileges 'of Parliament may be no ways infringed, but 'maintained.

III. 'That such as have been impeached by the 'House of Commons, before the first Day of *Ja-'nuary*, 1641, and likewise the Lord *Digby*, shall 'be left to their due Trial in Parliament; that the 'Marquis of *Hertford* may be removed from his 'Charge about the Prince; the Earl of *Bristol*, the 'Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, Mr. *Piercy*, Mr. *Jer-'myn*, and Mr. *Wilmot*, may be removed from the 'Verge of the Court.

IV. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to pass 'an Act in such Manner, as may vindicate and se-'cure the Privilege of Parliament from the ill Con-'sequences of the late Precedent, in the Charge and 'Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbolton*, now Earl 'of *Manchester*, and the five Members of the House 'of Commons.

V. 'That

V. 'That your Majesty, upon the humble Petition of both Houses of Parliament, will be pleased to grant your Letters Patent to to be Chief Justice of your Court of King's Bench; to the Lord Chief Justice *Banks*, to be continued to be Chief Justice of your Court of Common Pleas; to Mr. Justice *Foster*, to be Chief Baron of your Court of Exchequer; and that Mr. Justice *Reeve* may be continued one of the Judges in the Court of Common Pleas; to Mr. Justice *Bacon*, to be continued one of the Judges in your Court of King's Bench; to Mr. Serjeant *Wylde*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of King's Bench; to Mr. Serjeant *Roll*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of King's Bench; to Mr. Serjeant *Pheasant*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of Common Pleas; to Mr. Serjeant *Atkins*, to be one of the Judges of your Court of Common Pleas; to Mr. Serjeant *Crejwell*, to be one of the Barons of the Court of Exchequer; to Mr. *Samuel Brown* and Mr. *John Puleston*, to be two of the Barons of your Court of Exchequer; and that all of them may hold their Places *quamdiu se bene gesserint*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

VI. 'That such Justices of the Peace, that have been lately out of the Commission of the Peace in the several Counties of *England* and *Wales*, may be restored; and that the Lord-Keeper may be commanded to revoke the Commission and omit such as are unfit for that Government.

VII. 'That your Majesty's Royal Assent may be given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by both Houses of Parliament, for the satisfying and paying of the Debts wherein the Kingdom now stands engaged.

VIII. 'That all Acts of the Council Table, that do concern Government, may be attested under the Hands of those who give the Advice.

IX. 'That an Act of Oblivion may pass for all Crimes and Offences committed, or pretended to be committed, excepting the Persons desired to be brought to their Trial in Parliament.

X. 'That

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

X. 'That your Majesty's general Pardon may 'be granted to all, excepting such as before-named.

XI. 'It is humbly desired that your Majesty will 'declare your Pleasure, whether you will not have 'a Cessation from all Manner of Acts of Hostility 'for fourteen Days; the Cessation to commence 'from such a Time as shall be agreed on by your 'Majesty and the two Houses of Parliament.

XII. 'That the Laws against Popish Recusants 'may be put in due Execution.'

Dec. 22. Petitions came up from different Parts of the Kingdom to the Lords, all crying loudly for Peace. To which the Lords returned this Answer: 'That they approved of their Desires for Peace and Agreement between the King and Parliament, which was always desired and endeavoured by that House; and that they were then about it, and hoped for good Success.'

The same Day a Letter from the Earl of *Stamford* was read, giving an Account of the Surrender of *Bristol* to the Parliament; and that he was raising a very considerable Number of Forces in those Parts.

Nothing else material occurs in the *Journals*, till the last Day of this Month; when a new Subscription, for the further Maintenance of the Army, seems to be warmly promoted in the House of Lords: And the Peers under-written subscribed their Names and Sums, as follow:

A Subscription in the House of Lords, for Maintenance of the Parliament's Army.

	£.		£.
Earl of *Warwick*	500	Ld. Visc. *Say* and *Sele*	100
Earl of *Manchester*	300	Lord *Brooke* ——	200
Earl of *Bolingbroke*	200	Lord *Fielding* ——	500

It was ordered, also, That the Speaker of that House should move, on the first of *January* next, to know the Answer of those Lords who have not subscribed to the Maintenance of the Army, as well as the Assistants also attending that House.

That

That the Parliament was driven to great Straits for want of Money at this Time, is alſo evident from a Meſſage ſent to the Houſe of Commons, this Day, importing, That there was a great Neceſſity for Money, and that the City of *London* was willing to make a further Subſcription, if the Members of Parliament would ſet a good Example in that Particular. That divers Lords had already ſubſcribed to this Purpoſe, and the Speaker was ordered to know the Anſwers of thoſe who had not; and others were appointed to take the Subſcriptions of the Aſſiſtants this Afternoon; therefore the Commons were deſired to take the ſame Courſe with their Members, that it might be recommended with all Expedition to the City of *London* to do the like.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. December.

Thus ended the Calendar Year of 1642; and a very buſy Year it was, both in reſpect of the various Multiplicity of Parliamentary Affairs, or rather Military Affairs tranſacted in Parliament, and the diſmal Apprehenſions each Party in the Kingdom muſt be in, of being plundered, burnt out, ruined, or ſlain by the other: So that the ſafeſt *Aſylum* for any ſingle Perſon was, then, a Station in the King's or the Parliament's Army.

All the Priſons, in and about *London*, were full of Malignants and Delinquents, as they were then called by the Parliament; inſomuch that, beſides the common Priſons, *Windſor* Caſtle, *London* Houſe, the Lord *Petre*'s Houſe in the City, the Deanery of St. *Paul*'s, *Ely* Houſe, and *Lambeth* Houſe, as *Wincheſter* Houſe in *Southwark* had been before, were made uſe of for that Purpoſe.

The King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford*, his Army being quartered conveniently in the neighbouring Towns, this Seaſon not being proper for Action. Hither great Numbers of both Houſes of Parliament had reſorted to him; inſomuch that, in a ſhort Time, they conſtituted a Kind of ſeparate Houſe of Lords and Commons of themſelves; as will be ſhewn hereafter.—But to proceed with the *Journals*.

January

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

January 2. The Earl of *Northumberland*, from a Committee appointed to consider of a Bill to settle the Militia, reported what they had done in that Business. Great Difficulties appearing hereupon, the Lords thought fit to respite the offering any Bill for that Purpose till the King should return to Parliament; but, in the mean Time, to make ready a Bill which should declare, That the King should not dispose of the Power of the Militia without the Parliament, nor the Parliament without the King; that, to prevent all Jealousies, both Sides might have an equal Power.

A new Bill proposed relating to the Militia.

Jan. 3. The *Scots* Commissioners presented two Memorials to Parliament, complaining, That their Army in *Ireland*, on *English* Pay, were almost starved for want of it; and that 40,000 *l.* the remaining Part of the Brotherly Assistance Money, tho' long due, was yet unpaid. The Parliament excused both these Neglects; laid the Blame on the Civil War and the present Distractions of the Times; but promised as speedy a Payment as possible, according to that Justice and Honour which they owed to all Men, but in a more especial and affectionate Manner to their Brethren of *Scotland*.

Jan. 4. The Commons sent up a Message to the Lords, and with it a Letter they had just received from their General, the Lord *Fairfax*, in the North; which we here give in its own Words. It was addressed to one of their Members:

A Letter from Lord *Fairfax* concerning the Proceedings of the two Armies in *Yorkshire*.

I Have of late addressed some Relations of my Proceedings here, to the Committee appointed for the Safety of the Kingdom; being assured that they would, from Time to Time, impart them to both Houses of Parliament; that such Consideration might be had of them as the Necessity of the Cause requires. Now I address this Relation to you, not doubting but it shall be imparted to both Houses of Parliament, and to the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom; that the Affairs of this Country being known to them all, they

may

may be provided for as their Wiſdoms ſhall ſee conve- An. 18. Car. I. 1642.
nient.

I have, formerly, adverti ſed that the Earl of Newcaſtle's *Army have ſeiz'd upon* Leeds, *where they plundered the well-affected Party, and raiſed a very great Sum of Money out of thoſe that they could draw to compound for their Securities. From* Leeds *they marched, on* Sunday *the* 18*th of this Month, with five Troops of Horſe, ſix Companies of Dragoons,* 200 *Foot, and two Drakes of the Earl of* Newcaſtle's *Army; beſides Sir* William Savile, *and divers other Gentlemen of* Yorkſhire *and their Forces, that join'd themſelves with them. They came to* Bradford *about Ten o'Clock in the Morning, intending to ſurprize the Town in Time of Prayer; but the Town having Scouts abroad, had Notice of their Coming, and gave the Alarm to the Country, who came in to their Succour from the Parts adjoining; yet they had not in all above* 80 *Muſkets, the reſt being arm'd with Clubs, and ſuch ruſtick Weapons, with which ſmall Force they put the Cauſe to Trial with the great Strength of the Enemy; who planted their Drakes, and diſcharged each of them ſeventeen Times upon the Town, untill a Town's Man, with a Fowling piece, kill'd one of the Cannoneers; and then they all, with great Courage, iſſued from the Town upon the Enemy, killed many of them, took about* 30 *Priſoners, and forced the reſt to retreat, leaving* 40 *of their Muſkets and a Barrel of their Powder, with much other Proviſions, behind them; and this with the Loſs of but three* Bradford *Men.* January.

The Report of the Country is, That the Enemy, amongſt thoſe that were killed, loſt Col. Evers, *Captain* Bynns, *and another Commander; that Col.* Goring, *General of the Horſe, with the Earl of* Newcaſtle, *was wounded; that Serjeant-Major* Carr *is taken Priſoner; and it is generally reported that* 150 *more ran away upon the Retreat, and are not ſince returned to* Leeds.

In this Victory the Hand and Power of God was moſt evident, the Town being open on all Sides, and of itſelf not being defenſible; aſſaulted on every Side by a mali-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

malicious and bloody Enemy, and defended by a few half-naked Men; there being in the Town not above 80 Muskets before they got 40 more by the Spoils of the Enemy: So that the Slaughter was, for the most Part, with Clubs, and Scythes mounted on Poles, when they clos'd and came to Hand-Blows. With this Defeat the Enemies are so enraged, that they threaten utter Ruin to Bradford; *whereupon the Town's Men sent to me for Succour of Men and Arms, and I have sent my Son, with Sir* Henry Foulis, *to them with three Troops of Horse and 120 Dragooners. These are safely arrived there, and received with great Joy and Acclamation of the Country, who flock to him, and offer themselves most willingly to serve against the Popish Enemies, if Arms could be furnished to them. He hath already surprized some Victuals sent in, upon Warrants, to the Enemy at* Leeds, *by the over-awed Country; and he hath sent Capt.* Mildmay *with his Troop of Horse and some Dragooners into* Craven, *to stop the raising of Money and Forces in that Country; which is attempted by the Earl of* Cumberland, *who is lately retired from* York *to* Skipton; *and I hope he will leave nothing unattempted that may conduce to the Safety of the Country, so far as can be expected from the few Forces he hath with him.*

The Earl of Newcastle *proceeds in raising Money, by all the illegal and oppressive Ways that can be devised; and, both by the Commission of Array, and by Presses made in the Churches, raiseth all the Men he can. This being attempted in* Cleveland *by certain of the disaffected Gentry, their Expectation was prevented; the Resort and Appearance of the People stopped, and the Commissioners themselves forced to fly; by Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *to whom I sent special Order for that End. I hear he hath also been at* Malton, *and there surprized both the Receiver and the Monies raised out of the Country thereabouts, by those Warrants. I cannot hear, certainly, what Monies or Men the Earl of* Newcastle *hath raised since he came into this Country; but he grants Commissions to sundry convict Recusants to raise Troops of Horse, as, Sir* John Middleton, *Sir* Walter Vavasor, *Mr.* Tindale,

dale, *and others*; *who, I hear, are now raising their Men: And I hear daily Complaints of horrible Plunders and Spoils done by that Army, and those by special Order, and in such Manner, as, if they be not speedily refrained, and this Popish Army expelled the Country, they will not only utterly ruin all Trade and Commerce; but discourage and disable all Husbandry; and so bring Poverty and Famine upon the Land.* An 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Since my last Estimate of our Forces, there is little Alteration of them; only 120 *Dragooners of Sir* Anthony Irby's *Regiment are come hither, which I sent to* Bradford *with my Son. Col.* Boynton, *with his Regiment, being* 500 *Foot and* 40 *Horse, are come hither; but Captain* Crompton's *Dragooners, as he complains to me, are all run away; so I have given him a new Commission to raise a Company. For any other Supplies, I cannot expect them untill the Aids come from the South; for Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *as I hear, cannot bring* 130 *Men; and those are so much desired to be retained in the North-Riding, to interrupt the raising of Men in that Country in Aid of the Earl of* Newcastle, *as I do not press his March this Way; and for the* Lincolnshire *Aids, expected to be sent us, I cannot hope for any from them; having this Day received a Letter by Captain* Hatcher, *wherein the Earl of* Lincoln, *and the Committee at* Lincoln, *write they are not able to defend themselves against* 500 *Foot, three Troops of Dragooners, and two Troops of Horse, with seven Pieces of Ordnance, sent to* Newark *by the Earl of* Newcastle; *and therefore desire Help from me.*

I have formerly represented to the Committee the extreme Want of Money here, and how impossible it is to raise any, the Enemy being Master of the Field. I have sent to Sir John Hotham, *Sir* Edward Rhodes, *Sir* Hugh Cholmley, *and Capt.* Hotham; *but they all alledge great Necessities of their own, and help me with none; so that I am put upon such Straits, as seldom happen, to retain an Army together, and withall serve against a more potent Enemy; having neither Money to pay them, nor free Quarters to give them. If a speedy Supply of Money do not come, I much fear*

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

the Soldiers will steal away and desert the Service. I have just now received your Letters, signifying that the House hath designed us 10,000 *l. to be presently sent, and will take further Care for all Necessaries to be supplied: for this, I beseech you, return my humble Thanks, and assure them that they shall want no Care nor Fidelity in me to advance the Service, so highly concerning the Laws and Religion of the Land.*

I am now about to procure Billets, for fourteen Days, on the Inhabitants of the Towns where I quarter, and to engage for the Payment as soon as the Money comes to me. All this I beseech you to represent to the Honourable Assembly, whose Care I doubt not but will supply all our Wants now represented; especially hastening down the Forces of the Southern Parts with the Monies intended for our Supplies.

It is advised by the Commanders here, not to fall upon any of the Enemy's Quarters at this Time, untill we are stronger, or have certain Intelligence of their Weakness; in the mean Time we lie still waiting for Opportunities, which shall not be neglected, if once offered unto

Your affectionate Friend

Selby, Dec. 29, 1642.

and Servant,

FERD. FAIRFAX.

P. S. *The Enemy hath not made any Attempt upon our Quarters since our Remove from* Tadcaster, *untill this Morning; when five Troops of Horse and three Companies of Dragooners from* Sherburne, *fell upon our Quarter at* Bryton, *where two Companies of our Foot and one Company of Horse quarter'd. They came in so fast with our Scouts, that they were in the Town before many of our Men could be drawn out; and yet the most Part of our Soldiers carried themselves with such Resolution, as they forced the Enemy to retreat in great Confusion, and took three of them Prisoners; and this with the Loss but of one Man on our Part.*

After

After the reading of this Letter, an Order was made to send the Lord *Fairfax* a Supply, and to trust to his known Justice and faithful Service for the due Management of it. An. 18 Car. I. 1642. January.

There was nothing material done in the House of Lords for some Days after this, except an Order made for quashing an Agreement which had been entered into by both Parties in *Cheshire*, in order to keep Peace in that County; it being urged, as in the like Case before in *Yorkshire*, which we have particularly taken Notice of in our last Volume, That it was dangerous to the whole Kingdom for one County to stand neuter, and withdraw itself from the Assistance of the rest. An Agreement of Neutrality in *Cheshire*, quashed by Parliament.

A Declaration was also made and agreed to, for raising more Money by a fresh Subscription, and that the Speakers of both Houses were to take the Answers of the Members, *&c.* of each, to learn what they will subscribe for the Maintenance of the Army. The Lord Mayor of *London* was likewise ordered to call a Common Hall, and some Members of both Houses were appointed to go thither, to exhort the Citizens to do the like. Means for raising more Money for Maintenance of the Army.

Jan. 10. A Case happened in the House of Commons, which, though trivial in itself, may not be improper to take Notice of. In one of the Debates relating to the Propositions for Peace, the House divided on the Question; when the Tellers came to make their Report of the Numbers, they could not agree upon it, three being of one Opinion, and the fourth of another. The House then divided again, and all that were not present at the first Telling were required to withdraw. The Tellers reported the Numbers to be thirty-three on each Side: But one Member present at the first Division and Telling, yet came not in upon the second Telling, till the Numbers were given in and reported by Mr. Speaker, was desired to be counted; a Debate arose whether he should or not, coming not in till the Report was made: The House divided again on this Question; but before it was told, the Noes yield- Remarkable Divisions on the Propositions for Peace.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

ed, and that Member being added to the Yeas, made their Number thirty-four.

Many Copies of Inſtructions are entered at this Time for the Parliament's Lord-Lieutenants, and other Agents in the ſeveral Counties; and alſo a ſecond Declaration concerning the King's Commiſſion of Array: [b] All of them too tedious for our Purpoſe: But

A Relation of the Manner of preſenting a Petition from the City of London to the King at Oxford.

On the 12th of this Month a Relation was read in the Houſe of Lords, ſent up by the Commons, concerning the Carrying and Delivery of a Petition from the City of *London*, to the King at *Oxford*. This Relation was made by the City's Commiſſioners appointed for that Purpoſe; and, ſince the Conſequences of it are ſomewhat curious, deſerves a Place in theſe Enquiries. The Petition is not entered in the *Journals*, being a Work of Common Council only; but we have met with a printed Copy of it. and the King's Anſwer to it, with ſome Speeches made by a Committee of both Houſes, ſent to attend the reading of them in the *Guildhall*, which we ſhall give: And firſt the Relation itſelf, as it ſtands in the *Journals*:

'AT this Common Council Sir *George Garret*, Sir *George Clark*, Knights and Aldermen, Mr. *Peter Jones*, Mr. *George Henley*, Mr. *Richard Bateman*, and Mr *Barney Reames*, Commiſſioners lately appointed by this Court to make their Addreſs unto his Majeſty, with an humble Petition, in the Name of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of this City, did make their Relation in Writing, which followeth in theſe Words:'

On Monday *the ſecond of* January *we came to* Oxford, *between One and Two o'Clock in the Afternoon; where, tho' we could get no Lodgings before Night, yet*

[b] *Husbands's Collections*, from p. 850, to 891.

yet presently we dispatched one to give the Lord Falkland *Notice of our coming. About Three o'Clock we did all of us attend his Lordship, at his Lodgings in* New College; *with whom we sent one also to the Court, to receive his Majesty's Order for Admission into his Presence; who returning unto us, and bringing us Word, that his Majesty would receive the Petition at Five o'Clock, we accordingly all of us came to the Court. After some small Time of Attendance we were admitted unto his Majesty in his Withdrawing-Chamber, and the Petition publickly read in his Majesty's Presence; unto which his Majesty presently made Answer unto this Effect,* That he was glad of the Occasion this Petition would give him, to let the City know some of his Declarations; which, although he had already caused them to be put in Print, yet he doubted might be kept from the Knowledge of his People in the City: That he doubted the Petitioners promised more than they could perform, to wit, *To defend his Majesty from Tumults*; when, as he heard, they could not maintain Peace and Quiet among themselves: That his Answer should be full, which he would expect should be published and made known to all his People in the City. *And he added this Question,* Whether they had petitioned the Parliament also, to remember them of their Duty to his Majesty? *To this it was presently answered,* That we were only Messengers of this Petition, and could give no Answer to that Question. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

On Tuesday *we had no Audience, and only attended our Answer; but, on* Wednesday *the fourth of* January, *we address'd ourselves for our Dispatch, by a Message unto the Lord* Falkland, *and received his Majesty's Order to attend at Three o'Clock that Afternoon, which we did accordingly; and, being called in, his Majesty gave us a Paper, which, he said, was his Answer to the Petition; and so delivered it into the Hands of a Gentleman called Mr.* Heron, *standing by him; who, he said, should go with us, and see it done accordingly. And having demanded which was*

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. January.

the greater Assembly, a Common Council or a Common Hall; and it being answered, That a Common Hall was the greater Assembly, his Majesty twice expressly commanded us that this his Answer should be published at a Common Hall; that there might be fair Play and above-board, and that the People of the City might be disabused, and know the Truth.

This done his Majesty dismissed us, as we thought; but presently we were recalled, and his Majesty said, He would send some Persons to be amongst us in the City, to inform the City and him of the Truth; whom he would expect they should protect, seeing they did protect Persons ill-affected to his Majesty; and that he should see by that, how they were able to protect his Majesty.

This Relation we make according to our best Remembrance.

The foregoing Narrative being read, it was declared, That the House of Commons held it very necessary, if their Lordships shall so please, that some Committees of both Houses be present at the Common Hall, to hear what shall be read from his Majesty by Mr. *Heron:* And if it should prove to be the same that is printed, which contains Matters very scandalous to the Parliament, dangerous to the City and whole Kingdom, seeming purposely designed to stir up Mutiny in the City, that then they might be read to take off the Aspersions laid upon the Proceedings of both Houses; and to shew their Confidence in the Loyalty, Wisdom, and good Affection of the City; that they will not be misled nor distempered by any such Scandals and Aspersions: And if it prove not the same, but do contain any other Aspersions, they might like wise clear the Honour and Justice of their Proceedings as they shall see Cause; and the House of Commons desires their Lordships to join with them in this also, that whatsoever the Message did appear to be, they should yet clear the two Houses of Parliament,

not-

notwithstanding all the Taxes laid upon them by that Book; having done nothing but agreeable to their Duty to the King and Kingdom; and that the Loyalty and Modesty of the City, expressed in their Petition to his Majesty, were to be commended. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

The Commons also offered to their Lordships Consideration some Observations, extracted out of the King's Answer, with their Reply thereunto.—But all these, being recited and enlarged upon in the following Speech of Mr. *Pymme*, we pass over.

The next Day the whole Affair was transacted at the *Guildhall*, and a particular Account taken of it, and printed by Order of the House of Commons, with an Introduction and Remarks upon it. Mr. *Rushworth* hath the Petition, Answer, and subsequent Speeches in his Collections[c]; and as the printed Copy, above-mentioned, is much more circumstantial, we shall give it from that Authority[d].

The INTRODUCTION.

THAT Observation, Man's Extremities are God's Opportunities, *was never more abundantly and experimentally made good than in these latter Days; and in none of these more than on* Friday *the* 13*th of* January, 1642, *in and toward the City of* London, *where his Majesty's unexpected Answer to an humble Petition, presented to his Majesty at* Oxford, *from the Lord Mayor and Common Council of that Honourable City, made many sad Hearts; not only in regard that all the unwearied and loyal Endeavours of Parliament and City, with other Parts of the Kingdom, have made no deeper Impression upon his Majesty's Heart, the greatest Treasure for which they have contended; but also in some doubtful Expectation what Advantage such Spirits might have made of it, at least to*

c In Volume V. p. 110.

d Published, with the Licence of Mr. *Elsynge*, Clerk of the House of Commons, by *Peter Cole*, the Printer of the other Speeches at the *Guildhall*, which are already given in this Volume.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

to the unsettling of the Peace, and disuniting the Spirits of the City, who steer all their Actions by that Maxim of Policy, Divide & impera, *divide and do what you will: The rather when they observe that the Counsel of some not so Well-wishers, certainly, to the Public Safety, as to their own private Interests, had prevailed with his Majesty that his Answer should be published at a Common Hall, by his Majesty's express Order for that Purpose, when as the Petition was humbly tendered to his Majesty from a Common Council. To avoid all Inconveniences, it pleased the Wisdom and Goodness of Heaven to direct the Parliament to chuse an Honourable Committee of Lords and Commons to be present at the reading thereof; and the Governors of the City to order that all the Companies should first meet at their several Halls, and then come in their City Habits to the* Guildhall, *where his Majesty's Answer was to be read: When the Committee of both Houses, with the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and such a Confluence of Liverymen as hath not been seen there in the Memory of the oldest Man in the City, being met, the Lord Mayor commanded the Town Clerk to read, in the Audience of that great Assembly, the City's Petition, which here follows:*

To the KING's *Most Excellent Majesty,*

The HUMBLE PETITION *of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of* London,

Sheweth,

The said Petition read at a Common Hall.

'THAT the Petitioners, your Majesty's most humble and loyal Subjects, being much 'pierced with the long and great Divisions between 'your Majesty and both your Houses of Parliament, 'and with the sad and bloody Effects thereof, both 'here and in *Ireland*, are yet more deeply wounded 'by the Misapprehension which your Majesty seem-'eth to entertain of the Love and Loyalty of this 'your City, as if there were some Cause of Fear 'or Suspicion of Danger to your Royal Person, if 'your Majesty should return thither; and that this 'is

'is made the unhappy Bar to that bleſſed Reconci- An. 18. Car. I.
'liation with your great and moſt faithful Council, 1642.
'for preventing that Deſolation and Deſtruction, January.
'which is now moſt apparently imminent on your
'Majeſty and all your Kingdoms:

'For Satisfaction therefore of your Majeſty, and 'clearing of the Petitioners Innocency, they moſt 'humbly declare, as formerly they have done, That 'they are in no way conſcious of any Diſloyalty, 'but abhor all Thoughts thereof: And that they 'are reſolved to make good their late ſolemn Prote- 'ſtation and ſacred Vow made to Almighty God, 'and, with the laſt Drop of their deareſt Bloods, 'to defend and maintain the true Reformed Proteſt- 'ant Religion; and, according to the Duty of their 'Allegiance, your Majeſty's Royal Perſon, Honour, 'and Eſtate; (whatever is maliciouſly and moſt 'falſly ſuggeſted to your Majeſty to the contrary) as 'well as the Power and Privileges of Parliament, 'and the lawful Rights and Liberties of the Subject; 'and do hereby engage themſelves, their Eſtates, 'and all they have, to their uttermoſt Power, to 'defend and preſerve your Majeſty and both Houſes 'of Parliament from all Tumults, Affronts, and 'Violence, with as much Loyalty, Love, and 'Duty, as ever Citizens expreſſed towards your 'Majeſty, or any of your Royal Progenitors in their 'greateſt Glory.

'The Petitioners therefore, upon their bended 'Knees, do moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to 'return to your Parliament, accompanied with your 'Royal, not your Martial, Attendance; to the 'End that Religion, Laws, and Liberties may be 'ſettled and ſecured; and whatſoever is amiſs in 'Church and Commonwealth reformed by their 'Advice, according to the Fundamental Conſtitu- 'tions of this Kingdom; and that ſuch a Peace 'may thereby be obtained, as ſhall be for the Glory 'of God, the Honour and Happineſs of your Ma- 'jeſty and Poſterity, and the Safety and Welfare of 'all your loyal Subjects; who (the Petitioners 'are fully aſſured, whatſoever is given out to

the

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'the contrary) do unanimouſly deſire the Peace here-
'in expreſſed.

And the Petitioners ſhall ever pray, &c.

MICHELL.

This being done, the King's Meſſenger[a] *being wiſhed to read his Majeſty's Anſwer to that Petition, made ſome Apology to be excuſed; partly willing to intimate that his Commiſſion was but to deliver the Anſwer to the Lord Mayor, (which ſeemed very ſtrange to Standers-by, who were ready to conclude, that if his Majeſty's Command had been of no larger Extent, the Trouble of a Common Hall might well have been ſpared) and partly pleading the Inaudibleneſs of his Voice in ſuch a vaſt Aſſembly; but being deemed the fitteſt for that Service by the Honourable Committee, the Lord Mayor and his Brethren, he then read his Majeſty's Anſwer, which here follows:*

As alſo the King's Anſwer to it.

'HIS Majeſty hath graciouſly conſidered this Petition, and returns this Anſwer: That 'his Majeſty doth not entertain any Miſapprehenſion of the Love and Loyalty of his City of *London*. As he hath always expreſſed a ſingular Regard and Eſteem of the Affections of that City, 'and is ſtill deſirous to make it his chief Place of 'Reſidence, and to continue and renew many 'Marks of his Favour towards it; ſo he believes 'much the better and greater Part of that his City 'is full of Love, Duty, and Loyalty to his Majeſty; 'and that the Tumults which heretofore forced his 'Majeſty, for his Safety, to leave that Place, tho' 'they were contrived and encouraged by ſome principal Members thereof, (who are ſince well known, 'though they are above the Reach of Juſtice) conſiſted more of deſperate Perſons of the Suburbs, 'and the neighbouring Towns, who were miſled 'by the Cunning and Malice of their Seducers, 'than of the Inhabitants of that City. He looks 'on

[a] Capt. *Heron*, Son of Sir *Edward Heron*, High Sheriff of *Lincolnſhire*, who had been voted a Delinquent, for executing the King's Commiſſion of Array in that County.

'on his good Subjects there as Perſons groaning 'under the ſame Burden which doth oppreſs his 'Majeſty, and awed by the ſame Perſons who be- 'gat theſe Tumults, and the ſame Army which 'gave Battle to his Majeſty: And therefore as no 'good Subject can more deſire, from his Soul, a 'Compoſure of the general Diſtractions; ſo no 'good Citizen can more deſire the Eſtabliſhment of 'the particular Peace and Proſperity of that Place 'by his Majeſty's Acceſs thither, than his Majeſty 'himſelf doth. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'But his Majeſty deſires his good Subjects of '*London* ſeriouſly to conſider what Confidence his 'Majeſty can have of Security there, whilſt the 'Laws of the Land are ſo notoriouſly deſpiſed and 'trampled under Foot; and the wholeſome Govern- 'ment of that City, heretofore ſo famous over all the 'World, is now ſubmitted to the arbitrary Power 'of a few deſperate Perſons of no Reputation, but 'for Malice and Diſloyalty to him: Whilſt Arms 'are taken up not only without, but againſt, his 'Conſent and expreſs Command; and Collections 'publickly made, and Contributions avowed, for the 'Maintenance of the Army which hath given him 'Battle, and therein uſed all poſſible Means Trea- 'ſon and Malice could ſuggeſt to them, to have ta- 'ken his Life from him, and to have deſtroyed his 'Royal Iſſue; whilſt ſuch of his Majeſty's Subjects, 'who, out of Duty and Affection to his Majeſty, 'and Compaſſion of their bleeding Country, have 'laboured for Peace, are reviled, injured, and mur- 'dered, even by the Magiſtrates of that City, or by 'their Directions.

'*Laſtly*, What Hope his Majeſty can have of 'Safety there, whilſt Alderman *Pennington*, their 'pretended Lord Mayor, (the principal Author of 'thoſe Calamities which ſo nearly threaten the Ruin 'of that famous City) *Ven*, *Foulke*, and *Mainwa- 'ring*, all Perſons notoriouſly guilty of Schiſm and 'High Treaſon, commit ſuch Outrages in oppreſ- 'ſing, robbing, and impriſoning, according to their 'Diſcretion, all ſuch his Majeſty's loving Subjects

'whom

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. January.

'whom they are pleaſed to ſuſpect but for wiſhing 'well to his Majeſty: And his Majeſty would 'know whether the Petitioners believe that the 'Reviling and Suppreſſing the Book of Common 'Prayer, (eſtabliſhed in this Church ever ſince the 'Reformation) the Diſcountenancing and Impriſon-'ing godly, learned, and painful Preachers; and 'the Cheriſhing and Countenancing of Browniſts, 'Anabaptiſts, and all Manner of Sectaries, be the 'Way to defend and maintain the true Reformed 'Proteſtant Religion? That to comply with, and 'aſſiſt Perſons who have actually attempted to kill 'his Majeſty; and to allow and favour Libels, Paſ-'quils, and ſeditious Sermons againſt his Majeſty, be 'to defend his Royal Perſon and Honour according 'to the Duty of their Allegiance? Whether to im-'priſon Men's Perſons, and to plunder their Houſes, 'becauſe they will not rebel againſt his Majeſty, 'nor aſſiſt thoſe that do? Whether to deſtroy their 'Property, by taking away the Twentieth Part of 'their Eſtates from them; and, by the ſame arbi-'trary Power, to refer to four Standers by of their 'own Faction, to judge what that Twentieth Part 'is, be to defend the lawful Rights and Liberties of 'the Subject? And if they think theſe Actions to 'be Inſtances of either, whether they do not know 'the Perſons before-named to be guilty of them all? 'Or whether they think it poſſible that Almighty 'God can bleſs that City, and preſerve it from De-'ſtruction, whilſt Perſons of ſuch known Guilt and 'Wickedneſs are defended and juſtified amongſt 'them, againſt the Power of that Law by which 'they can only ſubſiſt?

'His Majeſty is ſo far from ſuffering himſelf to 'be incenſed againſt the whole City, by the Actions 'of theſe ill Men, though they have hitherto been 'ſo prevalent as to make the Affections of the reſt 'of little Uſe to him; and is ſo willing to be with 'them and to protect them, that the Trade, Wealth, 'and Glory thereof (ſo decayed and eclipſed by 'theſe public Diſtractions) may again be the Envy

'of

'of all foreign Nations; that he doth, once more, An. 18. Car. I.
'graciously offer his Free and General Pardon to all 1642.
'the Inhabitants of that his City of *London*, the January.
'Suburbs, and City of *Westminster*, (except the
'Persons formerly excepted by his Majesty) if they
'shall yet return to their Duty, Loyalty, and Obe-
'dience. And if his good Subjects of that his City
'of *London* shall first solemnly declare, That they
'will defend the known Laws of the Land, and
'will submit to, and be governed by, no other
'Rule: If they shall first manifest, by defending
'themselves, and maintaining their own Rights,
'Liberties, and Interests, and suppressing any Force
'and Violence unlawfully raised against those and
'his Majesty, their Power to defend and preserve
'him from all Tumults, Affronts, and Violence:
'*Lastly*, If they shall apprehend, and commit to
'safe Custody, the Persons of those four Men who
'enrich themselves by the Spoil and Oppression of
'his loving Subjects, and the Ruin of the City, that
'his Majesty may proceed against them by the
'Course of Law, as guilty of High Treason, *his*
'*Majesty will speedily return to them with his Royal,*
'*and without his Martial, Attendance*; and will use
'his utmost Endeavour that they may, hereafter,
'enjoy all the Blessings of Peace and Plenty; and
'will no longer expect Obedience from them, than
'he shall, with all the Faculties of his Soul, labour
'in the Preserving and Advancing the true Reformed
'Protestant Religion, the Laws of the Land, the Li-
'berty and Property of the Subject, and the just Pri-
'vileges of Parliament.

'If, notwithstanding all this, the Art and Inte-
'rest of these Men can prevail so far, that they in-
'volve more Men in their Guilt, and draw that his
'City to sacrifice its present Happiness and future
'Hopes to their Pride, Fury, and Malice, his Ma-
'jesty shall only give them this Warning, That
'whosoever shall, henceforward, take up Arms with-
'out his Consent; contribute any Money or Plate,
'upon what Pretence of Authority soever, for Main-
'tenance of the Army under the Command of the
'Earl

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'Earl of *Essex*, or any other Army in Rebellion 'against him; or shall pay Tonnage and Pound-'age, till the same shall be settled by Act of Par-'liament; every such Person must expect the se-'verest Punishment the Law can inflict; and, in 'the mean time, his Majesty will seize upon any 'Part of his Estate within his Power, for the Re-'lief and Support of him and his Army, raised and 'maintained for the Defence of his Person, the 'Laws, and this his Kingdom: And since he de-'nies to his Majesty the Duty and Benefit of his 'Subjection, by giving Assistance to Rebels, which, 'by the known Laws of the Land, is High Trea-'son, his Majesty shall likewise deny him the Bene-'fit of his Protection; and shall not only signify to 'all his foreign Ministers, that such Person shall re-'ceive no Advantage by being his Subject, but shall, 'by all other Ways and Means, proceed against him 'as a public Enemy to his Majesty and this King-'dom.

'But his Majesty hopes and doubts not but his 'good Subjects of *London* will call to Mind the 'Acts of their Predecessors, their Duty, Affection, 'Loyalty, and Merit towards their Princes; the 'Renown they have had with all Posterity from, and 'the Blessings of Heaven which always accompanied, 'those Virtues; and will consider the perpetual Scorn 'and Infamy, which unavoidably will follow them 'and their Children, if infinitely the meaner Part 'in Quality, and much the lesser Part in Number, 'shall be able to alter the Government so admi-'rably established, destroy the Trade so excellent-'ly settled, and to waste the Wealth, so industri-'ously gotten, of that flourishing City; and then 'they will easily gather up the Courage and Resolu-'tion to join with his Majesty in Defence of their 'Religion, Laws, and Liberties, which hitherto 'hath and only can make themselves, his Majesty, 'and his Kingdom, happy.

'For concurring with the Advice of his two 'Houses of Parliament, which, with Reference to 'the Commonwealth, may be as well at this Di-'stance,

'ſtance as at *Whitehall*; his Majeſty doubts not but his good Subjects of *London* well know how far (beyond the Example of his Predeceſſors) his Majeſty hath concurred with their Advice in paſſing of ſuch Laws, by which he willingly hath parted with many of his known Rights, for the Benefit of his Subjects, which the Fundamental Conſtitutions of this Kingdom did not oblige him to conſent to; and hath uſed all poſſible Means to beget a right Underſtanding between them; and will therefore apply themſelves to thoſe who, by making juſt, peaceable, and honourable Propoſitions to his Majeſty, can only beget that Concurrence.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

After the King's Meſſenger had read this once upon the Huſtings, in the Audience of theſe Honourable Perſons, he was, for the Help of the Lowneſs of his Voice, and the Advantage of the great Multitudes in the Hall, willed to read the ſame a ſecond Time in the Clock-houſe, in the Audience of the Body of that Aſſembly; among whom, after he had finiſhed his Work, an inconſiderable Company near the Door made ſome Offers towards an Acclamation; but finding no expected Eccho to anſwer their Shout, they wound up in a little Modeſty and a great deal of Silence, upon which the Earl of Mancheſter *delivered his Speech as followeth:*

My Lord Mayor, and you Gentlemen of the City of London,

'THIS Aſſembly can never be looked upon by any Members of both Houſes of Parliament, but there muſt be ſome Offering of Gratitude made to you; of Thanks and Acknowledgements for your former large-hearted Expreſſions of Affection and Care for the Preſervation both of the Parliament and Kingdom: The Occaſion why my Lords and theſe Gentlemen of the Houſe of Commons are come hither is this, They have read an Anſwer to an humble Petition of the Lord Mayor and Common Council and Citizens of *London* to his Ma- The Earl of *Mancheſter*'s Speech to the Citizens on that Occaſion;

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January

Majesty; in which they find many wounding Aspersions cast upon Persons of very eminent Authority in your City, and upon others of very great Fidelity and Trust among you: This Answer they do find, as it is printed, to agree with that which the Gentleman from his Majesty hath here read; and they owning themselves equally interested (in all Things that concern you) with you, have commanded this Gentleman to make some Observations by way of Vindication, both of the Proceedings of both Houses of Parliament, and of the Proceedings of the City; with this Assurance, that they will never desert you, but will stand by you with their Lives and Fortunes, for the Preservation of the City in general, and those Persons in particular, who have been faithful, and deserved well, both of the Parliament and Kingdom; and they will pursue all Means, both with their Lives and Fortunes, that may be for the Preservation of this City, and for the Procuring of Safety, Happiness, and Peace to the whole Kingdom.'

The Speech of this Noble Lord being entertained with loud Expressions of Joy and Thankfulness by the Commons; and, after some Time Silence being made, Mr. Pymme, *that worthy Member of the House of Commons and Patriot of his Country, gave the Sense of both Houses upon the several Passages in his Majesty's Answer, in the following Speech:*

My Lord Mayor, and you Worthy Citizens of this Noble and Famous City of London,

And Mr. *Pymme's*, by way of Reply to the King's Answer.

'I Am commanded by the Lords and Commons to let you know, That, in this Answer which hath been published to you, they do observe many Things of great Aspersion upon the Proceedings of Parliament, very scandalous and injurious to many particular Members of this City; whereupon they think that it becomes them, both in Tenderness of their own Honour, and Respect to you, to take away all those Aspersions; and to let you know the Truth of their Proceedings, which have been full

full of Honour and Juſtice, as they ſtand in relation to their own Duty; and full of Humility and Obedience towards his Majeſty, and of Care for the common Good, and ſo ſhall ever be: And they have commanded me to let you know the true Anſwer to moſt of thoſe Things that are imputed either to the Parliament, or to the City, by obſerving ſome Particulars of this Book which hath been read to you; and to let you know the Proceedings in their own native Condition, clear from thoſe Miſrepreſentations which make them appear in a Quality much different from the Truth: Which before I enter into, I am to declare, as the Senſe of both Houſes, that your Petition was ſo full of Loyalty, Humility, and Obedience, that you might well have expected an Anſwer of another Kind. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'The firſt Obſervation I am to make to you is this, that it is ſaid here, *That his Majeſty was enforced, by Tumults, to leave the Parliament, and to go from* Whitehall, *and to withdraw himſelf into thoſe Courſes which now he hath taken.*

'In Anſwer hereunto, I am commanded to tell you, That there was no Occaſion given by any Tumults riſing out of this City, or the Suburbs, which might juſtly cauſe his Majeſty's Departure; and you may very well remember, that after his violent coming to the Commons' Houſe of Parliament in that unuſual and unheard-of Manner (which was the Beginning of theſe unhappy Differences) that the very next Day his Majeſty came into the City without any Guard; that he was preſent in the Common Council, dined at the Sheriffs, and returned back again, with manifold Evidences of Fidelity on the Part of the City, and without any ſuch Expreſſions as were unbeſeeming the Majeſty of a King, or the Duty of Subjects; that he reſided divers Days at *Whitehall*, and afterward at *Hampton-Court*, *Windſor*, and Places adjoining, with ſmall Forces about him, and yet never any Attempt made which might give him any Apprehenſions of Fear; by all which it is manifeſt, that this is an unjuſt Aſperſion caſt upon this City, that any tumul-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

tuous Carriage of yours was the Occasion of his Majesty's leaving the Parliament, and withdrawing himself to remoter Parts.

'It is affirmed, *That the Government of your City hath been managed by a few desperate Persons, and that they do exercise an arbitrary Power.* In Answer to which the two Houses of Parliament give you this Testimony, That you have, in most of the great Occasions concerning the Government of the City, followed their Direction; and that Direction, which they have given, and you have executed, they must and will maintain to be such as stands with their Honour in giving it, and your Trust and Fidelity in the Performance of it.

'It is objected in the third Place, *That Contributions have been publickly made, for the Maintenance of that Army which did join Battle with the King, and did, by all the Means that Treason and Malice could suggest, endeavour to take away his Life, and destroy his Issue.*' To this I am commanded to say, That the Design of bringing up the *English* Armies, the gathering together of the Cavaliers about *Whitehall*, the violent coming to the House of Commons, the King's going into the North and raising Armies there, are clear Evidences that Violence was first intended, and divers Practices were made against the Parliament, before they took any Course, or made any Preparation to take up Arms, for their Defence; for the Danger of his Majesty's Person they were sorry for it, and did, by divers humble Petitions, labour to prevent it: and as touching the Royal Issue, they have sufficiently declared to the World their good Affections towards them, by the Care they have taken both for the Safety and Maintenance of those who are left here.

'It is further expressed in this Answer, *That the King demands the Lord Mayor, Mr. Alderman* Fowke, *Col.* Ven, *and Col.* Manwaring, *to be delivered up as guilty of Schism and High Treason.* Concerning which I am commanded to tell you, as the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, That this Demand is against the Privilege of Parliament,

two

two of them being Members of the Commons House; most dishonourable to the City, that the Lord Mayor of *London* should be subjected to the Violence of every base Fellow, be assaulted, seized on, without due Process or Warrant, which the Law doth afford every private Man; and that you should be commanded to deliver up your Chief Magistrate, and such eminent Members of the City to the King's Pleasure, only because they have done their Duty in adhering to the Parliament, for the Defence of the Kingdom; and that it is against the Rules of Justice that any Men should be imprisoned upon such a general Charge, when no Particulars are proved against them; and this you are to take Notice of, as the Answer to those Scandals, and to that Disgrace upon my Lord Mayor, and the other Members of the City. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'And I am further to tell you, That there is little Cause for his Majesty to make this Demand, considering that he himself doth, by Force, keep away many accused in Parliament; as my Lord *Digby*, and many more impeached of High Treason, besides divers other great Delinquents, that stand charged there for heinous Crimes; all which, by Force, are kept from the due Proceedings and legal Trial of Parliament.

'It is alledged in this Answer, *That my Lord Mayor, and those other Persons named, are Countenancers of Brownists and Anabaptists, and all Manner of Sectaries.* To this I am commanded to say, That hereof there is no Proof: It doth not appear that they give any such Countenance to Sectaries of any Kind whatsoever; and if it did, his Majesty hath little Reason to object it, while, notwithstanding the Profession he hath often made, *That he will maintain the Protestant Reformed Religion*, he doth in the mean Time raise an Army of Papists; who, by the Principles of their Religion, are bound, if Power be put into their Hands, to destroy and utterly to root out the Protestants, together with the Truth which they profess.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

It is affirmed, *That Men's Perſons have been impriſoned, and their Houſes plundered, becauſe they will not rebell againſt his Majeſty.* To this I am commanded to declare, That no Men's Houſes have been plundered by any Direction of the Parliament, but that they have been very careful to reſtrain all ſuch violent Courſes, ſo far as they were able; and that they have never committed any Man, but ſuch as, by due Information, they conceived to be ſeditious Perſons, and like to trouble the Peace of the State.

'It is objected further, *That the Property of the Subject is deſtroyed, by taking away the twentieth Part by an arbitrary Power.* To this they ſay, That in that Ordinance it doth not require a twentieth Part, but doth limit the Aſſeſſors that they ſhall not go beyond a twentieth Part; and that this is done by a Power derived from both Houſes of Parliament; the Lords, who have an Hereditary Intereſt in making Laws in this Kingdom; and the Commons, who are elected and choſen to repreſent the whole Body of the Commonalty, and truſted for the Good of the People, whenever they ſee Cauſe to charge the Kingdom. And they ſay further, That the ſame Law, that did enable the two Houſes of Parliament to raiſe Forces to maintain and defend the Safety of Religion, and of the Kingdom, doth likewiſe enable them to require Contributions, whereby thoſe Forces may be maintained; or elſe it were a vain Power to raiſe Forces, if they had not a Power likewiſe to maintain them in that Service for which they were raiſed.

'And to this Point I am commanded to add this further Anſwer, That there was little Reaſon for this to be objected on his Majeſty's Behalf, when it is well known that, from the Subjects which are within the Power of his Army, his Majeſty doth take the full yearly Value of their Lands, and in ſome Caſes more; that not only particular Houſes, but whole Towns, have been plundered by Command and Deſign; and that, by Proclamations, Men are declared to forfeit all their Eſtates, becauſe they will

will not obey arbitrary Commands; and this is commonly practiſed by his Majeſty, and on his Part: And therefore there was little Reaſon to charge the Parliament with ſo neceſſary and moderate a Contribution as the twentieth Part. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'It is declared, *That the King expects to be kept from Tumults and Affronts.* Upon which I am commanded to obſerve, That his Majeſty's Expreſſions, in his Anſwer, tend to the making of a Diviſion in this City, and to the raiſing of a Party which may make ſome Diſturbance in that orderly Government which is now eſtabliſhed; both which will certainly prove equally deſtructive to him and both Houſes of Parliament; and more prejudicial to his quiet Abode here, than any Thing that hath ever been acted by the Houſes of Parliament, or the preſent Governors of the City.

'They obſerve further that, in this Anſwer, *His Majeſty doth profeſs that he will ſeize upon the Eſtates of all that ſhall contribute any Thing towards the Maintenance of the Parliament's Army, and will put them out of his Protection; and, by his Miniſters in foreign States, will take ſuch Courſe that they may be proceeded againſt as Enemies*; that is, deſtroyed and ſpoiled. To which the Lords and Commons do declare, That this is an Exceſs of Rigour and Injuſtice beyond all Example, that particular Men ſhould loſe their private Eſtates here without Law or judicial Proceeding; and that our Prince, who owes Protection to the Kingdom as well as to particular Perſons, ſhould ſuffer the Wealth thereof to be robbed and ſpoiled by foreign States: Upon due Conſideration whereof, they hope his Majeſty will be induced by better Counſel to forbear the Execution than that by which he hath been perſuaded to publiſh ſuch a Reſolution.

'Beſides theſe Obſervations out of the Anſwer, I am to obſerve one out of a Narrative that was received from the Common Council, that the King did declare, *That he would ſend ſome Meſſengers here to obſerve your Carriage in the City, and what was done amongſt you.* The Parliament have juſt Cauſe

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

to doubt, that these will be Messengers of Sedition and Trouble; and therefore desire you to observe them and find them out, and that they may know who they are.

'I am, for a Conclusion, to commend to your Considerations, that you see, by the Proceedings to which the King is drawn by the ill Counsel now about him, that Religion, the whole Kingdom, this glorious City, and the Parliament, are all in great Danger; that this Danger cannot be kept off, in all Likelihood, but by the Army that is now on Foot; and that the Lords and Commons are so far from being frighted by any Thing that is in this Answer, that they have, for themselves, and the Members of both Houses, declared a further Contribution towards the Maintenance of this Army; and cannot but hope and desire, that you that have shewed so much good Affection, in the former Necessities of the State, will be sensible of your own, and of the Condition of the whole Kingdom; and add to that which you have already done some further Contribution, whereby this Army may be maintained for all your Safeties.

At the End of every Period of this Speech, the Applause was so great, that he was fain to rest till Silence was again made; and, at last, (the Company ready to be dissolved) after some Pause and Consultation with the Committee of Lords and Commons then present, and by their Direction, Silence being made, he closed all with the Words following:

'Worthy Citizens, you have understood the Sense of both Houses of Parliament, concerning my Lord Mayor here, and those worthy Members of your City, that are demanded; you have heard the Parliament declare, That they will protect them in that which they have done by Direction of both Houses; and they expect that you should express it yourselves likewise, that if any Violence be offered to them, you will secure and defend them with your uttermost Force; and you shall always find, that this Protection

tion of the Parliament shall not only extend to these, but to all others that have done any Thing by their Command.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

Which Words were no sooner uttered, but the Citizens, with one joint Harmony of Minds and Voices, gave such an Acclamation as would have drowned all the former, if they had been then breathing; which, after a long Continuance, resolved itself into this more articulate and distinct Voice, We will live and die with them, We will live and die with them, *and the like.*

So that in the managing of this Day's Work, God was so pleased to manifest himself, that the Well-affected went away not strengthened only, but rejoicing; and the Malignants (as they have been called) some convinced, others silenced, many ashamed, it fully appearing how little Power they had to answer their Desires of doing Mischief: Whilst, instead of dividing the City, they were exceedingly united; instead of a Dissipation, thousands were unexpectedly brought, as it were, into an unthought-of Association, to live and die in the Defence of these zealous and honourable Assertors of their Peace and Liberties: All which we may sum up in that Triumph of the Man of God, In the Thing wherein they dealt proudly, God was above them.

The ill Reception the King's Answer to the City of *London*'s Petition met with at the Common-Hall, occasioned his Majesty to send, a few Days after, the following Letter and Declaration to the Sheriffs.

Trusty and Well-beloved, we greet you well,

'WE received a Petition lately from the Aldermen and Common Council of our City of *London*, by the Hands of Persons entrusted by them for the Delivery, who found such a Reception from us, as well manifested our Regard to that Body which sent them: Though we well knew by whom that Petition was framed, and where

The King's Letter to the Sheriffs of *London*, requiring them to publish his foregoing Answer.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'where perused and examined before it was approved by those from whom it seemed to be sent, yet 'we were so willing to enter into a Correspondence 'with that our City, and to receive any Address 'and Application from them, according to that Invitation we had given by our late Proclamation; 'and were so glad to find that there was yet some 'Hopes they would look to the Peace and Happiness of that City, and at last sever themselves 'from any Faction or Dependence, which might 'insensibly involve them in those Calamities they 'did not foresee; that we returned such a gracious 'Answer thereunto, so full of Candour and Affection, that the meanest Inhabitant of that our City, 'if he carefully consider the same, will find himself 'concerned in it, and that we have had an especial 'Care of his Particular.

'With this Answer of ours we sent a Servant of 'our own, in the Company of those who had been 'so well used here, to require and see that it might 'be communicated to the whole Body of that our 'City; not doubting but that both it, and the Bringer, should receive such Entertainment there, as 'might manifest their due Regard of us, and of 'our Affection to them: But, to our great Wonder, we find that, after ten Days Attendance, and 'suffering a ridiculous Pamphlet to be published in 'our Name, as if we retracted our former Resolutions, (which Pamphlet we have caused to be 'burned by the Hand of the Hangman, as we also 'require you to see done) instead of that Admission 'we expected to our Messenger and Message, Guards 'of armed Men have been brought to keep our 'good Subjects, to whom that our Answer was directed, from being present at the Reading thereof; and Speeches have been made by Strangers, '(who have been admitted to the City Councils, 'contrary to the Freedom and Custom of those 'Meetings) to blast our said Answer, and to dishonour and slander us; which if our good Subjects 'there shall suffer, we shall be much discouraged

'in

'in our desired Correspondence with that our City, and so, by the Cunning and Power of those Incendiaries, mentioned in our Answer, Alderman *Pennington*, (who to shew his great Loyalty to us, and his Fitness to be Chief Magistrate of such a City, being informed that a desperate Person there said, *That he hoped shortly to wash his Hands in our Blood*, refused to send any Warrant, or to give any Direction to any Officer, for his Apprehension) *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, who have plunged that our City into such unspeakable Calamities, in which they would still keep it to cure their own desperate Condition, our good Subjects there are not suffered to receive our gracious Answer to that Petition. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'We have therefore thought fit to write these our Letters to you, requiring you, the Sheriffs of our said City, to take Care for the publishing that our Answer (which we herewith send you) to our good Subjects of that our City: And our Pleasure is, That you the Masters and Wardens of the several Companies of our said City forthwith summon all the Members of your several Companies, with all the Freemen and Apprentices (whose Hopes and Interests are so much blasted in these general Distractions) belonging thereunto, to appear at their several Halls; where you shall cause our said Answer, together with these our Letters, to be publickly read; that all our good Subjects may clearly understand how far we have been from begetting, how far we are from continuing or nourishing, these unnatural Civil Dissentions; and how much it is in their own Power to remove the present Pressures, and to establish the future Happiness and Glory of that famous City; and may seriously weigh every Part of that our Answer, as well that which carries Caution in it for the future, as Pardon for what is past: For assure yourselves, for the Time to come, we shall proceed with all Severity against such who shall incur the Penalty of the Law in those Points, of which we have given them so fair a Warning in

'our

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'our said Answer: And whosoever shall not behave 'himself like a good Subject in this our Kingdom, 'shall not, if we can help it, receive the Benefit 'and Advantage of being our Subject in any other; 'but all foreign Princes shall know, that as such Per- 'son hath parted with his Loyalty to us, so he must 'not hope for any Security by us; and, to that Pur- 'pose, we shall henceforward have a very inquisitive 'Eye upon the Actions of all our Subjects, that 'some Example may be made, how easy it is for us 'to punish their Disloyalties abroad, who, for a 'Time, may avoid our Justice at home.

'And, to the End that none of our good Sub- 'jects of that our City may think themselves bound 'to obey any of the Orders or Commands of the 'pretended Lord Mayor, whom we have and do 'still accuse of High Treason, and conspiring to take 'our Life from us, it is well known to those Citi- 'zens, who understand the Charter of that City, (so 'amply granted by our Royal Progenitors, and so 'graciously confirmed by us, and of which we pre- 'sume our good Subjects there do still desire to re- 'ceive the Benefit) that the said *Isaac Pennington* 'was never regularly elected, or lawfully admitted, 'to the Office of Lord Mayor of that our City; that 'in Truth Alderman *Cordwell* was, by the Plurality 'of Voices, chosen; and that this Man was never 'presented to, or admitted by us, in such Manner 'as is prescribed by their Charter; neither had that 'Judge, who presumed to swear him, any more 'Colour of Law or Authority to administer such 'an Oath to him, than he hath to do the same To- 'morrow to any other Alderman of the City: And 'we do therefore hereby declare the said *Isaac Pen-* 'nington not to be Mayor of that our City of 'London, and to have no lawful Authority to exer- 'cise the same; and that our good Subjects of that 'our City ought not to submit to any Orders, Di- 'rections, or Commands, which shall issue from him 'as Lord Mayor of that our City; but that the same 'are void, and of none Effect.

'And

'And we do once more require you the Sheriffs of our said City, and all other the Magistrates of the same, in which all our good Subjects of that City will assist you, that you cause the said *Isaac Pennington*, *Ven*, *Fowke*, and *Manwaring*, to be apprehended and committed to safe Custody; that we may proceed against them as guilty of High Treason, and as the principal Authors of those Calamities which are now so heavy upon our poor Subjects of that City; which, if not suddenly remedied, will in a short Time utterly confound a Place and a People, lately of so flourishing an Estimation in all the Parts of Christendom. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'And whereas we are informed that one *Brown*, a Woodmonger, *Titchborne*, a Linendraper, and one *Harvey*, a Silkman, have exercised great Insolencies and Outrages in that our City; and when many of our good Subjects there have assembled together, in a peaceable and modest Manner, to consult about the Peace and Welfare of that City, the said mutinous and seditious Persons have presumed to lead Multitudes of armed Men against them; and, by such Force, have beaten, wounded, and killed our good Subjects: Our Will and Pleasure is, That if the said *Brown*, *Titchborne*, and *Harvey*, or either of them, shall so far neglect our gracious Offer of Pardon, as still to engage themselves in those unwarrantable and seditious Courses, you, our Sheriffs of *London*, do raise Power to suppress the said Force; and that you, and all our Ministers of Justice, use your utmost Means to apprehend the said Persons, and to bring them to condign Punishment: And we do hereby declare, That it shall be lawful for any of our loving Subjects to resist and oppose the said Persons, if they shall hereafter, in such a warlike Mannner, endeavour to molest them, as they would do Rebels and Traitors.

'And we hope that all our good Subjects of that our much-injured City of *London* do take Notice of our Grace and Favour towards them, in our

'so

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'so freely passing by and pardoning the Offences 'there committed against us, as we have offered by 'our Proclamation and our late Answer; and of 'our very earnest Desire to be with them, and to 'reside amongst them for their Comfort, Support, 'and Protection; if they shall, by first providing 'for their own Security, in such Manner as we 'have directed them in our late Answer, give us an 'Instance that we may be safe there too; and that 'they do likewise observe, that, being by such Vio- 'lence kept from them, we have done our utmost 'Endeavour to continue and advance the decayed 'Trading of that our City, by permitting and en- 'couraging all Resort and Traffick thither; and 'therefore if, by the stopping of Carriages, and 'seizing Commodities by other Men, the Com- 'merce and Correspondence be broken between 'that Place and our good Subjects of other Counties, 'they will impute that Mischief to the true Authors 'of it, and look upon us only as not able to help 'them. [a]

'Do but your Duties, and this Cloud, which 'threatens a present Confusion, will quickly vanish 'away; and you will enjoy all the Blessings of a 'happy Nation, to the which no Endeavour of ours 'shall be wanting.'

Given at our Court at Oxford, *this 17th Day of* January, 1642.

The

[a] This Passage of the King's Letter seems to allude to a Declaration of Parliament made the 9th of this Month, whereby it was ordained, 'That no Ships whatsoever should, from thenceforth, make any Voyage for the fetching of Coals or Salt from *Newcastle*, *Sunderland*, or *Blythe*; or carrying of Corn, or other Provision of Victual, untill the Town of *Newcastle* should be freed from the Forces there raised, or maintained, against the Parliament; and that Town be reduced into such Hands, and Condition, as should declare themselves for King and Parliament. And that if any Ship should, at any Time after the first of *February* then next coming, bring into any Port or Place of this Kingdom, any Coals or Salt laden from *Newcastle*, *Sunderland*, or *Blythe*, or any of them, untill further Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, that every such Ship, and the Master and Sailors in the same, should be seized upon, and stayed in such Port and Place where they come in, untill the two Houses of Parliament, being thereof informed, should take further Order and Direction therein.'

The Sheriffs having acquainted both Houſes of their Receipt of the foregoing Letter from the King, the ſeveral Companies were forbid to aſſemble at their Halls according to his Majeſty's Order, and the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs were deſired to take ſpecial Care to prevent the ſame: And ſome Maſters of Companies, that were chief Promoters in oppoſing this Order of Parliament, were taken into Cuſtody. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January. Which the Parliament forbid them to do;

Thus much for the Proceedings of the Committees at the *Guildhall* in *London*, and the Conſequences of that Meeting:——It is now high Time to return, and ſee what other Buſineſs was doing at *Weſtminſter*.

On the 16th of this Month the Commons made an Order, That no Carriers, Waggoners, Carts, or Waggons, or Horſes laden with any Commodities whatſoever, ſhould be permitted hereafter to go to *Oxford*, or any Part of the King's Army, with any Manner of Proviſions, without the ſpecial Licenſe of that Houſe: And in caſe of Diſobedience to ſuch Order, their Perſons and Goods ſhould be ſeized upon, and kept in ſafe Cuſtody. And that diligent Search be made for any Monies that may be carried, or conveyed, by any Perſon to *Oxford*: Alſo another Order, That if any Agent, or Servant, to any Perſon bearing Arms againſt the Parliament, ſhould preſume to come to *Weſtminſter*, or reſide about *London*, they ſhould be forthwith apprehended as Spies, and proceeded againſt accordingly. And ſtop all Proviſions from going to the King's Army, &c.

About this Time the King having iſſued out a Proclamation for adjouring all the Courts of Juſtice, the next Term, from *London* and *Weſtminſter* to *Oxford*, this was thought ſo prejudicial to the Public, that the Parliament forbad the Officers belonging to the ſaid ſeveral Courts to obey this Proclamation, or the King's Letters ſent to the principal Perſons concerned in them. However, at the ſame Time, they thought fit to ſend a Petition to his The King adjourns the Term to *Oxford*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

his Majesty, offering Reasons against the said Removal, and praying that the King would revoke his Orders therein: To this the Lords received an Answer, which was read in their House, on the 18th of this Month, and was to this Effect: [b]

His Majesty's Reasons for so doing.

'HIS Majesty hath seriously weighed the Reasons, presented unto him by both Houses of 'Parliament, to induce his Majesty to revoke his 'late Proclamation for the adjourning of the Term, 'and returns this Answer:

'That the Lord-Keeper of the Great Seal of '*England* being, in regard of his Majesty's most 'important Affairs, necessarily to attend his Majesty, his Majesty hath likewise appointed his High 'Court of Chancery to be held in the Place where 'his Majesty resides; that so his Subjects may have 'their Causes determined by the Supreme Judge of 'that Court: But is well content that the Masters of 'the Chancery, that are Assistants to the House of 'Peers, shall, notwithstanding his said Proclamation, continue their Attendance upon that House 'where they are Assistants.

'For his Court of Wards, upon which so essential a Part of his Majesty's Revenue depends, it 'concerned him to draw the same to him; since, 'being at *London*, it will prove of no Advantage or 'Supply to his Majesty's Occasions, by reason of 'the Stops there of all Money from coming to him: 'And therefore he shall expect the Presence of the 'Council of that Court here, the Time of the Term 'being so short that they may speedily return again 'to the Service of the Houses, who have not used 'to deny their Members Leave, for so short a Time, 'to attend his Majesty's Service, to which by Law 'they are bound; besides that his Majesty doubts 'not but he may, for a convenient Time, upon 'pressing and urgent Occasions, especially for the 'Dif-

[b] From the *Lords Journals*: This Answer of the King is omitted by *Rushworth* and *Husbands*, though the following Ordinance, in Reply to it, is inserted in both those Collections.

'Discharge of another necessary Duty, dispense with a Peer's Attendance upon the House, without any Breach of Privilege, seeing it hath not been denied in former Parliaments. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'For the Danger of his Majesty's Subjects in their Passage, by reason of the several Armies, his Majesty doth not know that they are to pass through more Armies to his City of *Oxford*, than they must to his City of *London*; or that the Courts of Justice cannot proceed with the same Freedom and Liberty where his Majesty's Army is, as where there is an Army against him; but his Majesty will take Care that his good Subjects shall no way suffer by his Army here, which he can, by no Means, undertake for the other Army at *London*.

'For the Records of the several Courts, his Majesty expects and requires Obedience from the Officers thereof, according to his Proclamation; as no doubt his Subjects will take Care for the particular Evidences that concern themselves; and for the safe Carriage and Conveyance of both, that they suffer not, in the least Degree, by his Majesty's Army, his Majesty will surely provide; neither can the Prejudice be great to his Subjects, the Courts of Equity being no further removed from the Courts of Law.

'The Reason of his Majesty's Adjournment of the Courts of Law till *Crastino Purificationis*, is for the great Danger his good Subjects must undergo by passing through the Armies: And his Majesty much fears his good Subjects will have little Benefit by their legal Proceedings, whilst his Majesty and the Law are no better able to defend one another.

'For these Reasons, and those expressed in his Proclamation, his Majesty can by no Means revoke his said Proclamation; but it being his undoubted Right to adjourn or remove the Terms to what Place he pleases, if he hath yet any undoubted Right, his Majesty expects Obedience to his said Proclamation and to every Part thereof.'

This

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

This Answer of the King's was ordered to be communicated to the Commons: And, a few Days after, both Houses passed the following Ordinance, to justify their Conduct in not suffering the Adjournment of the Courts to *Oxford*.

An Ordinance of Parliament, forbidding any Obedience to the King's Proclamation for such Adjournment.

'THE Lords and Commons having taken into their serious Consideration a Proclamation, dated at *Oxford* the 27th of *December* last, for the adjourning of the Court of Chancery, the Court of Wards and Liveries, the Duchy of *Lancaster*, the Court of Requests, the Receipt of his Majesty's Exchequer, and of the First Fruits and Tenths, from the City of *Westminster* unto the City of *Oxford*; and for adjourning the Courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, unto the Return *Crastino Purificationis*, found it to tend much to the Prejudice of the Commonwealth to remove the said Courts and Receipts to *Oxford*, where the Body of an Army, raised against the Parliament and the Authority thereof, now resides; and therefore, in Performance of the Duty and Trust reposed in them by the Kingdom, whom they represent, did exhibit their humble Advice and Petition to his Majesty, with the Reasons inducing them thereunto, to revoke the said Proclamation; and, with all Humility, desired that the said Courts and Receipts might be kept at their several usual Places and Times, and not at *Oxford*: But his Majesty, giving still more Credit to the Suggestions of those wicked and malignant Persons that yet encompass him, than to his highest and most faithful Council, returned his negative Answer, and expressly denied to repeal this Proclamation:

'Now, the Lords and Commons clearly discovering the great Inconveniences and Mischiefs that necessarily must happen to his Majesty's most faithful and best-affected Subjects, in case those Courts and Receipts be removed to *Oxford*; where such of them as have Occasion to attend, cannot,

'with

'with any Safety to their Perſons and Eſtates, repair; his Majeſty having, in effect, declared all Perſons 'that have contributed any thing in Aid or Defence 'of the Parliament, and the Privileges thereof, to 'be guilty of High Treaſon; and, in purſuance 'thereof, by the Force and Power of the Army 'there remaining, have ſeized upon many of their 'Perſons, where they are detained Priſoners, and 'ſome proceeded againſt as Traitors; having no-'thing laid to their Charge but their aſſiſting the 'Parliament, and oppoſing that Army raiſed to de-'ſtroy it and the Kingdom: And finding that di-'vers, both Judges and others, whoſe Attendance 'upon the ſaid Courts and Receipts will be neceſ-'ſary, conſiſt of Perſons that are Members and 'Aſſiſtants to both Houſes of Parliament, whoſe 'Preſence at this Time cannot be ſpared; and that 'if the Records, neceſſary to be uſed in the ſaid 'Courts, ſhould be removed from the uſual Places 'towards *Oxford*, in a Time when two Armies are 'reſiding near thereabouts, it would endanger the 'Miſcarriage of them; which might ruin many 'of his Majeſty's Subjects, whoſe Eſtates depend 'thereupon: And that ſo long a Diſtance between 'the ſaid Courts of Law and Equity, which have 'neceſſary Dependence one upon another, would 'prove exceeding prejudicial to many, thought it 'their Duty, in Diſcharge of the Truſt repoſed in 'them by the Commonwealth, as much as in 'them lieth, to prevent the ſaid Inconveniences: 'And therefore do hereby declare and order, That 'no Judge, Miniſter, or other Perſon belonging to 'any of the ſaid Courts or Receipts, ſhall repair to 'the ſaid City of *Oxford*; or do or execute any 'thing belonging to the ſaid Offices and Employ-'ments, but in Places uſual for the doing and exe-'cuting thereof: And that no Member of, or Aſ-'ſiſtant to, any of the two Houſes of Parliament, 'that have any Place, Office, or Employment, 'about any of the ſaid Courts or Receipts, ſhall 'preſume to depart from their Attendance on Par-'liament, without the ſpecial Leave of that Houſe

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. January.

'whereof they are Members or Aſſiſtants: And that 'no Perſon ſhall remove, or cauſe to be removed, 'any Records or Writings of any of the ſaid Courts or 'Receipts to or towards the City of *Oxford*. And 'the Lords and Commons do declare, That if any 'Perſon ſhall diſobey this Order, they will proceed 'againſt them as wilful Contemners of the Autho-'rity of Parliament, and Diſturbers of the Peace of 'the Kingdom.

'And it is further declared and ordered by the ſaid 'Lords and Commons, That no Judgment, De-'cree, Order, and Proceedings whatſoever, that 'ſhall be given, made, or had, by or in any of the 'ſaid Courts or Receipts, out of the uſual Places 'where the ſaid Courts and Receipts have been ac-'cuſtomed to be held and kept, ſhall bind any Per-'ſon that ſhall or may be concerned therein, with-'out his own voluntary Conſent: And that the ſaid 'Lords and Commons will, by the Authority of 'both Houſes of Parliament, protect and keep in-'demnified all Judges, Officers, and other Perſons, 'from any Damage or Inconvenience that may or 'can happen to them for yielding Obedience to this 'Ordinance.'

The Commons had been, all the latter End of this Month, fully employed in ſettling the ſeveral Articles, by way of Propoſitions, to be preſented to the King, for a general Pacification, which had been ſent down to them from the Lords. After ſeveral Conferences, Altercations, and Emendations made by both Houſes, and ſeveral Diviſions on the principal Heads by the latter, they were at laſt finiſhed on the 27th. And a Committee, conſiſting of four Lords and eight Commoners, was appointed to go to *Oxford*, for whom a Letter of Safe Conduct was deſired. The King immediately returned one, and, on the firſt Day of *February*, the following Propoſitions were preſented to his Majeſty, at *Oxford*, by the Parliament's Commiſſioners appointed for that Purpoſe. Their Titles and Names were, the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Pembroke*, *Sarum*, and *Holland*; for

for the Commons, the Lords *Wenman* and *Dungarvon*, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *William Litton*, the Hon. *William Pierpoint*, *Bulſtrode Whitlocke*, *Edmund Waller*, and *Richard Winwood*, Eſqrs. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

The HUMBLE DESIRES *and* PROPOSITIONS *of the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, tendered unto his Majeſty*, Feb. 1, 1642.

'WE your Majeſty's moſt humble and faithful Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, having in our Thoughts the Glory of God, your Majeſty's Honour, and the Proſperity of your People; and being moſt grievouſly afflicted with the preſſing Miſeries and Calamities which have overwhelmed your two Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*, ſince your Majeſty hath, by the Perſuaſion of evil Counſellors, withdrawn yourſelf from the Parliament, raiſed an Army againſt it, and, by Force thereof, protected Delinquents from the Juſtice of it; conſtraining us to take Arms for the Defence of our Religion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament, and for the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety; which Fears and Dangers are continued and increaſed by the raiſing, drawing together, and arming of great Numbers of Papiſts under the Command of the Earl of *Newcaſtle*; likewiſe by making the Lord *Herbert* of *Ragland*, and other known Papiſts, Commanders of great Forces; whereby many grievous Oppreſſions, Rapines, and Cruelties have been, and are daily, exerciſed upon the Perſons and Eſtates of your People; much innocent Blood hath been ſpilt, and the Papiſts have attained Means of attempting, with Hopes of effecting, their miſchievous Deſign of rooting out the Reformed Religion, and deſtroying the Profeſſors thereof. In the tender Senſe and Compaſſion of theſe Evils, under which your People and Kingdom lie, (according to the Duty which we owe to God, your Majeſty, and the Kingdom for which we are truſted) do moſt earneſtly deſire that an End may be put

The Parliament's Propoſitions for Peace, preſented to the King at *Oxford*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'to theſe great Diſtempers and Diſtractions, for 'the preventing of that Deſolation which doth 'threaten all your Majeſty's Dominions; and as 'we have rendered, and ſtill are ready to render, 'to your Majeſty, that Subjection, Obedience, and 'Service, which we owe unto you; ſo we moſt 'humbly beſeech your Majeſty to remove the 'Cauſes of this War, and to vouchſafe us that 'Peace and Protection which we and our Anceſtors 'have formerly enjoyed under your Majeſty and 'your Royal Predeceſſors, and graciouſly to accept 'and grant theſe our moſt humble Deſires and Pro-'poſitions:

I. 'That your Majeſty will be pleaſed to diſband 'your Armies, as we likewiſe ſhall be ready to diſ-'band all thoſe Forces which we have raiſed; and 'that you will be pleaſed to return to your Parlia-'ment.

II. 'That you will leave Delinquents to a legal 'Trial, and Judgment of Parliament.

III. 'That the Papiſts may not only be diſbanded, 'but diſarmed according to Law.

IV. 'That your Majeſty will be pleaſed to give 'your Royal Aſſent unto the Bill for taking away 'ſuperſtitious Innovations: To the Bill for the utter 'aboliſhing and taking away of all Archbiſhops, 'Biſhops, their Chancellors and Commiſſaries, 'Deans, Sub-Deans, Deans and Chapters, Archdea-'cons, Canons, and Prebendaries, and all Chaun-'ters, Chancellors, Treaſurers, Sub-Treaſurers, 'Succentors, and Sacriſts; and all Vicars Choral, 'Choriſters, old Vicars and new Vicars of any Ca-'thedral or Collegiate Church, and all other their 'Under-Officers out of the Church of *England*: 'To the Bill againſt ſcandalous Miniſters: To the 'Bill againſt Pluralities: And to the Bill for Con-'ſultation to be had with Godly, Religious, and 'Learned Divines. That your Majeſty will be plea-'ſed to promiſe to paſs ſuch other good Bills for 'ſettling of Church-Government, as, upon Con-'ſultation with the Aſſembly of the ſaid Divines,

'ſhall

'shall be resolved on by both Houses of Parliament, and, by them, be presented to your Majesty. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

V. 'That your Majesty having expressed, in 'your Answer to the Nineteen Propositions of both 'Houses of Parliament, an hearty Affection and 'Intention for the rooting out of Popery out of 'this Kingdom; and that if both the Houses of Par'liament can yet find a more effectual Course to 'disable Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, from 'disturbing the State or eluding the Laws, that you 'would willingly give your Consent unto it; that 'you would be graciously pleased, for the better 'Discovery and speedier Conviction of Recusants, 'that an Oath may be established by Act of Par'liament, to be administered in such Manner as by 'both Houses shall be agreed on; wherein they shall 'abjure and renounce the Pope's Supremacy, the 'Doctrine of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, wor'shipping of the consecrated Host, Crucifixes, and 'Images; and the refusing the said Oath, being 'tendered in such Manner as shall be appointed by 'Act of Parliament, shall be a sufficient Convic'tion, in Law, of Recusancy. And that your Ma'jesty will be graciously pleased to give your Royal 'Assent unto a Bill for the Education of the Chil'dren of Papists, by Protestants, in the Protestant 'Religion. That for the more effectual Execution 'of the Laws against Popish Recusants, your Ma'jesty will be pleased to consent to a Bill for the 'true levying of the Penalties against them; and 'that the same Penalties may be levied and disposed 'of in such Manner as both Houses of Parliament 'shall agree on, so as your Majesty be at no Loss. 'And likewise to a Bill, whereby the Practice of 'Papists against the State may be prevented, and 'the Laws against them duly executed.

VI. 'That the Earl of *Bristol* may be removed 'from your Majesty's Counsels; and that both he 'and the Lord *Herbert*, eldest Son to the Earl of '*Worcester*, may likewise be restrained from coming 'within the Verge of the Court; and that they

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'may not bear any Office, or have any Employ
'ments, concerning the State or Commonwealth.

VII. 'That your Majesty will be graciously
'pleased, by Act of Parliament, to settle the Mi-
'litia, both by Sea and Land, and also the Forts
'and Ports of the Kingdom, in such a Manner as
'shall be agreed on by both Houses.

VIII. 'That your Majesty will be pleased, by
'your Letters Patent, to make Sir *John Bramston*
'Chief Justice of your Court of King's Bench;
'*William Lenthall*, Esq; the now Speaker of the
'Commons House, Master of the Rolls; and to
'continue the Lord Chief Justice *Bankes* Chief Ju-
'stice of the Court of Common Pleas; and likewise
'to make Mr. Serjeant *Wylde* Chief Baron of your
'Court of Exchequer; and that Mr. Justice *Bacon*
'may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Rolle* and Mr.
'Serjeant *Atkins* made Justices of the King's Bench;
'that Mr. Justice *Reeves* and Mr. Justice *Foster*
'may be continued, and Mr. Serjeant *Pheasant*
'made one of the Justices of your Court of Com-
'mon Pleas; that Mr. Serjeant *Creswell*, Mr. *Sa-*
'*muel Brown*, and Mr. *John Puleston* may be Ba-
'rons of the Exchequer; and that all these, and all
'the Judges of the same Courts for the Time to
'come, may hold their Places, by Letters Patent
'under the Great Seal, *quamdiu se bene gesserint*;
'and that the several Persons, not before named,
'that do hold any of these Places before mentioned,
'may be removed.

IX. 'That all such Persons as have been put out
'of the Commission of Peace, or Oyer and Termi-
'ner, or from being *Custodes Rotulorum*, since the
'first Day of *April*, 1642, other than such as were
'put out by Desire of both or either of the Houses
'of Parliament, may again be put into those Com-
'missions and Offices; and that such Persons may
'be put out of those Commissions and Offices as
'shall be excepted against by both Houses of Parlia-
'ment.

X. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to pass
'the Bill now presented to your Majesty, to vindi-
'cate

'cate and secure the Privileges of Parliament from 'the ill Consequence of the late Precedent, in the 'Charge and Proceeding against the Lord *Kimbol-* 'ton, now Earl of *Manchester*, and the five Mem- 'bers of the House of Commons. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

XI. 'That your Majesty's Royal Assent may be 'given unto such Acts, as shall be advised by both 'Houses of Parliament for the satisfying and paying 'the Debts and Damages, wherein the two Houses 'of Parliament have engaged the Public Faith of 'the Kingdom.

XII. 'That your Majesty will be pleased, ac- 'cording to a gracious Answer heretofore received 'from you, to enter into a more strict Alliance with 'the States of the United Provinces, and other 'Neighbour Princes and States of the Protestant 'Religion, for the Defence and Maintenance there- 'of against all Designs and Attempts of the Popish 'and Jesuitical Faction to subvert and suppress it; 'whereby your Subjects may hope to be free from 'the Mischiefs which this Kingdom hath endured, 'through the Power which some of that Party have 'had in your Councils, and will be much encou- 'raged, in a Parliamentary Way, for your Aid and 'Assistance, in restoring your Royal Sister and the 'Prince Elector to those Dignities and Dominions 'which belong unto them, and the relieving the 'other Protestant Princes who have suffered in the 'same Cause.

XIII. 'That, in the General Pardon which your 'Majesty hath been pleased to offer to your Sub- 'jects, all Offences and Misdemeanors committed 'before the 10th of *January*, 1641, which have 'been, or shall be, questioned or proceeded against 'in Parliament, upon Complaint in the House of 'Commons, before the 10th of *January*, 1643, 'shall be excepted; which Offences and Misde- 'meanors shall, nevertheless, be taken and adjudged 'to be fully discharged against all other inferior 'Courts. That likewise there shall be an Excep- 'tion of all Offences committed by any Person, or 'Persons, which hath, or have, had any Hand or

'Prac-

An. 18. Car. I 1642. February.

'tice in the Rebellion of *Ireland*; which hath, or 'have, given any Counsel, Assistance, or Encou-'ragement to the Rebels there, for the Maintenance 'of that Rebellion; as likewise the Exception of *Wil-'liam* Earl of *Newcastle*, and *George* Lord *Digby*.

XIV. 'That your Majesty will be pleased to re-'store such Members of either House of Parliament 'to their several Places of Services and Employ-'ment, out of which they have been put since the 'Beginning of this Parliament; that they may re-'ceive Satisfaction and Reparation for those Places, 'and for the Profits which they have lost by such Re-'movals, upon the Petition of both Houses of Par-'liament; and that all others may be restored to 'their Offices and Employments, who have been 'put out of the same upon any Displeasure concei-'ved against them for any Assistance given to both 'Houses of Parliament, or obeying their Commands; 'or forbearing to leave their Attendance upon the 'Parliament without Licence; or for any other Oc-'casion arising from these unhappy Differences be-'twixt your Majesty and both Houses of Parliament, 'upon the like Petition of both Houses.

'These Things being granted and performed, as 'it hath always been our hearty Prayer, so shall 'we be enabled to make it our hopeful Endea-'vour, that your Majesty and your People may 'enjoy the Blessings of Peace, Truth, and Justice; 'the Royalty and Greatness of your Throne may 'be supported by the loyal and bountiful Affec-'tions of your People; their Liberties and Pri-'vileges maintained by your Majesty's Protection 'and Justice; and this public Honour and Hap-'piness of your Majesty and all your Dominions, 'communicated to other Churches and States of 'your Alliance; and be derived to your Royal Po-'sterity and the future Generations in this Kingdom 'for ever.'

Mr. *Whitlocke*'s Account of that Affair.

Mr. *Whitlocke*, one of the Commissioners above-mentioned, gives us the following Particulars relating to this remarkable Embassy: 'They had 'their

their first Access to the King in the Garden of *Christ-Church*, where he was walking with the Prince, and divers other Lords attending him: All of them kissed his Hand, not as they were ranked in the Safe Conduct, but according to their several Degrees. Mr. *Pierpoint* before the Knights, he being an Earl's Son[a]; and Mr. *Winwood* before Mr. *Whitlocke*, he being the eldest Knight's Son; and Mr. *Waller* the last: The King said to him, *Though you are the last, yet you are not the worst, nor the least in my Favour:* The Discovery of a Plot then in Hand in *London*, to betray the Parliament, wherein Mr. *Waller* was engaged with *Chaloner*, *Tomkins*, and others, which was then in Agitation, did manifest the King's Courtship to Mr. *Waller* to be for that Service. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'After they had all kissed the King's Hand, the Prince gave them his Hand to kiss.

'The Earl of *Northumberland* read the Propositions to the King, with a sober and stout Carriage; and being interrupted by the King, he said smartly, *Your Majesty will give me Leave to proceed?* The King answered, *Ay, ay*; and so the Earl read them all through.'

To go on with this Affair, since nothing else material intervened, except a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, out of the *North*, which we postpone for the present: —— The *Journals* inform us, That the Lords Commissioners, at their Return to the House, *February* 6, made the following Report of this whole Proceeding; that when they presented the Propositions to the King, he made them this short Answer:

My Lords,

'I Was always for Peace, and am more concerned in it than any, being the Father of the Country next under God. I cannot chuse but speak, though I thought to have said nothing. I con- The King's Answer to the Commissioners.

'fess

[a] This Gentleman's Father, the Earl of *Kingston*, and his elder Brother, the Lord *Newark*, were at this Time in the King's Army.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'fess I am surprized, though I have seen somewhat 'of this, yet I believed them not to be such as these 'are. They that principally contrived and penned 'them, had no Thoughts of Peace in their Hearts, 'but to make Things worse and worse; yet I shall 'do my Part, and take as much Honey out of the 'Gall as I can. I will think of them, and take 'Time to give you my Answer.'

'That, two Days after, the King sent for them again, and told them, That he had considered of the Propositions, presented unto him from both Houses of Parliament, and had returned this Answer, which he commanded the Earl of *Holland* to read:

And to Parliament,

'IF his Majesty had not given up all the Faculties 'of his Soul to an earnest Endeavour of a Peace 'and Reconciliation with his People, or if he would 'suffer himself, by any Provocation, to be drawn 'to a Sharpness of Language, at a Time when there 'seems somewhat like an Overture of Accommodation, he could not but resent the heavy Charges 'upon him in the Preamble of these Propositions; 'and would not suffer himself to be reproached with 'protecting of Delinquents, by Force, from Justice; '(his Majesty's Desire having always been, that all 'Men should be tried by the known Law, and he 'having been refused it) with raising an Army against 'his Parliament; and to be told that Arms have 'been taken up against him, for the Defence of Religion, Laws, Liberties, Privileges of Parliament, 'and for the Sitting of the Parliament in Safety; 'with many other Particulars in that Preamble, 'so often and so fully answered by his Majesty, 'without remembering the World of the Time 'and Circumstances of raising those Arms against 'him, when his Majesty was so far from being in 'a Condition to invade other Men's Rights, that 'he was not able to maintain and defend his own 'from Violence; and without telling his good 'Subjects that their Religion, (the true Protestant 'Religion, in which his Majesty was born, hath

'faith-

'faithfully lived, and to which he will die a willing 'Sacrifice) their Laws, Liberties, Privileges, and 'Safety of Parliament, were so amply settled and 'established, or offered to be so, by his Majesty, be- 'fore any Army was raised against him, and long 'before any raised by him for his Defence; that if 'nothing had been desired but that Peace and Pro- 'tection which his Subjects and their Ancestors had, 'in the best Times, enjoyed under his Majesty, or his 'Royal Predecessors, this Misunderstanding and Di- 'stance between his Majesty and his People, and this 'general Misery and Distraction upon the Face of 'the whole Kingdom, had not been now the Dis- 'course of Christendom: But his Majesty will for- 'bear any Expressions of Bitterness, or of a Sense of 'his own Sufferings; that, if it be possible, the Me- 'mory thereof may be lost to the World; and there- 'fore, though many of the Propositions, presented to 'his Majesty by both Houses, appear to him very 'derogatory from, and destructive to, his just Power 'and Prerogative, and no way beneficial to his Sub- 'jects (few of them being already due to them by 'the Laws established, and how Unparliamentary it 'is by Arms to require new Laws, all the World 'may judge); yet, because these may be waved or 'mollified, and many Things that are now dark and 'doubtful in them cleared and explained upon De- 'bate, his Majesty is pleased (such is his Sense of 'the Miseries this Kingdom suffers by this unnatu- 'ral War, and his earnest Desire to remove them 'by an happy Peace) that a speedy Time and Place 'be agreed upon for the Meeting of such Persons as 'his Majesty and both Houses shall appoint, to dis- 'cuss these Propositions, and such others here fol- 'lowing, as his Majesty doth propose to them:

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. February.

I. 'That his Majesty's own Revenue, Magazine, 'Towns, Forts, and Ships, which have been ta- 'ken or kept from him by Force, be forthwith re- 'stored unto him.

II. 'That whatsoever hath been done or publish- 'ed contrary to the known Laws of the Land, or 'derogatory to his Majesty's legal and known Power

'and

An. 18. Car. I 1642. February.

'and Rights, be renounced and recalled; that no 'Seed may remain for the like to ſpring out of for 'the future.

III. 'That whatſoever illegal Power hath been 'claimed and exerciſed by or over his Subjects, as 'impriſoning their Perſons without Law, ſtopping 'their *Habeas Corpus*, and impoſing upon their 'Eſtates without Act of Parliament, *&c*, either by 'both or either Houſe, or any Committee of both 'or either, or by any Perſons appointed by any of 'them, be diſclaimed; and all ſuch Perſons ſo com-'mitted, forthwith diſcharged.

IV. 'That as his Majeſty will readily conſent, 'having done ſo heretofore, to the Execution of all 'Laws already made, and to any good Acts to be 'made, for the ſuppreſſing of Popery, and for 'the firm ſettling of the Proteſtant Religion now 'eſtabliſhed by Law; ſo he deſires that a good Bill 'may be framed for the better preſerving the Book 'of Common Prayer from the Scorn and Violence 'of Browniſts, Anabaptiſts, and other Sectaries, 'with ſuch Clauſes for the Eaſe of tender Con-'ſciences as his Majeſty hath formerly offered.

V. 'That all ſuch Perſons as, upon the Treaty, 'ſhall be excepted out of the General Pardon, ſhall 'be tried *per Pares*, according to the uſual Courſe 'and known Laws of the Land; and that it be left 'to that, either to acquit or condemn them.

VI. 'And to the Intent this Treaty may not ſuf-'fer Interruption by any intervening Accidents, that 'a Ceſſation of Arms, and free Trade, for all his 'Majeſty's Subjects may be firſt agreed upon.

'This Offer and Deſire of his Majeſty he hopes 'will be chearfully entertained, that a ſpeedy and 'bleſſed Peace may be accompliſhed. If it ſhall 'be rejected, or, by inſiſting upon unreaſonable Cir-'cumſtances, be made impoſſible, (which he hopes 'God in his Mercy to this Nation will not ſuffer) 'the Guilt of the Blood which will be ſhed, and 'the Deſolation which muſt follow, will lie upon 'the Heads of the Refuſers. However his Majeſty 'is reſolved, thro' what Accidents ſoever he ſhall

'be

'be compelled to recover his Rights, and with what prosperous Success soever it shall please God to bless him, that by his earnest constant Endeavours to propagate and promote the true Protestant Religion, and by his governing according to the known Law of the Land, and upholding the just Privileges of Parliament, according to his frequent Protestations made before Almighty God, which he will always inviolably observe, the World shall see that he hath undergone all these Difficulties and Hazards for the Defence and Maintenance of those; the zealous Preservation of which his Majesty well knows is the only Foundation and Means for the true Happiness of him and his People.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Upon the Reading of this Answer, the Lords resolved to communicate it to the House of Commons, as a Matter of great and serious Consideration, and to desire them to take it into their utmost Care and Thought.

But before we proceed any farther in the Transactions of *February*, it is necessary to take Notice of a Letter from the Lord *Fairfax*, in the North; which was delivered to the Lords, by the Commons, at a Conference, and read in that House on the first of this Month. The Letter was addressed to the Speaker:

SIR,

IT is most necessary that I continue my Relation to you of the State and Condition of the Affairs in this Country, that they may be made known to both Houses; and Provision made for Succours to be sent us, which have hitherto come very slowly, though they have made large Expressions of their Care. We have been long destitute of Money to pay the Army; and, to supply that Want, I have used all possible Industry, by taking up Money upon Exchange, and by calling upon the Country to supply me for the present upon the Public Faith.

Lord *Fairfax*'s Letter concerning his taking of *Leeds*.

The Want of Money doth so perplex the Part of the Army here, as I imagine the House will not expect

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

pect any considerable Matter to be done by us; though, God be thanked, the Forces I send from hence, and are raised by the Country in other Places, are daily acting something to advance the Public Service. As in the North-Riding, where Sir Hugh Cholmley *hath carried himself very bravely, giving several Defeats to the Enemy near* Malton; *and on* Monday *the sixteenth of this Month, joining his Forces to Sir* Matthew Boynton, *they fell upon Col.* Slingsby *at* Gisbrough, *where they defeated him and* 600 *Horse and Foot with him, that had done much Spoil in the North-Riding; they wounded and took Col.* Slingsby *himself, with* 140 *other Prisoners; killed a great many, and recovered* 200 *Arms with the Place. Amongst the Prisoners taken by Sir* Hugh Cholmley *at* Malton, *and here at* Gisbrough, *it is found that a great Number are Papists; and indeed the Strength of the Enemies will be found to consist much of Papists, and popishly affected, the Earl of* Newcastle *granting his Commissions, for raising Men, to Papists for the most Part. I have heard, of late, of Commissions granted to twelve Recusants of these Parts, whose Names I send inclosed; and it is not to be doubted he walks the same Ways in other Places, as well as here; which Courses have so advanced Popery, as I hear, that in* York, *where many Recusants are settled, Mass is ordinarily said in every Street; and such Affronts offered to the Protestants and the Ministry, as few dare resort to Church. In other Parts of the Country, I am informed that, for many Miles together, the religious Ministry are all either fled, or imprisoned; which Persecutions, if they be not timely repressed, will extirpate, or much depress, the Protestant Religion in these Parts.*

About Bradford *and* Halifax, *God hath blessed my Son and those small Forces with good Success against the Enemy, in several light Skirmishes: On* Monday *was Se'nnight he seized on the Lord* Saville's *House at* Howley, *and put about* 190 *Musqueteers into it; on* Tuesday *I sent Sir* William Fairfax *and his Officers, with some Arms, to raise his Regiment in those Parts; and, for his Convoy, I sent what Horse and Dra-*

Dragooners I could spare from hence, directing them to stay with my Son to assist him in his Design against Leeds. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Yesternight I received Letters from him, wherein he relates to me, That on Monday *last he drew his Forces out of* Bradford, *and marched to* Leeds, *where Sir* William Saville *commanded in Chief; my Son first summoned them by a Trumpet to yield, which being refused, the Assault began, wherein his Men carried themselves with great Resolution; for the Town was fortified on all Sides, furnished with two Brass Sakers, and manned with* 1500 *Soldiers, yet they forced an Entry in two Hours Fight. There were not lost on both Sides above forty Men, but he took four Colours, and* 500 *Prisoners, of which six are Commanders; and, with the Prisoners, they took many Arms, the Sakers, and all the Munition they had, which was not much. On our Part we lost thirteen Men, and Capt.* Briggs, *and Capt.* Lee, *both sore wounded; and I perceive that, in this Exploit, Sir* William Fairfax, *Sir* Thomas Norcliffe, *and Serjeant-Major* Forbes, *with the rest of the Commanders, carried themselves very gallantly. The People do observe that Sir* William Saville, *and the Chief Commanders on the other Side, soon after the Fight began, fled by secret Ways towards* Pontefract, *and their Men after them by Degrees; but, by the Way, Serjeant-Major* Beaumont *was drowned crossing the River, and Sir* William Saville *very narrowly escaped the like Fate.*

After Leeds *was thus won, my Son writes that he intended to have marched to* Wakefield, *where Sir* George Wentworth *commanded, but was prevented therein by the Enemies Fears; who, hearing he had taken* Leeds, *fled all away from* Wakefield *to* Pontefract, *and left the Town; so he hath sent some Forces to invest and keep that Place. Thus hath God blessed their Endeavours on that Side; and now I am told that Capt.* Hotham *and Sir* John Saville *are gone up Yesterday with some Forces into those Parts, but upon what Design I know not.*

Yesterday Morning I had some Intelligence that the most Part of the Forces were marched, the Day before,

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

fore, out of Doncaſter; *ſo I have ſent my Serjeant-Major-General with ſix Companies of Foot to inveſt that Place, and to leave ſome Forces to keep it untill more Strength come to us out of the Southern Counties; which, if it could be haſtened hither, might very much advance the Cauſe, and cruſh the Popiſh Forces before they be ſupplied by the Queen's Coming, or their Party in* Scotland, *of which there is ſome Expectation.*

I deſire you will make known to the Houſe the great Extremities that are put upon me; and that a certain Courſe may be ſettled for ſupplying us with Money for the Entertainment of the Army, in ſuch Seaſon as our Men may be encouraged in the Service, and not fall into a Way of plundering for Want of Pay. My Son upon the taking of Leeds, *though he entered it by Force, yet he reſtrained his Army from Pillaging; ſo I have ordered that the Malignants, in lieu of the Spoil challenged to be due unto the Soldiers, ſhall give them a Month's Entertainment, which I hope will content both Parties.*

Yeſternight Intelligence was brought to me, that the Earl of Newcaſtle *hath drawn down all his Forces from the South Parts of* Yorkſhire, *thoſe only excepted that kept the Caſtle at* Pontefract; *for Yeſterday he marched from* Sherburne *to* York, *with thirty-ſix Colours, two Pieces of Cannon, and forty-five other Carriages; the certain Cauſe I do not yet know, but ſuppoſe it is to meet the Arms and Munition coming from* Newcaſtle; *or to prepare for the Queen's Entertainment at* York, *which is much ſpoken of. I ſhall carry a vigilant Eye upon his Deſigns, and endeavour to prevent them, ſo far as can be expected, from the Forces under the Command of,*

Sir,

Selby, Jan. 26, 1642.

Your moſt affectionate Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. I have ſent unto Mr. White, *to be ſhewed unto you, three Papers found with Col.* Slingſby, *when he was taken at* Giſbrough *by Sir* Hugh Cholm-

Cholmley; *which may, peradventure, be thought necessary to be made known to the House, if Sir* Hugh *have not already presented the Transcript to you.* An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

The Names of the Recusants *in these Parts, to whom the Earl of* Newcastle *hath granted Commissions to raise Forces, are Mr.* Robert Trapps, *Mr.* Stephenson *of* Thornton, *Sir* John Middleton, *Sir* Walter Vavasour, *Mr.* Ann, *Mr.* Tindale, *Mr.* Bretton, *Sir* Philip Hungate, *Mr.* Waterton, *Mr.* Thwinge, *Capt.* Sare, *and Capt.* Granger.

After the Reading of this Letter, the following Ordinance is entered in the *Lords Journals*:

An Ordinance of Parliament in Consequence thereof.

'WHereas many and fervent Prayers have been sent up to God, for his Blessing to be poured down upon the Endeavours of the Parliament in Maintenance of his own Cause and Religion, now openly assaulted by Papists; and because it is most just and necessary to observe the Return of these Prayers, that our Mouths and Hearts may be as much enlarged in Praises as they have been in Prayers, the Lords and Commons have thought fit to publish some late good Successes, as so many Answers from Heaven, which God hath given to the Prayers of his Servants.

'And whereas sundry late Declarations have shewed to the World divers Informations and Proofs concerning the raising of a Popish Army, with an Intention to subvert God's true Religion professed, and by Law established, in this Kingdom, and to introduce Popish Idolatry and Superstition; that it may appear what was, before, an Intention is now Matter of Fact, and really put in Execution, a most certain and true Relation is here offered to public Notice and Observation; wherein it may be seen that this Popish Army hath set up the open Practice of their abominable Idolatry in *York*, the second City in the Kingdom; and are grown to that Height of Insolency, that they terrify and drive away the Protestant Ministers and People from

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'frequenting their own Churches, and from the 'Practice of their own Religion; wherein they 'have given a Pattern and Pledge what they intend 'to do, and what must be expected from them, 'through the whole Kingdom. The Considera- 'tion hereof (whereby the most precious Things in 'the World, God's Glory and true Worship, and 'the Salvation of the Souls of Men, are brought in- 'to Danger) ought to excite and stir up, and we 'are confident it will, the strongest Endeavours and 'most united Conjunctions, of all religious and 'well-affected Protestants and Patriots, to resist and 'suppress those common Enemies of God, in Pity 'to their Country and the Commonwealth; for 'now it plainly appears that, however they pretend 'to defend the Religion and the Laws, yet their main 'Intention is to establish Popery in this Kingdom, 'and to extirpate the Protestant Religion; which 'cannot be done without Subversion of the Laws, 'as the Papists have, almost, effected in *Ireland*.'

A Committee of Sequestration appointed.

February 3. The Commons, after passing some Votes for sequestring the Estates, Real and Personal, of some particular Persons, appointed a Committee to consider of the sequestring and seizing the Estates, Real and Personal, of all such Persons as have been, are, or shall be, in actual War or Arms against the Parliament: And to have Power to appoint Sequestrators, to make Allowances to such as should be employed in this Service; and to use all other Means thought effectual to it. This was the first Beginning of an Ordinance of Parliament, which proved so extreme bitter to the Royalists in the Consequence.

An Ordinance for assessing Monies upon Malignants.

Feb. 4. Another severe Ordinance for the raising two Troops of Horse and one Regiment of Dragoons in the County of *Northampton*; and for assessing of Monies upon the Malignants, disaffected Persons, Papists, Bishops, Deans, Deans and Chapters, *&c.* for the Maintenance of the said Forces, was read and put to the Question, in the House of Commons, but

but it passed in the Negative, by forty-one Voices against twenty. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Feb. 7. The Lords took into Consideration the King's last Answer to their Propositions; and, first, it was agreed to proceed in the Treaty. Next it was proposed, That the Armies on both Sides should be totally disbanded, and to have a Cessation of Arms, that there might be a Treaty; when, after a long Debate, it was resolved in the Affirmative.

Feb. 8. A Paper was read in the House of Lords, called, *A general Confession of National Sins*; which was agreed to by both Houses, and ordered to be used by their Ministers at the next public Fast. [a]

Several Days were employed in seeking out Ways and Means for raising of Money; and, amongst others, a Weekly Assessment was agreed on for the Maintenance of the Army; and an Ordinance was made for that Purpose. These new Kind of Taxes lay prodigious hard on the Citizens of *London*, and all those Counties which were within the Power of the Parliament. The King seems to have supported his Army at this Time, chiefly, by Gifts and Loans. And for a general Weekly Assessment.

Feb. 13. The Commons sent up their Resolutions on the intended Treaty at *Oxford*. They told the Lords, in a Conference, That they agreed with them in some Things, and differed in others; and offered the following Votes of their House to their Lordships Consideration.

Resolved, 'That this House doth concur with the Lords in their Votes, That there shall be a speedy Disbanding of both Armies; and that there should be a fixed Time appointed for it. The *Northern* and *Western* Armies to be first disbanded, which shall be on the first Day of *March* next; and the Day for disbanding all the other Armies, on the tenth of the same Month.' Votes and Resolutions relating to disbanding the King's and the Parliament's Armies.

Resolved, 'That a Message be sent to his Majesty to desire his Consent for disbanding the Armies,

a This Confession is in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 141.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February. according to the Votes of this House; and that Persons shall be appointed to treat with his Majesty concerning the Manner of Disbanding.'

The Question being put, Whether there shall be a present Cessation of Arms, in order to the Treaty on the Propositions, before the Disbanding of the Armies? it passed in the Negative.

Resolved, 'That when his Majesty shall have assented to a Disbanding, and the Time and Manner of it, then the Time for an immediate Cessation shall be agreed on.'

They also presented the following Reasons why there should be no Treaty, upon the Propositions, before Disbanding:

'THAT a Treaty, before the Disbanding, will be ineffectual to produce such a Peace as may secure Religion against the Designs of the Papists to destroy it, and the Prelatical Party to corrupt it; or to secure the Liberties of the Kingdom, and the Privileges of Parliament, against Projectors and Delinquents. The Grounds and Evidence whereof are these:

1. 'Because Papists, Malignants, and other Delinquents, are now in greatest Power about the King; and this Treaty is like to be managed by their Counsels, whose Hopes and Interests are built upon the Breach and Distemper betwixt the King and his People; whereof they having been the greatest Cause, will still endeavour to hinder such a Peace, as may interrupt their own Designs: Whereas, if the Treaty be after the Disbanding, the Authority of Parliament will be more powerful to remove such Impediments.

2. 'If the Treaty be before the Disbanding, it will not be safe for his Majesty to yield to any such Propositions as shall be for the suppressing of Papists and Malignants, his Person being in their Power; nor yet so safe for the Kingdom, whilst Arms are in their Hands, and so great a Party, both in *Ireland* and beyond the Seas, to encourage and assist them

them in resisting the Observance and Execution of any such Treaty. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

3. 'If the Armies be once disbanded, though the Treaties should not succeed, yet the War cannot be carried on, but there will be Time of Mediation to take up those Differences without any further shedding of Blood: Whereas, if the Armies be on Foot, upon every Difference in the Treaty both Sides may be provoked, with more Animosity and Bitterness, to refer Matters to the bloody Trial of the Sword; and many intervening Accidents may interrupt the Treaty.

4. 'That it will be most honourable for his Majesty, and more safe for his People, that the Propositions be yielded after the Disbanding than before; for thereby his Majesty will be freed from the Imputation of granting any thing by Force; which might both trench upon his Honour, and weaken the Validity of the Things granted; and both Houses will be free from that Tax of unparliamentary Proceedings, implied in his Majesty's Answer, Of requiring new Laws by Arms.

5. 'That if the Treaty be before Disbanding, it will endanger, or delay, his Majesty's Consent to the Disbanding at the Time limited; for there will be the same Reason, on his Majesty's Part, for concluding the Treaty before the Disbanding, as for the beginning it; that so, if he be like to have more Advantage by Arms than by the Treaty, he may still have it in his Power to pursue the same Ends for which his Force was at first raised; and all Delays in that Kind will make the Burdens and Miseries insupportable to the Kingdom, by the necessary Maintenance of all the Armies, and other Charges and Mischiefs which will thereby fall upon the Subject.'

To these Reasons of the Commons was annexed the following Resolution:

'That, forthwith after the Disbanding of both Armies, this House will send a Committee to attend his Majesty, by an humble Treaty to give him

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

due Satisfaction concerning the Propositions sent to them from his Majesty, and those presented from them to his Majesty.'

These Votes, Reasons, and Resolutions, laid before the Lords till the sixteenth of this Month, when they were quickened by another Message from the Commons. The Votes and Reasons were again read; and, after Debate, the Lords resolved, 'Not to recede from their former Votes, but to adhere to them, notwithstanding the Reasons of the House of Commons: To have a Conference with them, and acquaint them, That this House thinks it fit that the Time, from the Beginning of the Treaty, ought not to exceed twenty Days.

'That the King's Propositions, concerning his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, and the Propositions of both Houses for disbanding of all Armies, may be first treated of.

'That the remote Armies may be disbanded by the last Day of *March*, or sooner if it can be: That the King's Army under the Command of the Earl of *Forth*, and that under the Earl of *Essex* raised by Parliament, may be disbanded by the 10th of *April*, or sooner.

'That there may be a present Cessation of all Acts of Hostility on both Sides; and that all other Things may continue in the same State, without any further Intercourse, or free Passage, than is at present.

Lastly, 'Because that Money is necessary to maintain and support the Army, the Lords think fit to propose to the Commons to join with them in sending to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to call a Common Council the next Day, to move them to advance Money for the Supply of the Army.'

Feb 17. The Debates on the disbanding, or not disbanding, the Armies before the Treaty, were this Day continued in the House of Commons; and, on two Divisions, one of them 76 against 73, and the other 86 against 83, it was carried to enter upon the Treaty before Disbanding. We meet with the following Speech of Sir *Benjamin Rudyard* of this very

very Day [a]; which probably was one great Means of the Queſtion's being carried in the Affirmative. An. 18 Car. I. 1642.

February.

Mr. Speaker,

Sir *Benjamin Rudyard's* Speech on that Occaſion.

'I Do verily think that the Vote we have already paſſed, for the diſbanding the Armies the firſt and tenth of *March*, will find us no farther on our Way than where we now are, beſides the ill Accidents that may happen, and ſo much precious Time ſpent, as till then.

'Sir, the main Buſineſs is, whether we ſhall have a preſent Treaty or no. And this concerns us in all that we have, and are. Since we refuſed a Treaty at *Nottingham*, I do not find that we have gotten much Ground, although our Army then was freſh, full, and full paid; the People erect, bountiful, and forward to the War. Now the Diſpoſition of the Kingdom, for the greateſt Part, ſtands bent towards a Peace: So that whereſoever the Refuſal, or Delay of the Way to it ſhall be fixed, the Diſadvantage will fall on that Side. How clear ſoever the Intentions of the Houſe are, yet abroad it will be taken but as a Shew without Reality, and ſo it will be returned upon us.

'For the Propoſitions; I have not known, nor heard, that all the Propoſitions in any Treaty of Importance were ever ſwallowed whole. If ſome be harſh and rough, they may be wrought and ſupppled by wiſe Treaters, made fit for an acceptable Agreement. If others be unpaſſable, they may be totally rejected. Thoſe that are our unqueſtionable Rights, may be ſo claimed, and held.

'Mr. Speaker, we have already taſted the bitter bloody Fruits of War, we are grown exceedingly behind-hand with ourſelves ſince we began it: If we perſiſt, there will ſuch a Confluence of Miſchiefs break in upon us, as, I am afraid, will ruin the King, the Kingdom, the Nation; unleſs God be merciful to us, and do ſtep in with a great Miracle, for a little one will not ſerve our Turn.

'I

[a] From the original Edition printed for *Michael Young*.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'I have long and thoughtfully expected that the Cup of Trembling, which hath gone round about us to other Nations, would at length come in amongſt us; it is now come at laſt, and we may drink the Dregs of it, the worſt; which God avert.

'There is yet ſome Comfort left, that our Miſeries are not likely to laſt long: For we cannot fight here as they do in *Germany*, in that great, large, vaſt Continent; where, although there be War in ſome Parts of it, yet there are many other remote quiet Places for Trade and Tillage to ſupport it. We muſt fight as in a Cock-pit, we are ſurrounded with the Sea. We have no ſtronger Holds than our own Skulls, and our own Ribs, to keep out Enemies; ſo that the whole Kingdom will ſuddenly be but one Flame.

'It hath been ſaid in this Houſe, That we are bound in Conſcience to puniſh the Shedding of innocent Blood: But, Sir, who ſhall be anſwerable for all the innocent Blood which ſhall be ſpilt hereafter, if we do not endeavour a Peace, by a ſpeedy Treaty? Certainly God is as much to be truſted in a Treaty as in a War: It is he that gives Wiſdom to treat, as well as Courage to fight, and Succeſs to both, as it pleaſeth him. Blood is a crying Sin, it pollutes a Land: Why ſhould we defile this Land any longer?

'Wherefore, Mr. Speaker, let us ſtint Blood as ſoon as we can. Let us agree with our Adverſaries in the Way, by a preſent, ſhort, wary Treaty. God direct us.'

Feb. 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons informed the Lords, That they agreed with them in all the Articles relating to the Treaty; but theſe will fall after in another Place.

Propoſitions from the Citizens of *London*, as to raiſing Money, diſbanding the Army, &c.

Feb. 20. New Propoſitions having been made to the Citizens for a conſiderable Advance of Money, ſome of the Aldermen and Common Council, this Day, attended the Houſe of Lords; when, being called in, they declared, 'That they were ſent from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council

cil of the City of *London*, to give their Lord- An. 18 Car. I. 1642.
ſhips an Account of the Deſire of both Houſes for the Advancement of 60,000 *l.* which the Common Council have taken into Conſideration, and voted to raiſe it ſpeedily, if poſſible it may be; and the Common Council have many Things in Agitation, which are not yet digeſted; but think it fit humbly to deſire of their Lordſhips, and the Houſe of Commons, ſome Things that will give Encouragement in the raiſing of this Money, which they offer to their Lordſhips Conſideration. February.

1. 'That both Houſes would vouchſafe to advance the raiſing of 60,000 *l.* by their own Example, and pay it into the Hands of the Treaſurers at *Guildhall*, in *London*, to the End that the Sight of it may encourage others.

2. 'That they may be eaſed in the Rates of the weekly Aſſeſſment, becauſe it exceeds the Proportion of the County, if it be not too late.

3. 'That the 3000 *l. per* Month, granted for Defence of the City, out of the weekly Aſſeſſment, may be made 4000 *l.*

4. 'It is humbly deſired that the Citizens Lands and Houſes in the Country may not be rated for the weekly Aſſeſſment, ſo that they pay in *London*.

5. 'It is deſired, in regard they are informed that divers Miſinformations have been made concerning the City of *London* by private Perſons, that hereafter no ſuch Credit may be given thereunto, as to be accounted the Senſe of the City, unleſs it proceeds from the Court of Aldermen or Common Council, ſignified by ſpecial Meſſengers of their own, or by their Burgeſſes, directed by one of the ſaid Courts.

6. 'That it will much promote the ſaid Service, if the Money aſſeſſed by virtue of divers Ordinances be collected forthwith in *London*, and other Parts of the Kingdom, that the Charge may not lye wholly upon the willing Party; for that otherwiſe the Well-affected will be either deſtroyed with them or for them; with them, if they ſhould refuſe as others do; or for them, by contributing, alone, to the Public Safety more than their Eſtates will bear.

7. 'That

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

7. 'That Search be made, without the Liberties, in the Parts adjacent, for ſuſpected Perſons; and that, upon the Diſbanding, thoſe that are called the King's Army may be enjoined to go to their ſeveral Habitations, and not to come to *London*, to the Diſturbance of the Peace, Safety, and Welfare of the ſaid City, and of the good Government thereof; and that, during the Time of the Treaty and Ceſſation, none of the ſaid Army may be permitted to come to the City.

8. 'That to prevent Miſapprehenſions and Jealouſies concerning the preſent Proceedings of both Houſes of Parliament, about the Treaty and Ceſſation, and Diſbanding, it is humbly prayed it may be declared, That the Reſolution of both Houſes is the ſame as at the firſt, That nothing ſhall be done but that which tends to the ſecuring the true Proteſtant Religion, the juſt Liberties of the Subjects, and Privileges of Parliament.

9. 'It is deſired that the Ordinance for the weekly Aſſeſſment may paſs forthwith, for ſecuring the Reimburſement of the 60,000 *l.* which, otherwiſe, will not be raiſed.

'The Reſolutions of both Houſes are humbly deſired herein, as an Encouragement to carry on the Buſineſs.'

The Anſwer returned to theſe Meſſages was,

'That their Lordſhips gave the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Council, Thanks for their Readineſs and Care in the raiſing of 60,000 *l.* and to let them know that their Lordſhips hope nothing ſhall be done in this Treaty, but what ſhall be for the Security of the true Proteſtant Religion, the Privilege of Parliament, the juſt Privileges of the Subject, and the Security of the City of *London*.

'For the Ordinance for the weekly Aſſeſſment, this Houſe hath paſſed it already, and ſent it to the Houſe of Commons; and concerning the making of 3000 *l.* Allowance a-week to be 4000 *l.* their Lordſhips will give the beſt Furtherance they can in it.

As

As for other Particulars their Lordſhips will take them into Conſideration.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642.

February.

Feb. 21. The Houſe of Lords had ſent a Copy of the Votes of both Houſes concerning the Ceſſation, *&c.* to the Earl of *Eſſex*, their General; at the ſame Time deſiring his Opinion and Advice about them; to which the General returned the following Anſwer, addreſſed to their Speaker;

My Lord,

I Muſt acknowledge the Obligation I have to the Lords, that they deſire my Advice about the Particulars concerning a Ceſſation. My Lord, if I had known of it before it had been voted, I ſhould have clearly delivered my Opinion, and then ſubmitted myſelf and it to your Lordſhips greater Wiſdoms; but, my Lord, now I know my Duty. The Arms you have raiſed are ſo diſperſed, and ſo many Difficulties in it, that it is too great a Burden for me to undertake to deliver my Opinion; not doubting but that your Lordſhips, in your grave Wiſdoms, have weighed all the Inconveniences that may happen to your Servants employed by you, during this Ceſſation, and the Ways how to prevent them before you voted the Ceſſation. My Lord, if I knew how to give a clear Anſwer to a Buſineſs I am ſo great a Stranger to, having been at none of the Debates, I ſhould ſhew my Obedience to their Commands. I am,

Letter from the Earl of *Eſſex* concerning a Ceſſation.

My Lord,

Windſor, Feb. 20, 1642.

Your Lordſhip's

humble Servant,

ESSEX.

After this the Houſe being informed that one Mr. *William Murray* was without, with a Letter from his Majeſty to the Speaker, his Lordſhip was appointed to receive it; which contained only a Command to read the following Meſſage in the Houſe, and

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. and afterwards to communicate it to the Commons.

February.

CHARLES R.

And the King's Meſſage on the ſame Subject.

'WHereas his Majeſty hath, together with a Treaty, propoſed a Ceſſation of Arms to both his Houſes of Parliament, now ſixteen Days ſince, to which, as yet, he hath received no Anſwer: To the End that his Majeſty may ſo clearly underſtand the Houſes, that no ſuch Imputations, as have been formerly, may after be laid upon him, upon Occaſion of any thing that may intervene; his Majeſty deſires, if a Ceſſation ſhall be approved of by them, that the Day upon which the Ceſſation is thought fit to begin, and ſuch particular Limits and Conditions of that Ceſſation as are neceſſary to be underſtood and agreed on before the Ceſſation itſelf can actually begin, be propoſed by them at the ſame Time, with their Approbation of it; ſince, as his Majeſty ſuppoſes by the preſent great Preparation of ſeveral Forces of the Earl of *Eſſex* to march ſeveral Ways, that till ſuch Time as this be done, they do not conceive themſelves obliged to an actual Ceſſation: So neither, till then, doth his Majeſty conceive himſelf obliged to it.'

Hereupon the Lords reſolved to have a Conference with the Houſe of Commons, and communicate this Meſſage and the Earl of *Eſſex*'s Letter to them; and to deſire that a Committee of Members of both Houſes may be appointed to conſider in what Manner, and what Limitations, the Ceſſation of Arms may proceed in, and how to be carried on.

Feb. 23. The Parliament had ſent a Petition to the King, which they called their Deſire and Advice, That the next *Lent* Aſſizes, &c. ſhould be put off, during theſe turbulent Times; they, this Day, received an Anſwer to it from the King, which was read in the Houſe; and, for Connection Sake,

we

we give them both together. And, first, the Desire and Advice: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

THE Lords and Commons in Parliament humbly shew, That your Justices and other liege People, who are or shall be summoned, or have other Cause to attend at the next Assizes and General Goal-Delivery appointed to be shortly kept in the several Counties of England *and* Wales, *cannot resort thither without great Peril of their Lives, and Damage to their Estates, by reason of the present miserable Distractions, and armed Forces being in all Parts of your Realm: In regard whereof, the Lords and Commons do humbly advise and desire your Majesty to command, That the said Assizes and General Goal-Delivery be not holden as is appointed; but that the same may be deferred untill it shall please God to restore Peace unto your People.*

The Parliament desire the *Lent* Assizes may be put off.

His MAJESTY's ANSWER *to the foregoing* DESIRE *and* ADVICE.

'HIS Majesty hath weighed the Desire and Advice of the Lords and Commons, sent in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland* from the Earl of *Manchester*, concerning the putting off the General Assizes and Goal-Delivery throughout the Kingdom. To which his Majesty returns this Answer, That the present bloody Distraction of the Kingdom (which his Majesty hath used all possible Means to prevent, and will still to remove) doth afflict his Majesty, under no Consideration more, than of the great Interruption and Stop it makes in the Course and Proceedings of Justice, and the Execution of the Laws; whereby his good Subjects are robbed of the Peace and Security they were born to: And therefore, as much as in him lies, he will advance that only Means of their Happiness; at least they shall see that their Sufferings, that Way, proceed not from his Majesty: And since they may now expect, by the Laws,

To which the King refuses his Consent.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

'Laws, Statutes, and Cuſtoms of the Kingdom, 'the Aſſizes and General Goal Delivery in every 'County, his Majeſty thinks not fit to command 'the contrary; but will take ſevere and preciſe 'Order, that none of his good Subjects ſhall re- 'ceive the leaſt Prejudice, as they repair thither, 'by any of his Majeſty's Forces; which Rule he 'ſhall be glad to ſee obſerved by others; and then 'he hopes, by the due Execution of the Laws, 'even theſe public Calamities may have ſome Abate- 'ment, and the Kingdom recover its former Peace 'and Proſperity.'

The latter End of this Month was chiefly taken up in framing Articles to be ſent to the King for a Ceſſation of Arms, before the intended Treaty began. And, after conſulting with their Lord-General and a Council of War, a Form was drawn up; which, after many Conferences and Alterations, was, on the 28th of this Month, perfected, read, and agreed to by both Houſes, and ran in theſe Words:

Articles of Ceſſation previous to the Treaty.

'WHereas the Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of a tender Senſe of the pre- 'ſent Miſeries and Diſtractions of the Kingdom, 'and for the obtaining and ſettling of a happy Peace 'between his Majeſty and his People, have humbly 'preſented his Majeſty divers Propoſitions, to which 'he hath been pleaſed to make this Return: *That* 'his Deſire was, *that a ſpeedy Time and Place might* 'be appointed for the diſcuſſing of thoſe Propoſitions, 'and likewiſe ſome others propoſed by his Majeſty. It 'is thereupon agreed in both Houſes, that a Com- 'mittee of both Houſes ſhall be appointed to attend 'his Majeſty, on or before the fourth of *March*, if 'his Majeſty ſhall ſo pleaſe, to endeavour to give him 'all humble and fit Satisfaction concerning the ſaid 'Propoſitions, both his Majeſty's and their own.

'And whereas, for the more ſpeedy Removal of 'the bloody and miſerable Effects of War, his Ma- 'jeſty hath likewiſe been graciouſly pleaſed, by a 'late Meſſage, to ſignify his Deſire, *That, for avoid-*

'*ing*

'ing all intervening Accidents of War, which might 'interrupt this Treaty, there might be a Ceſſation 'of Arms under ſuch particular Conditions and Li- 'mitations as ſhould be agreed on: Their humble 'Deſires therein concurring with his Majeſty, it is, 'by them, aſſented and agreed, That a Ceſſation 'of Arms, in order to ſuch a Treaty as is reſolved 'upon by both Houſes of Parliament, may be in- 'joined to all the Armies and Forces now on Foot 'in the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of '*Wales*, on either Side, under the Reſtrictions and 'Limitations hereafter following; and that neither 'Side ſhall be bound and limited by this Ceſſation 'in any otherwiſe, or to any other Purpoſe, than is 'hereafter expreſſed.

An. 18. Car. I 1642. February.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, 'Victuals, Money, Bullion, and all other Commo- 'dities, paſſing without ſuch a Safe-Conduct as may 'warrant their Paſſage, may be ſtaid and ſeized on, 'as if no ſuch Ceſſation were agreed on at all.

II. 'That all Manner of Perſons, paſſing with- 'out ſuch a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the 'Article next going before, ſhall be apprehended 'and detained, as if no ſuch Ceſſation were agreed 'on at all.

III. 'That his Majeſty's Forces in *Oxfordſhire* 'ſhall advance no nearer to *Windſor* than *Wheatly*; 'and, in *Buckinghamſhire*, no nearer to *Ayleſbury* 'than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkſhire*, the Forces re- 'ſpectively ſhall not advance nearer the one to the 'other than now they are; that the Parliament's 'Forces in *Oxfordſhire* ſhall advance no nearer to *Ox- 'ford* than *Henley*; thoſe in *Buckinghamſhire*, no 'nearer to *Oxford* than *Ayleſbury*; that his Majeſty's 'Forces ſhall take no new Quarters above twelve 'Miles from *Oxford*, any Way; and that the Parlia- 'ment's Forces ſhall take no new Quarters above 'twelve Miles from *Windſor*, any Way.

IV. 'That no Siege ſhall be begun, or continued, 'againſt *Glouceſter*; and that his Majeſty's Forces, 'now employed in the Siege, ſhall return to *Ciren- 'ceſter*,

An. 18 Car. I. 1642. February.

'*ceſter*, and *Malmſbury*, or to *Oxford*, as ſhall be 'moſt for their Conveniency: That the Parliament's 'Forces which are in *Glouceſterſhire* ſhall remain 'in the Cities of *Glouceſter*, *Briſtol*, and the Caſtle 'and Town of *Berkley*; or retire nearer to *Wind-'ſor*, as they ſhall ſee Cauſe; and that thoſe of '*Wales*, which are drawn to *Glouceſter*, ſhall return 'into their Quarters where they were before they 'drew down to *Glouceſterſhire*.

V. 'That in Caſe it be pretended, on either Side, 'that the Ceſſation is violated, no Act of Hoſtility 'is immediately to follow; but, firſt, the Party 'complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on 'the other Side, and to allow three Days, after No-'tice given for Satisfaction: And in Caſe Satisfac-'tion be not given or accepted, then five Days No-'tice to be given before Hoſtility begin: And the 'like to be obſerved, in the remoter Armies, by the 'Commanders in Chief.

'*Laſtly*, That all other Forces in the Kingdom 'of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, and not be-'fore-mentioned, ſhall remain in the ſame Quar-'ters and Places as they are at the Time of the 'publiſhing of this Ceſſation, and under the ſame 'Conditions as are mentioned in the Articles before; 'and that this Ceſſation ſhall not extend to reſtrain 'the ſetting forth, or employing, of any Ships for 'the Defence of his Majeſty's Dominions.

'All which they humbly deſire his Majeſty will 'be pleaſed to ratify and confirm, and that this Ceſ-'ſation may begin upon the fourth of *March* next, 'or ſooner if it may be, and continue untill the 'twenty-fifth of the ſame Month; and, in the mean 'Time, to be publiſhed to the Commanders, Of-'ficers, and Soldiers, and all other his Majeſty's 'loving Subjects on either Side; and that the Treaty 'intended may commence upon the fourth of *March* 'next, or ſooner if it may be; and the Continuance 'thereof not to exceed twenty Days.

The ſame Day a Petition was preſented to the Lords, from the City of *London*, by four Aldermen,

men, importing, That by the Ordinance lately made for the weekly Supply of 10,000 *l.* the said Sum is too much for the City to bear, in regard of the Inequality between them and the Rates of other Counties, and they desired that there might be a clearer Explanation than is yet by the said Ordinance made: Also a full Declaration to free the Citizens of *London*, for their Houses and Lands lying in several Counties; they being assessed and paying in the City.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. February.

Petition from the City of *London* for Relief in the Weekly Assessment.

The Aldermen were called in and told, That since their Petition was directed to both Houses of Parliament, the Lords would communicate it to the Commons, and consider of it in due Time.

The Commons sent up an Ordinance as a Security to the City for the late Loan of 60,000 *l.* at 8 *l. per Cent.* the Principal to be repaid out of the first Monies to be raised by the Weekly Assessment, now forthwith to be laid as well on the rest of the Kingdom as on the City of *London*. Agreed to by the Lords; and particular Commissioners were named and appointed to go down into the several Counties, to see this extraordinary Tax levied, and the Ordinance for it duly executed, which amounted, according to an Historian of that Age, to 33,580 *l.* a Week. [a]

Notwithstanding the King's Answer to the Parliament's Petition about putting off the Assizes, they concluded, That the Oath the Judges had taken to obey the King's Mandates, and that they might be prejudiced in obeying the Parliament, were no Reasons for holding the Assizes in these Times; when the Power of the Sword was so prevailing, that the public Justice of the Kingdom could not be administered in an equal and indifferent Way: They therefore ordained, That the several Judges and Justices of Assize of the several Courts, *&c.* should forbear to execute any Commissions of Assize this *Lent* Vacation, as they would answer the Contempt thereof at their Peril.

The Parliament forbid the Judges to go their Circuits.

[a] Sir *George Wharton*'s Chronology.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

The last Thing that both Houses agreed upon, as this Day, was the naming and appointing Commissioners to go upon the *Oxford* Treaty. The Lords named the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele*; and the Commons, Sir *William Armyn*, Sir *John Holland*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, and Mr. *Whitlocke*. It was also ordered, That the Speaker of the House of Lords should send the Articles relating to the Cessation, inclosed in a Letter to the Lord *Falkland*, the King's Principal Secretary of State; and likewise to desire a Safe-Conduct from his Majesty, for the Commissioners of both Houses to go to *Oxford* and back again.

Commissioners appointed for the Treaty at *Oxford*.

An Ordinance of Parliament was now made for fortifying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and the Borough of *Southwark*, and the stopping up all High-ways and Bye-ways leading to them, *&c.*

March 2. The neighbouring Counties associating with one another against the King, was much encouraged by the Parliament. The King did all he could to prevent it, by Proclamations, *&c.* and, this Day, one of them was sent up to the Lords by the Commons, with the latter's Resolutions and Votes upon it; to which they desired the Lords Concurrence: A Copy of which we think proper to insert, as a Specimen of many more, in the *Journals*, of the same Kind.

By the KING.

His MAJESTY's PROCLAMATION, *forbidding all his loving Subjects of the Counties of* Kent, Surrey, Sussex, *and* Hampshire, *to raise any Forces without his Majesty's Consent, or to enter into any Association or Protestation for the Assistance of the Rebellion against his Majesty.*

The King's Proclamation against the Associations in Favour of the Parliament.

'WHereas we have been informed of certain Propositions agreed upon by some seditious 'Persons of our several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, '*Sussex*, and *Hampshire*, for an Association betwixt 'the said Counties, to raise an Army of 3000 Foot 'and

'and 300 Horſe, and great Sums of Money for the 'Maintenance thereof, and an Invitation to our good 'Subjects of thoſe Counties, to enter into a Prote- 'ſtation to aſſiſt them in this odious and unnatural 'Rebellion: We do hereby declare, for the Satisfac- 'tion of all our loving Subjects of thoſe Counties, 'and that they may not be ſeduced from their Obe- 'dience by the Cunning and Subtilty of thoſe Men, 'That the Entry into ſuch an Aſſociation and Pro- 'teſtation, and raiſing of Men, or contributing Mo- 'ney unto the ſame, is an Act of High Treaſon, 'and an Endeavour to take away our Life from us: 'And we do therefore ſtraitly charge and command 'all our loving Subjects whatſoever, upon their Al- 'legiance, not to enter into any ſuch Aſſociation or 'Proteſtation; and that ſuch as, by Colour of ſuch 'Authority, have aſſembled together, do immedi- 'ately diſband, and repair to their Houſes. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'And we do, once more, renew our Offer of a 'free and gracious Pardon to all our Subjects of our 'ſaid four ſeveral Counties, excepting thoſe whom 'we before excepted in our ſeveral Proclamations 'concerning thoſe our Counties; againſt all which 'we ſhall proceed according to the Rules of the 'Law, as againſt Perſons guilty of High Treaſon; 'and whom we do hereby require all our Officers 'and Miniſters of Juſtice, and all our loving Sub- 'jects whatſoever, to apprehend, and cauſe to be 'kept in ſafe Cuſtody.

'And our expreſs Pleaſure is, and we do hereby 'will and command all the ſeveral Tenants of the 'Perſons excepted in our Proclamation for thoſe 'four Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Suſſex*, and *Hamp- 'ſhire*, and all other Perſons who are any ways in- 'debted unto them, and all the Tenants to any 'other Perſon of any of the ſaid Counties who is 'now in actual and open Rebellion againſt us, or 'who, after the publiſhing of this our Proclamation, 'ſhall contribute to the Maintenance of the Armies 'now in Rebellion againſt us, under the Conduct 'of *Robert* Earl of *Eſſex*, or of any other Perſon or 'Perſons, or that ſhall join in any ſuch traiterous

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'Association or Proteſtation, That they forbear to 'pay any Rents or Debts due to the ſaid ſeveral Per- 'ſons, but detain the ſame in their Hands towards 'the Maintenance of the Peace of thoſe Counties, 'and the Reparation of ſuch Men who have ſuf- 'fered by the Violence of others.

'And if any Soldier or Soldiers, now under Com- 'mand againſt us in either of our ſaid Counties, 'ſhall, within ſix Days after the publiſhing of this 'our Proclamation, apprehend and bring before us, 'or any Officers of our Army, or any other our 'Miniſters of Juſtice, ſo that the Perſon apprehended 'be kept in ſafe Cuſtody, the Bodies of any of the 'Perſons ſo excepted by us, or of any of the Com- 'manders or Officers now in Rebellion againſt us, 'in any of the ſaid four Counties, ſuch Soldiers, be- 'ſides their Pardons, ſhall receive ſuch liberal Re- 'wards, by Penſions or otherwiſe, as their ſeveral 'Services, in reſpect of the Qualities of the Perſons 'ſo apprehended, ſhall deſerve.

'And if any Commander or Officer, except the 'Perſon ſo excepted, now in Rebellion againſt us, 'in any of the ſaid four Counties, ſhall, within five 'Days after this our Proclamation publiſhed, being 'convinced in his Conſcience of his damnable Of- 'fence againſt God and us, in aſſiſting this odious 'Rebellion, return to his Allegiance, and repair to 'our Army, and commit no hoſtile Act in the mean 'while againſt us, we ſhall not only pardon him, but 'ſo far employ him as his Quality and Demeanor 'ſhall deſerve.

'And we do hereby require all our loving Sub- 'jects, of what Degree or Quality ſoever, within 'our ſaid four ſeveral Counties, upon their Allegi- 'ance, and as they tender the Cauſe of God, (the 'Proteſtant Religion being invaded and threatened 'to be rooted up by Anabaptiſts, Browniſts, and 'Atheiſts) of us and our Poſterity, (our Life being 'ſought after in this Rebellion) and of themſelves, '(the Law and Liberty of the Subject being in ap- 'parent Hazard to be ſubjected to an arbitrary law- 'leſs Power of a few ſchiſmatical, factious, and am-

'bitious

'bitious Perſons) to aſſiſt us in Perſon, or with the 'Loan of Money, Plate, and Horſes, in this our pre- 'ſent great Neceſſity. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'And having ſaid thus much out of our tender 'Regard of our Subjects of thoſe our Counties, if 'they ſhall henceforward be guilty of the Premiſes; 'and ſhall, either by Loan or Contribution, aſſiſt 'the ſaid Army of Rebels, or aſſemble and muſter 'themſelves in Arms, without Authority derived 'from us under our Hand; or ſhall enter into any 'Oath of Aſſociation for oppoſing us and our Army, 'and ſo compel us to ſend Part of our Forces thither 'to reduce them to their Obedience, they muſt an- 'ſwer to God and their Country for the Miſeries 'that muſt follow.

'And our Pleaſure is, That this our Proclamation 'be read in all the Pariſh Churches and Chapels in 'the ſaid four ſeveral Counties.

Given at our Court at Oxford, *this ſixteenth Day of* February, *in the eighteenth Year of our Reign.*

This Proclamation being read, the Houſe of Commons deſired their Lordſhips Concurrence in the following Votes:

Votes of the Commons thereupon.

1. 'That in this Proclamation, prohibiting the Aſſociation of divers Counties, and the Contributions to the Army under the Earl of *Eſſex*, there are contained divers falſe and ſcandalous Charges upon the Proceedings of Parliament; and that it is Treaſon to the Commonwealth in thoſe that adviſed his Majeſty to the ſetting forth of this Proclamation; and likewiſe in all ſuch as ſhall publiſh the ſame, or act any thing upon it; and that the Houſes will proceed againſt them according to Law.

2. 'That whoſoever did adviſe the ſetting forth of this Proclamation, did thereby expreſs a malicious Intention to hinder the Treaty, and the happy Peace and Union to be hoped from thence, between the King and the People.

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

3. 'That these several Counties of *Kent*, *Surrey*, *Sussex*, *Hampshire*, or any other Counties, notwithstanding any thing in this Proclamation, may proceed to associate themselves.

4. 'That the Lords be moved that a Committee be nominated of some Members of both Houses, for drawing a Declaration for vindicating the Proceedings of Parliament from the Scandals in this Proclamation, and upon the other Matters contained in these Votes.'

The House of Commons also desired the Time might be taken Notice of, in the Declaration, when this Proclamation was made; which was presently after the King had sent a Message to both Houses, desiring a Treaty and Cessation of Arms, that so all Differences might be settled betwixt his Majesty and the Parliament.

To all which the Lords agree.

The Lords concurred with the House of Commons in all the aforesaid Votes, and nominated the Earls of *Northumberland* [a], *Pembroke* [b], *Holland* [c], *Warwick* [d], and *Bolingbroke* [e], and the Lord Viscount *Say* and *Sele* [f], to join with a proportionable Number of the House of Commons to draw up the said Declaration.

March 6. This Day the Lords received an Answer from the King to their Articles of Cessation, which was as follows:

The King's Articles of Cessation.

'HIS Majesty hoped the Treaty would have been begun, and the Cessation agreed on long since; and that much might, in this Time, have been concluded in order to the Peace and Happiness of the Kingdom; but since, in almost a Month (for his Majesty's Propositions were made on the third of *February*, and he heard not since from both Houses till the first of *March*) no Consent hath been yielded to it, he conceives the Cessation cannot begin so soon as the fourth of this Month; by which Time, though his Majesty uses no Delay in making his Answer) the same can hardly

[a] *Algernon Piercy.*—[b] *Philip Herbert.*—[c] *Henry Rich.*—[d] *Robert Rich.*—[e] *Oliver St. John.*—[f] *William Fiennes.*

'hardly be returned to them; and many of the Ar- An. 18. Car. I.
'ticles now presented to him from both Houses con- 1642.
'cerning the Cessation, are so strict, that such of March.
'his good Subjects, who are not of his Army (and
'for whom, generally, he shall always have a prin-
'cipal, just, and compassionate Regard) receive not
'any Benefit, or are restored to any Liberty there-
'by, which his Majesty shall ever insist upon, (when
'in Matters meerly concerning himself, he may
'descend to easier Conditions) and which he hath
'returned with such Alterations, as he doubts not
'both his Houses will consent to; and do sufficient-
'ly manifest how sollicitous his Majesty is for the
'Good of his People, and how desirous he is that,
'in this unnatural Contention, no more Blood of
'his Subjects may be spilt, (upon which he looks
'with much Grief, Compassion, and Tenderness
'of Heart) even of those who have lifted up their
'Hands against him: And his Majesty therefore de-
'sires (against which he can imagine no Objection
'can be made) That the Cessation may begin upon
'the twelfth of this Month, or sooner, if the Con-
'ditions of the Cessation shall be sooner agreed on,
'and is willing the same shall continue for twenty
'Days; in which Time he hopes by the Treaty,
'and a clear Understanding of each other, a full
'Peace and Happiness may be established through-
'out the Kingdom. And, during that Time, his
'Majesty is willing that neither Side shall be bound
'or limited by this Cessation in any otherwise, or to
'any other Purpose, than is hereafter expressed.

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition,
'Money, Bullion, and Victuals, passing for the
'Use of either Army, without a Pass or Safe-Con-
'duct from the Generals of each Army, may be
'stayed and seized on, as if no Cessation was agreed
'on at all.

II. 'That all Officers and Soldiers of either Ar-
'my, passing without such Licence or Safe-Conduct
'as aforesaid, may be apprehended and detained,
'as if no such Cessation was agreed on at all: And

'that

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'that all Manner of Perſons, his Majeſty's Subjects, 'of what Quality or Condition ſoever (except Of- 'ficers and Soldiers of either Army) ſhall paſs to 'and from the Cities of *Oxford* and *London*, and 'back again at their Pleaſures, during this Ceſſation; 'as likewiſe to and from any other Parts of his Ma- 'jeſty's Dominions, without any Search, Stay, or 'Impriſonment of their Perſons, or Seizure and De- 'tention of their Goods or Eſtates; and that all 'Manner of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce be 'free and open between all his Majeſty's Subjects, 'excepting as aforeſaid, between the Officers and 'Soldiers of either Army; or for Arms, Ammuni- 'tion, Money, Bullion, or Victuals, for the Uſe 'of either Army, without a Paſs or Safe-Conduct 'as aforeſaid; which may be a good Beginning to 'renew the Trade and Correſpondence of the King- 'dom, and whereby his good Subjects may be re- 'ſtored to the Liberty and Freedom they were born 'to, and have ſo happily enjoyed till theſe miſerable 'Diſtractions; and which, even during this War, 'his Majeſty hath, to his utmoſt, laboured to pre- 'ſerve; opening the Way, by moſt ſtrict Proclama- 'tions, to the Paſſage of all Commodities, even to 'the City of *London* itſelf.

III. 'That his Majeſty's Forces in *Oxfordſhire* 'ſhall advance no nearer to *Windſor* than *Wheatley*; 'and, in *Buckinghamſhire*, no nearer to *Ayleſbury* 'than *Brill*; and that in *Berkſhire*, the Forces reſpec- 'tively ſhall not advance nearer the one to the other 'than they ſhall be at the Day to be agreed upon for 'the Ceſſation to begin; and that the Forces of 'the other Army in *Oxfordſhire*, ſhall advance no 'nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and thoſe in *Buck- 'inghamſhire* no nearer to *Oxford* than *Ayleſbury*; 'and that the Forces of neither Army ſhall advance 'their Quarters nearer to each other than they ſhall 'be upon the Day agreed on for the Ceſſation to be- 'gin, otherwiſe than in Paſſage and Communication 'between their ſeveral Quarters reſpectively, with- 'out any Acts of Hoſtility to each other; but may

'en-

'enlarge themſelves within their own Quarters re- An. 18. Car. I.
'ſpectively, as they ſhall find convenient. 1642.

March.

IV. 'That the Forces of either Army in *Glou-*
'*ceſterſhire*, *Wiltſhire*, and *Wales*, as likewiſe in the
'Cities of *Glouceſter* and *Briſtol*, and the Caſtle and
'Town of *Berkley*, ſhall be guided by the Rule ex-
'preſs'd in the latter Part of the precedent Article.

V. 'That in Caſe it be pretended on either Side,
'That the Ceſſation is violated, no Act of Hoſtility
'is immediately to follow; but firſt the Party com-
'plaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on
'the other Side, and to allow three Days, after
'Notice, for Satisfaction; and in Caſe Satisfaction
'be not given or accepted, then five Days Notice to
'be given before Hoſtility begin: And the like to
'be obſerved in the remoter Armies by the Com-
'manders in Chief.

VI. 'That all other Forces in the Kingdom of
'*England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before men-
'tioned, ſhall remain in the ſame Quarters and
'Places, as they are at the Time of publiſhing this
'Ceſſation, otherwiſe than in Paſſage and Commu-
'nication between their ſeveral Quarters, as is men-
'tioned in the latter Part of the third Article: And
'that this Ceſſation ſhall not extend to reſtrain the
'ſetting forth, or employing, any Ships for the De-
'fence of his Majeſty's Dominions; provided that
'his Majeſty be firſt acquainted with the Particu-
'lars, and that ſuch Ships as ſhall be ſet forth be
'commanded by ſuch Perſons as his Majeſty ſhall
'approve of.

Laſtly, 'That, during the Ceſſation, none of his
'Majeſty's Subjects be impriſoned, otherwiſe than
'according to the known Laws of the Land; and
'that there ſhall be no Plundering or Violence offer-
'ed to any of his Subjects. And his Majeſty is
'very willing, if there be any Scruples made con-
'cerning theſe Propoſitions and Circumſtances of
'the Ceſſation, that the Committee for the Treaty,
'nevertheleſs, may immediately come hither, and
'ſo all Matters concerning the Ceſſation may be
'here ſettled by him.'

At

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

His Majesty grants a Safe-Conduct to all the Parliament's Commissioners, except the Lord *Say*.

At the same Time came a Letter of Safe-Conduct for all the Parliament's Commissioners, except the Lord *Say*. His Majesty's Reasons for objecting to the last were, 'That his Lordship was excepted against, by Name, in his Proclamation, at *Oxford*, of the third of *November*, and by Writ to the Sheriff proclaimed then in that County; in which his Majesty's Intention is declared to proceed against him as a Person guilty of High Treason; and so falling to be within the Case of Sir *John Evelyn*, who, upon the same Exception, was not admitted to attend his Majesty, with the rest of the Committee, at *Colebrooke*, in *November* last; yet his Majesty did signify, that in Case the House shall think fit to send any other Person in the Place of the Lord *Say*, who is not included in the like Exception, his Majesty hath commanded all his Officers, Soldiers, and other Subjects to suffer him as freely to pass and repass, as if his Name had been particularly comprized in the Safe-Conduct.'

With these Objections to the Lord *Say* came also the following Message relating to the Cessation:

'HIS Majesty is content that his Proposition 'concerning the Magazines, Forts, Ships, 'and Revenue, and the Proposition of both Houses 'for the Disbanding of the Armies, shall be first 'treated of, and agreed of before the proceeding to 'treat upon any of the other Propositions; and that, 'afterward, the second of his Majesty's, and the 'second of theirs, be treated on and agreed of, and 'so on in the same Order; and that, from the Be-'ginning of the Treaty, the Time may not exceed 'twenty Days; in which, he hopes, a full Peace and 'right Understanding may be established throughout 'the Kingdom.'

After the reading of these Matters in the House of Lords, the Lord *Say* stood up and said, That he never heard of this Proclamation before; what he did was in Obedience to the Commands of the Parliament,

liament, for the settling of the County of *Oxford* in Quietness and Security; and if he shall be proclaimed a Person guilty of High Treason, for doing his Duty to the Commands of Parliament, it will be a Case worthy their Lordships Consideration, as a Thing which much concerns the Privileges of Parliament: But, for his Part, rather than the Treaty and Cessation of Arms, for obtaining a happy Peace between the King and Kingdom, should be hindered, he desired the Lords to give him Leave to attend this House, and dispense with his going on the Service. But the Lords, conceiving this Precedent trenched on the essential Proceedings of Parliament, left it freely to the Lord *Say*, either to go or stay as he shall think proper; as in the like Case of Sir *John Evelyn* in the House of Commons. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

Both Houses agreed to appoint a Committee to consider of the King's last Message on the Cessation, and report back what they think fit to be done about it.

March 7. A Message came up from the Commons, with their Thoughts on the King's last Articles for a Cessation, That since the Parliament had, before, sent Committees to consult with the Lord-General about them, they think it fit that the same Committee may be sent again to acquaint him with it, and desire his Advice therein. The Lords *Fielding* and *Hunsdon* were sent to the General for that Purpose. The King's Articles of Cessation sent to the Earl of *Essex*.

March 9. These Lords reported to the House the Effect of their Embassy to the Earl of *Essex*, That he had called a Council of War to his Assistance; and, upon due Consideration of the King's Articles, they offered some Inconveniences which might ensue by accepting the same, which were read *in hæc Verba:*

His Objections to them.

"THAT however any Cautions which his Excellency shall propound by way of Advice concerning the Cessation, as is now by his Majesty

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'fty propounded in theſe Articles may be ſubject to 'Miſinterpretations, as if he were diſaffected to 'Peace; nevertheleſs, in Satisfaction to the Deſire 'of both Houſes, his Excellency offereth unto their 'Conſideration theſe following Inconveniences:

'To the firſt Article theſe Difficulties are pro-'pounded:

1. 'That it cannot poſſibly be known or diſcerned 'what Carriages of Arms, Ammunition, Bullion, 'and Victuals, are intended for the Uſe of the Ar-'my, and which are not; whereby continual Con-'tentions are like to ariſe among the Guards of the 'reſpective Quarters, which will endanger the Vio-'lation of the Ceſſation, and the Breach of this 'Treaty.

2. 'The Words in the laſt Clauſe being ambi-'guous, *The Generals of each Army*, ought to be 'made clearer by this Expreſſion, *The Generals of 'both Armies, as well of his Majeſty's as the Parlia-'ment's Army.*

To the ſecond Article:

'It is ſcarcely diſcernible who is a Soldier, and 'who not; and then he who was a Soldier Yeſter-'day, may, To-day, be caſhier'd to qualify him for 'another Deſign in either Army; and, as this Ar-'ticle lieth, 500 of his Majeſty's Army may be ca-'ſhier'd for the Purpoſe, and ſent into *London*, to be 'in the Head of the Malignant Party: Beſides, if 'they be Soldiers or not Soldiers, the unreſtrained 'Paſſage of all other Perſons muſt, of Neceſſity, in-'fuſe Intelligence and bad Impreſſures in the Minds 'of Men in each Army; and the Paſſage of Com-'modities, which muſt be attended by divers Per-'ſons, will open a Way to the ſame Inconveniences; 'moreover, upon the free Paſſage of Commodities, 'will, of Neceſſity, follow the Importation of Mo-'ney into each Army; which is agreed to be re-'ſtrained by the firſt Article. Furthermore, in the 'Paſſage of Carriages, unſearched, by Water or 'Land, all Manner of warlike Proviſions and con-'traband Goods may be pack'd up and carried into 'each Army, as ſoon as the Carriages, who pre-

'tend

'tend to go to another Place, be paſt the Guards of the reſpective Quarters: Neither can the Search of Goods and Perſons be made without great Diſputes and Quarrels, whereby daily Breaches and Interruptions of the Ceſſation are to be expected. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'In Conſideration of which Premiſes, it will be 'ſafer for the Subjects to reſtrain the Paſſage of 'Commodities for a ſmall Time; which, being but 'twenty Days at the moſt, cannot be of any great 'Prejudice.

'To the third Article:

'It is ſaid that the Clauſe of the Communication, 'betwixt the ſeveral Quarters reſpectively, admits 'of ſo great a Latitude, that thereby the Forces of '*Cornwall* and *Newcaſtle* may be drawn together 'without Violation of the Ceſſation.

'To the laſt Article:

'It is ſaid that the former Part of this Article, 'prohibiting to impriſon any Subject otherwiſe than 'by the known Laws of the Land, doth contradict 'the ſecond Article, which giveth Licence to appre-'hend and detain Soldiers that have no Safe-Conduct 'by Law of War.

'For the latter Part of this Article it is requiſite 'to explain it thus, *That no Violence ſhall be offered 'to any Subject, unleſs it be in Caſe of Diſobedience to 'the Order of one or both Houſes of Parliament.*'

A Meſſage was ſent to the Houſe of Commons by Sir *Robert Rich* and Mr. *Page*, to communicate this Advice of the Lord-General to them, and to deſire that the ſelect Committees of both Houſes, formerly appointed to conſider of the King's Anſwer touching the Articles of the Ceſſation of Arms, may meet this Afternoon at Two o'Clock, and take this Paper, ſent from my Lord-General, into Conſideration; and prepare what they conceive fit to be done thereupon, and offer the ſame to the Conſideration of both Houſes.

But whilſt theſe Affairs, tending towards Peace, were in Agitation, both Sides were watchful to take Ad-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

Advantage of each other, before the Ceſſation took Place, the Spring being now advanced, and the Seaſon fit for Action. Accordingly

A Meſſage was, this Day, brought from the Commons, deſiring a preſent Conference, touching ſome Intelligence they had received from their Lord-General; which was agreed to.

The Commons receive Advice of Prince *Rupert*'s intending to aſſault *Briſtol*.

The Speaker reported, 'That, at this Conference, the Houſe of Commons acquainted their Lordſhips with Letters received from Sir *Robert Cook*, to let them know that Prince *Rupert* is within four Miles of *Briſtol*, and intends to aſſault that City: Upon this the Lord-General intends, To-morrow, to march out from *Windſor* with the whole Army; but deſires there might be ſome Courſe taken to furniſh and ſupply Money and Victuals; for the effecting hereof the Houſe of Commons have made ſome Votes, wherein they deſire their Lordſhips Concurrence.

The Votes were read as follow:

1. 'That this Houſe doth approve of the Lord-General's Reſolutions to march, upon Information that the King's Forces are in Motion; and that Thanks be given unto him for his Care of the Safety of the Kingdom.

2. 'That the Lord Mayor be deſired, that a Common Council be called to meet To-morrow at Ten o'Clock; and that a Committee of both Houſes may go thither; and that a Supply of Money, and other Aſſiſtance, may be propounded and deſired for the important Service of the Army now to march.'

Both theſe Votes were agreed to by the Lords.

Votes of both Houſes in Conſequence thereof.

Next it was reported, 'That the Houſe of Commons have received ſome Letters from the *North*, by which it ſeems there is ſome Difference amongſt the Officers which command in Chief there; whereupon the Houſe of Commons have paſſed ſome Votes, wherein they deſire their Lordſhips Concurrence, *viz.*

1. 'That Letters be ſent to the Lord-Lieutenants and Deputy-Lieutenants of the Counties of *Lincoln*, *Not-*

Nottingham, and *Derby*, to send what Forces they can, with all convenient Speed, to the Lord *Fairfax*. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

2. 'That the Lord *Fairfax* shall be desired to go in Person, if he can, with the best Strength he hath, to the Aid of Captain *Hotham*, in the East-Riding of the County of *York*; if not, to send 1000 Foot at least, or more, if he can spare them, to oppose the Army under the Command of the Earl of *Newcastle*; and that the Committee for the Safety of the Kingdom do prepare these Letters.'

The Lords agreed to both these Votes also.

March 10. The Lords were informed of a Report that some Ships, set out by the Parliament, had shot at the House where the Queen lodged, after she had landed at *Bridlington*, in *Yorkshire*, and had killed a Man very near her Majesty. The Queen, on her Return to *England*, landing at *Bridlington*, the Parliament's Ships fire upon her Lodgings.

Lord *Clarendon* gives us the following Particulars of this Affair: 'About the Middle of *February* the Queen took Shipping from *Holland*, in a *Dutch* Man of War, assigned by the Prince of *Orange*, with others for her Convoy, and arrived safely in *Bridlington* Bay, upon the Coast of *Yorkshire*; where she had the Patience to stay on Shipboard, at Anchor, the Space of two Days, till the Earl of *Newcastle* had Notice to draw such Part of his Forces that Way, as might secure her Landing, and wait on her to *York*; which he no sooner did, (and he did it with all imaginable Expedition) but her Majesty came on Shore; and, for the present, was pleased to refresh herself in a convenient House upon the very Key, where all Accommodations were made for her Reception; there being many Things of Moment to be unshipped before she could reasonably enter upon her Journey towards *York*. . . . . .

'The second Day after the Queen's Landing, *Batten*, Vice-Admiral to the Earl of *Warwick*, (who had waited to intercept her Passage) with four of the King's Ships, arrived in *Bridlington* Road; and, finding that her Majesty was landed, and that she lodged

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March. lodged upon the Key, bringing his Ships to the neareſt Diſtance, being very early in the Morning, diſcharged above 100 Cannon, (whereof many were laden with Croſs-bar Shot, for the Space of two Hours upon the Houſe where her Majeſty was lodged; whereupon ſhe was forced out of her Bed, ſome of the Shot making Way through her own Chamber, and to ſhelter herſelf under a Bank in the open Fields; which barbarous and treaſonable Act, ſays his Lordſhip, was ſo much the more odious, in that the Parliament never ſo far took Notice of it as to diſavow it.'

This laſt Circumſtance is confirmed by the *Lords Journals*, in which we find, That though that Houſe, upon Information of the above Report, ordered, That the Earl of *Warwick* be deſired to examine the Truth of this Buſineſs, and certify it to their Houſe, when their Lordſhips would take it into further Conſideration; yet nothing more was done upon it: But we are told in the *Commons Journals*, That it being ſuſpected the Ships which brought over the Queen, then lying before *Bridlington*, had ſome Deſign upon *Hull*, a Letter was ordered to be ſent to the Earl of *Warwick* to ſend ſome Ships from his Squadron, which might prevent any Miſchief from that Quarter. ——— Her Majeſty ſhortly after removed to *York*, where ſhe had been many Weeks expected, as appears by ſome Paſſages in the laſt Letter from the Lord *Fairfax* to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons.

Her Majeſty arrives at *York*.

Both Houſes were employed ſeveral Days in framing, a-new, their Articles of Ceſſation, on the Military Plan laid down by the Earl of *Eſſex* and his chief Officers, and many Alterations and Emendations were made in them.

March 14. The Commons, at a Conference this Day, acquainted the Lords with divers Letters they had received from *Briſtol*, concerning a bloody Maſſacre, as it is termed, intended to have been executed

ecuted in that City. The Letters were read, but are not entered; upon Conſideration thereof, the Commons made the following Votes: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

1. 'That a Declaration might paſs from both Houſes, to ſet forth this Conſpiracy to the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That an Ordinance might paſs for the ſeizing the Eſtates of all the Conſpirators to be employed for the Maintenance of the War; and that they may be proceeded againſt, by Direction of the Lord-General, according to the Law of Arms.

3. 'The next Lord's Day to be appointed for giving public Thanks in the City, and another Day throughout the whole Kingdom.'

The Lords agreed to theſe Votes, and a Committee of both Houſes was appointed to draw up a Declaration of the Fact, to be printed and publiſhed. A Letter of Thanks was alſo ordered to be ſent down to *Briſtol*, to the Mayor, Aldermen, and Soldiery there, for their careful Service in this Buſineſs.

It was not untill this Day, (*March* 17) after many Meſſages and Conferences between the Houſes, and ſome Stiffneſs ſhewn on both Sides, that the Articles for a Ceſſation were wholly finiſhed and thoroughly agreed to by them. They were then ordered to be ſent to the King by their Commiſſioners, with full Inſtructions how to act in this Treaty. Theſe two Inſtruments are of too much Significancy in theſe Enquiries to be omitted. And, firſt, we ſhall give the Articles for a Ceſſation:

The Parliament's Articles for a Ceſſation, as alter'd by Advice of the Earl of *Eſſex*.

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, being ſtill carried on with a vehement Deſire of Peace, that ſo the Kingdom may ſpeedily be freed from the Deſolation and Deſtruction wherewith it is like to be overwhelmed if the War ſhould continue, have, with as much Expedition as they could, conſider'd of the Articles of Ceſſation, with thoſe Alterations and Additions

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'offered by his Majeſty, unto which they are ready 'to agree in ſuch Manner as is expreſſed in theſe 'enſuing Articles, *viz.*

I. 'That all Manner of Arms, Ammunition, 'Victual, Money, Bullion, and all other Commo- 'dities, paſſing without a Safe-Conduct from the 'Generals of both Armies, as well of his Maje- 'ſty's as of the Armies raiſed by the Parliament, 'may be ſtayed and ſeized on, as if no ſuch Ceſſa- 'tion were agreed on at all.

II. 'That all Manner of Perſons, paſſing with- 'out ſuch a Safe-Conduct as is mentioned in the 'Article next going before, ſhall be apprehended 'and detained, as if no ſuch Ceſſation were agreed 'on at all.

III. 'That his Majeſty's Forces in *Oxfordſhire* 'ſhall advance no nearer to *Windſor* than *Wheatley*; 'and, in *Buckinghamſhire*, no nearer to *Ayleſbury* 'than *Brill*; and that, in *Berkſhire*, the Forces re- 'ſpectively ſhall not advance nearer the one to the 'other than they ſhall be at the Day to be agreed 'on for the Ceſſation to begin: And that the Forces 'of the other Army, raiſed by the Parliament, ſhall 'advance no nearer to *Oxford* than *Henley*, and 'thoſe in *Buckinghamſhire* no nearer to *Oxford* than '*Ayleſbury*; and that the Forces of neither Army 'ſhall advance their Quarters nearer to each other 'than they ſhall be upon the Day agreed on for the 'Ceſſation to begin.

IV. 'That the Forces of either Army in *Glou- 'ceſterſhire*, *Wilts*, and *Wales*, as likewiſe in the 'Cities of *Gloucester* and *Briſtol*, and the Caſtle and 'Town of *Berkley*, ſhall be guided by the Rule 'expreſſed in the latter Part of the preceding Ar- 'ticle.

V. 'That in Caſe it be pretended on either Side, 'that the Ceſſation is violated, no Act of Hoſtility 'is immediately to follow; but, firſt, the Party 'complaining is to acquaint the Lord-General on 'the other Side, and to allow three Days after No- 'tice given for Satisfaction; and in Caſe Satisfac-

'tion

'tion be not given or accepted, then five Days No- An. 18 Car. I.
'tice to be given before Hoſtilities begin; and the 1642.
'like to be obſerved in the remoter Armies by the March.
'Commanders in Chief.

VI. 'That all other Forces in the Kingdom of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, not before mentioned, ſhall remain in the ſame Quarters and Places as they are at the Time of the publiſhing of this Ceſſation, and under the ſame Conditions as are mentioned in the Articles before: And that this Ceſſation ſhall not extend to reſtrain the ſetting forth, or employing of, any Ships for the Defence of his Majeſty's Dominions.

VII. 'That as ſoon as his Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to diſband the Armies, which both Houſes earneſtly deſire may be ſpeedily effected, and to diſarm the Papiſts according to Law; the Subjects may then enjoy the Benefit of Peace in the Liberty of their Perſons, Goods, and Freedom of Trade; in the mean Time, the Generals and Commanders of the Armies of both Sides ſhall be enjoined to keep the Soldiers from plundering; which the two Houſes of Parliament have ever diſliked and forbidden.

'And for the ſpeedy ſettling of this ſo much deſired Peace, they have thought good to ſend their Committees with Inſtructions, That, if his Majeſty be pleaſed to conſent to a Ceſſation, ſo limited and qualified, they may forthwith proceed to treat upon the Propoſitions; and becauſe the Time is ſo far elapſed in theſe Preparations, they deſire the Ceſſation may begin the 25th of this inſtant *March*, or ſooner if it may be; and, in the mean Time, Notice to be given to all the Forces in the ſeveral and remote Parts; and the Commanders, Officers, and Soldiers are enjoined to obſerve this Ceſſation accordingly; to which they hope and pray that God will give ſuch a Bleſſing, that thereupon Peace, Safety, and Happineſs may be produced and confirmed to his Majeſty and all his People.'

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

INSTRUCTIONS, *agreed on by the* LORDS *and* COMMONS, *in Parliament, for* Algernoon *Earl of* Northumberland, William *Lord Viſcount* Say *and* Sele, William Pierpoint, *Eſq*; *Sir* William Armyn, *Bart. Sir* John Holland, *Bart. and* Bulſtrode Whitlocke, *Eſq*; *Committees appointed to attend his Majeſty upon the Propoſitions made by his Majeſty to the Parliament, and likewiſe upon the other Propoſitions humbly preſented from them to his Majeſty.*

Their Inſtructions to the Committee appointed to go to *Oxford*.

I. 'YOU ſhall preſent to his Majeſty the Articles agreed on for the Ceſſation of Arms, 'humbly deſiring his Majeſty to ratify and confirm 'the ſame under the Great Seal; which being ob- 'tained, you are to ſend it up to the Parliament 'with all poſſible Speed; and ſhall likewiſe beſeech 'the King to diſpatch away Meſſengers to the Gene- 'rals, Commanders, and Soldiers of all his Armies 'and Forces, with a ſtrict Command and Injunc- 'tion, that they obſerve thoſe Articles of Ceſſation, 'according as they are agreed upon; as the two 'Houſes likewiſe intend to give the like Direction 'to the Lord-General of the Armies raiſed for 'their Defence.

II. 'After his Majeſty hath declared and ratified 'the Ceſſation, you ſhall then proceed to the Treaty, 'beginning with the firſt Propoſition on his Maje- 'ſty's Behalf, concerning his Majeſty's own Reve- 'nue, his Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, 'and thereunto make this Anſwer:

'You ſhall declare, That the two Houſes of Par- 'liament have not made Uſe of his Majeſty's own 'Revenue, but in a very ſmall Proportion; which, 'for a good Part, hath been employed in the Main- 'tenance of his Majeſty's Children, according to 'the Allowance eſtabliſhed by himſelf; and they 'will ſatisfy what ſhall remain due to his Majeſty 'of thoſe Sums received out of his Majeſty's own 'Revenues, and ſhall leave the ſame to his Ma- 'jeſty for the Time to come. And you like- 'wiſe

'wise shall propound to his Majesty, That he will restore what hath been taken for his Use, upon any of the Bills assigned to other Purposes by several Acts of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for the War of *Ireland*: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'That they will remove the Garrisons out of all 'Towns and Forts in their Hands, wherein there 'were no Garrisons before these Troubles, and 'slight all Fortifications made since that Time; 'which Towns and Forts, it is to be agreed on both 'Parts, shall continue in the same Condition they 'were in before; and that those Garrisons shall not 'be renewed, nor the Fortifications repaired, without Consent of his Majesty, and both Houses of 'Parliament:

'That for those Towns and Forts which are 'within the Jurisdiction of the *Cinque-Ports*, they 'shall be delivered up into the Hands of such a Noble 'Person as his Majesty shall appoint to be Warden 'of the *Cinque-Ports*, being such a one as they shall 'confide in:

'That the Town of *Portsmouth* shall be reduced 'to the Number of the Garrison, as was at the 'Time when the Lords and Commons undertook 'the Custody thereof: And such other Forts, 'Castles, and Towns as were formerly kept by 'Garrisons, as have been taken by them into their 'Care and Custody since the Beginning of these 'Troubles, shall be reduced to such Proportion of 'Garrison as they had in the Year 1636, and 'shall be so continued: And that all the said Towns, 'Forts, and Castles shall be delivered up into the 'Hands of such Persons of Quality and Trust, to 'be likewise nominated by his Majesty, as the two 'Houses shall confide in:

'That the Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, and all 'Governors and Commanders of Towns, Castles, 'and Forts, shall keep the same Towns, Castles, 'and Forts respectively, for the Service of his Majesty and the Safety of the Kingdom; and that 'they shall not admit into any of them any foreign 'Forces raised without his Majesty's Authority and

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'Consent of the two Houſes of Parliament; and they 'ſhall uſe their uttermoſt Endeavours to ſuppreſs 'all Forces whatſoever, raiſed without ſuch Authority and Conſent; and they ſhall ſeize all 'Arms and Ammunition provided for any ſuch 'Forces:

'That the Ships ſhall be delivered into the 'Charge of ſuch a Noble Perſon as his Majeſty ſhall 'nominate to be Lord High-Admiral of *England*, 'and the two Houſes of Parliament confide in; 'who ſhall receive the ſame Office by Letters Patent *quamdiu bene ſe geſſerit*; and ſhall have 'Power to nominate and appoint all ſubordinate 'Commanders and Officers, and have all other 'Powers appertianing to the Office of High-Admiral; which Ships he ſhall employ for the Defence of the Kingdom againſt all foreign Forces 'whatſoever, and for the Safeguard of Merchants, 'ſecuring of Trade, the guarding of *Ireland*, and 'the intercepting of all Supplies to be carried to 'the Rebels; and ſhall uſe his uttermoſt Endeavour to ſuppreſs all Forces which ſhall be raiſed 'by any Perſon without his Majeſty's Authority, 'and Conſent of the Lords and Commons in Parliament; and ſhall ſeize all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply of any ſuch Forces: 'That all the Arms and Ammunition, taken out 'of his Majeſty's Magazines, which ſhall remain 'in their Hands, ſhall be delivered into his Stores; 'and whatſoever ſhall be wanting, they will, in 'convenient Time, ſupply in Kind, according to 'the Proportions which they have received; and 'that the Perſons, to whoſe Charge thoſe public 'Magazines ſhall be committed, being nominated 'by his Majeſty, ſhall be ſuch as the Lords and 'Commons ſhall confide in. And you ſhall propound to his Majeſty, That he will reſtore all 'ſuch Arms and Ammunition as have been taken 'for his Uſe, from the ſeveral Counties, Cities, 'and Towns.

III. 'To the Propoſition made by the two 'Houſes, concerning the Diſbanding of the Ar-

'mies, you ſhall humbly deſire his Majeſty's An. 18. Car. I.
'ſpeedy and poſitive Anſwer; unto which if he 1642.
'ſhall be pleaſed to give his Aſſent, you ſhall then March.
'beſeech his Majeſty, in the Name of both Houſes,
'that a near Day may be agreed upon for the Diſ-
'banding all the Forces in the remote Parts of
'*Yorkſhire*, and the other *Northern* Counties; as
'alſo in *Lancaſhire*, *Cheſhire*, and in the Domi-
'nion of *Wales*, and in *Cornwall* and *Devonſhire*;
'and they being fully diſbanded, another Day
'may be agreed on for the diſbanding of all
'Forces in *Lincolnſhire*, *Nottinghamſhire*, *Lei-*
'*ceſterſhire*, and all other Places, except at *Oxford*
'and the Quarters thereunto belonging, and *Wind-*
'*ſor* and the Quarters thereunto belonging; and
'that, laſt of all, a ſpeedy Day be appointed for
'the Diſbanding thoſe two Armies at *Oxford* and
'*Windſor*, and all the Forces Members of either of
'them:

'That ſome Officers of both Armies may ſpee-
'dily meet to agree of the Manner of the Diſband-
'ing; and that fit Perſons may be appointed by
'his Majeſty and the Parliament, who may re-
'pair to the ſeveral Armies, and ſee the Diſband-
'ing put in ſpeedy Execution accordingly:

'That his Majeſty do likewiſe remove the Gar-
'riſons out of *Newcaſtle*, and all other Towns,
'Caſtles, and Forts, where any Garriſons have
'been placed by him ſince theſe Troubles; and
'that the Fortifications be likewiſe ſlighted, and
'the Towns and Forts left in ſuch State and Con-
'dition as they were in the Year 1636: And

'That all other Towns, Forts, and Caſtles,
'where there have been formerly Garriſons before
'theſe Troubles, be committed to the Charge of
'ſuch Perſons, to be nominated by his Majeſty,
'as the Parliament ſhall confide in, and under
'ſuch Inſtructions as are formerly mentioned.

IV. 'That if his Majeſty ſhall be pleaſed to aſ-
'ſent to theſe Propoſitions, concerning the Towns,
'Forts, Caſtles, Magazines, and Ships, that then
'his

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'his Majeſty be humbly intreated to name Perſons of Quality to receive the Charge of the ſeveral Offices and Forts, Caſtles and Towns, to be forthwith certified to the two Houſes of Parliament, that thereupon they may expreſs their Confidence in thoſe Perſons, or humbly beſeech his Majeſty to name others; none of which Perſons ſhall be removed during three Years next enſuing, without juſt Cauſe, to be approved by Parliament; and if any be ſo removed, or ſhall die within the ſaid Space, the Perſon to be put into the ſame Office ſhall be ſuch as both Houſes ſhall confide in:

'That all Generals and Commanders in any of the Armies, on either Side, as likewiſe the Lord-Admiral of *England*, the Lord-Warden of the *Cinque-Ports*, all Commanders of any Ships, and Commanders of any Town, Caſtle, or Fort, ſhall take an Oath to obſerve theſe Articles aforementioned; and to uſe their uttermoſt Power to preſerve the true Reformed Proteſtant Religion, and the Peace of the Kingdom, againſt all foreign Force, and all other Forces raiſed without his Majeſty's Authority and Conſent of the two Houſes of Parliament.

V. 'You ſhall move his Majeſty, That, for the better Diſpatch of the Treaty, and the free Intercourſe of Inſtructions and Advertiſements betwixt the two Houſes of Parliament and the Committee, that there may be a free Paſs of Meſſengers to and from the Parliament and the Committees, without Search or Interruption; and his Majeſty's Safe-Conduct to be obtained to that Effect, to ſuch Perſons as are, or ſhall be, appointed for that Service, *viz.* Mr. *John Ruſhworth*, Mr. *Michael Welden*, Mr. *John Corbet* of *Gray's Inn*, and Mr. *James Standiſh*.'

Nothing elſe intervening worth our Notice, we ſhall go on with an Account of the Intelligence ſent from the Commiſſioners, now at *Oxford*, to Parlia-

Parliament. And, this Day, *March* 23, the Lords read a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* in these Words: An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

To the Right Honourable the Earl of *Manchester*, Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*.

My Lord,

AS soon as we came hither, between four and five o'Clock in the Afternoon, we sent to know his Majesty's Pleasure when we should wait on him, who commanded us presently to attend him, which we did in the Garden at Christ-Church; *where I read the Articles for the Cessation, and we humbly presented them to the King, who read the Title of them himself, and said,* There was a Difference in them from the Articles which he sent to both Houses; *and told us,* before he should be many Hours older, he would give his Answer to them; *whereof I shall send your Lordships a speedy and faithful Account, as soon as we shall receive it.* Letters from that Committee.

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 19, 1642.

Most humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

Besides the foregoing, there was another Letter from this Earl, of a later Date, read the same Day, directed as before, and was to this Effect:

My Lord,

THIS Afternoon my Lord Falkland *and Mr. Secretary* Nicholas *came to us, with a Message from his Majesty, to know* Whether, in case he would not agree to the Articles of Cessation, *in Terminis*, that we had any Commission to proceed in the Treaty upon the Propositions? *I answered,* We had not.

The Council have met often, and sat long, since the Delivery of the Articles of Cessation. Mr.

May

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March. May *came to us from his Majesty, and said he was sent with a Message to both Houses of Parliament; the Contents he was commanded to let us know, which were.* That his Majesty desired free Trade with the Limitations he formerly sent; and that there might be a Cessation by Sea as well as by Land. That, because there might be a Misunderstanding of Expressions we might have Power to treat on the Articles of Cessation: if not, That the Treaty upon the Propositions might go on without a Cessation; and that all Prisoners taken in War, except Officers, might be set at Liberty. *This is the Information he gave us; for the present I have no further Account to give to your Lordship, but that I am*

Your Lordship's

Oxford, March 22, 1642.

Humble Servant,

A. NORTHUMBERLAND.

These Letters being produced at a Conference, they were found to correspond, *verbatim*, with others the Commons had received from their Commissioners at *Oxford*. At this Conference, also, a Letter was read, directed to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, in which was inclosed a Message from the King, to both Houses, concerning the Cessation, dated at *Oxford*, *March* 22, in these Words.

CHARLES *R.*

The King's Exceptions to the Parliament's last Articles of Cessation.

'HIS Majesty hath immediately, upon their Arrival, admitted the Committee sent to him from both Houses of Parliament, (as the Messengers of Peace) to his Royal Presence, and receiv'd the Articles of Cessation brought by them; which are, in Effect, the same his Majesty formerly excepted to, though their Expression in the Preface to these Articles, of their Readiness to agree to those Alterations and Additions offered by

'by his Majesty, in such Manner as is expressed, made him expect to have found, at least, some of the real Alterations and Additions made by him admitted; which he doth not discover. An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

I. 'His Majesty desired, *That Provision might be made, and Licence given to his good Subjects, for their Freedom of Trade, Traffick, and Commerce*, (tho', in Matters which concerned himself more immediately, as in Arms, Ammunition, Money, Bullion, and Victuals for the Use of his Army, and the Passage of all Officers and Soldiers of his Army, he is contented the Restraint should be in such Manner as was proposed) of which his Majesty is so tender, that as he hath provided for the same by his gracious Proclamations, so he doth daily release and discharge such Merchandize and Commodities as are, contrary to those Proclamations, stayed by any of his Majesty's Forces.

'To this Freedom and Liberty of his good Subjects, there is not the least Admission given by these Articles; so that they have not any Ease or Benefit by this Cessation; which his Majesty desires both Houses to consider of; and whether, if his Majesty should take the same Course to stop and interrupt the Trade of the Kingdom, as the other Army doth, a general Loss and Calamity would not seize upon his good Subjects?

II. 'His Majesty, to the End that a full Cessation might be as well at Sea as at Land, and he might be secured that the Ships, proposed to be set forth for the Defence of his Majesty's Dominions, shall be employed only to that End and Purpose, desired, *That they might be put under the Command of Persons to be approved of by his Majesty*; which is not consented to by these Articles; but their former, to which his Majesty excepted, strictly and entirely insisted on; by which (besides that Part of Hostility remains) the Conveying of any Number of Forces from one Part to any other, by that Means, remains free to them.

'III.

An. 18. Car. 1. 1642. March.

III. 'For the Prevention of any Inconveniences 'which might arise upon real Differences, or Mi- 'stakes upon Latitude of Expression; (as if his Ma- 'jesty should now consent to these Articles propo- 'sed, in the Terms proposed, he must confess 'the Army, of which he complains, to be raised by 'the Parliament; and either himself to be no Part 'of the Parliament, or himself to have raised that 'Army) and for Prevention of that Delay which 'he foresaw could not otherwise be avoided, if, 'upon every Difference, the Question must be re- 'mitted to *London*, his Majesty desired, *That the 'Committee*, for whom he then sent a Safe-Conduct, '*might have Liberty to debate any such Difference 'and Expressions, and reconcile the same, that all pos- 'sible Expedition might be used to the main Treaty.*

'In this Point of so high Concernment, no 'Power is given in these Articles; and the Com- 'mittee confessed to his Majesty they have no 'Power given, but are strictly and precisely bound 'to the very Words of the Articles now sent; and 'that before these are consented to by us, they 'cannot enter into any Treaty concerning the other 'Propositions.

'IV. 'His Majesty desired, *That, during the 'Cessation, none of his good Subjects might be im- 'prisoned, otherwise than according to the known Laws 'of the Land.*

'This is in no Degree consented to; but the 'Privilege and Liberty, to which they were born, 'reserved from them till the disbanding of both 'Armies, though they are no Part of either Army; 'and so have no Benefit by this Cessation.

V. 'His Majesty desired, *That, during this Ces- 'sation, there should be no Plundering or Violence 'offered to any of his Subjects.*

'In the Answer to which, his Desire against 'Violence is not at all taken Notice of, nor is his 'Desire against Plundering anywise satisfied; his 'Majesty, not only intending by it the robbing of 'the Subject by the Unruliness of the uncom- 'manded Soldier (which their Clause of requiring

'*the*

'*the Generals and Officers to keep them from it* An. 18. Car. I.
'*seems to imply*; and the Assertion, *That the two* 1642.
'*Houses of Parliament had ever disliked and for-* March.
'*bidden it*, declares plainly to be their only
'Meaning: but particularly the Violence and Plun-
'dering done to his Subjects, by forcibly taking
'away their Goods for not submitting to Impoſi-
'tions and Taxes required from them by Orders or
'Ordinances of one or both Houses of Parliament,
'which are contrary to the known Laws of the
'Land.

VI. 'Besides, that there is no Consent given to
'those Alterations and Additions offered by his
'Majesty, whatsoever is pretended; for where an
'absolute Consent may be supposed, because the
'very Words of his Majesty's Article are wholly
'preserved, yet, by reason of the Relation to some-
'what going before that is varied by them, the Sense
'of those Words is wholly varied too; as in the
'fourth Article, where the Part of the third Article,
'to which that did refer, is wholly left out: So
'that, upon the Matter, all the Propositions made
'by his Majesty, which did not in Terms agree
'with those presented to him, are utterly rejected.

'For these Reasons, and that this Entrance to-
'wards a blessed Peace and Accommodation, which
'hath already filled the Hearts of the Kingdom
'with Joy and Hope, may be improved to the
'wished End, his Majesty desires, That the Com-
'mittee now sent may speedily have Liberty to
'treat, debate, and agree upon the Articles of
'Cessation; in which they and all the World shall
'find that his Majesty is less solicitous for his
'own Dignity and Greatness, than for his Subjects
'Ease and Liberty: And he doubts not, upon such
'a Debate, all Differences concerning the Cessation
'will be easily and speedily agreed upon; and the
'Benefit of a Cessation be continued and confirmed
'to his People by a speedy disbanding of both
'Armies, and a sudden and firm Peace; which his
'Majesty above all Things desires.

'If

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

'If this ſo reaſonable, equal, and juſt Deſire 'of his Majeſty ſhall not be yielded unto, but 'the ſame Articles ſtill inſiſted upon: Though his 'Majeſty, next to Peace, deſires a Ceſſation; yet, 'that the not Agreeing upon the one may not 'deſtroy the Hopes of, nor ſo much as delay, the 'other, he is willing however to treat (even with-'out a Ceſſation, if that be not granted) upon the 'Propoſitions themſelves, in that Order as is agreed 'upon, and deſires the Committee here may be 'enabled to that Effect; in which Treaty he ſhall 'give all his Subjects that Satisfaction, That if 'any Security to enjoy all the Rights, Privileges, 'and Liberties due to them by the Law; or that 'Happineſs in Church and State, which the beſt 'Times have ſeen; with ſuch farther Acts of Grace 'as may agree with his Honour, Juſtice, and Duty 'to his Crown, and as may not render him leſs 'able to protect his Subjects according to his Oath, 'will ſatisfy them, he is confident, in the Mercy 'of God, that no more precious Blood of this 'Nation will be thus miſerably ſpent.'

Reſolutions of both Houſes at a Conference thereupon.

March 24. Another Conference was held about this Affair; the Effect of which was, That the Houſe of Commons communicated to the Lords ſome Reſolutions, which they had made concerning the King's laſt Meſſage; wherein there was an Offer to treat upon the Propoſitions, in caſe the Ceſſation was not agreed on, to which they deſired their Lordſhips Concurrence. The Reſolutions were as follow:

1. 'That the Committee at *Oxford* ſhall have Power to treat and debate with his Majeſty upon the two firſt Propoſitions, according to their Inſtructions, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt of this Meſſage, notwithſtanding that the Ceſſation be not yet agreed upon.

2. 'That the Committee, formerly appointed to prepare the Articles of Ceſſation and Inſtructions for the Committee at *Oxford*, ſhall conſider of an

an Anſwer to be made to his Majeſty's Meſſage this Day received; and likewiſe prepare Reaſons to be ſent to the Committee, for them to preſs the Treaty, and debate the former Articles of Ceſſation; and to ſhew his Majeſty the Grounds why the Houſes cannot depart from thoſe former Articles.' An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March.

For the preſent, they thought proper to ſend the following Meſſage to his Majeſty: and the Additional Inſtructions to their Commiſſioners. And firſt the Meſſage.

May it pleaſe your Majeſty,

'WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament, having received a Meſſage from your Majeſty, in which you are pleaſed to expreſs yourſelf not to be ſatisfied with the Articles of Ceſſation, preſented unto you by our Committee now attending you at *Oxford*, and yet a Signification of your Majeſty's Willingneſs to treat upon the Propoſitions themſelves, even without a Ceſſation; do, with all Humbleneſs, give our Conſent that our Committee ſhall have Power to treat and debate with your Majeſty upon the two firſt Propoſitions according to their Inſtructions, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt of this Meſſage, notwithſtanding that the Ceſſation be not yet agreed upon; that, as much as in us lies, there may be no Delay in the Proceedings for the obtaining of a bleſſed Peace, and the healing up the miſerable Breaches of this diſtracted Kingdom; and do purpoſe to repreſent, very ſpeedily, unto your Majeſty, thoſe juſt Reaſons and Grounds upon which we have found it neceſſary to deſire of your Majeſty a Ceſſation, ſo qualified as that is; whereby we hope you will receive ſuch Satisfaction, as that you will be pleaſed to aſſent unto it; and, being obtained, we aſſure ourſelves it will be moſt effectual to the Safety of the Kingdom; and that Peace, which, with ſo much Zeal and loyal Their Meſſage to the King in conſequence thereof.

'Affec-

An. 18. Car. I. 1642. March. ‘ Affection to your Royal Perſon, and in a deep ‘ Senſe of the bleeding Condition of this poor ‘ Kingdom, we humbly beg of your Majeſty's Juſtice and Goodneſs’

The Additional Inſtructions were as follow :

My Lord [a] and Gentlemen,

And Additional Inſtructions to their Committee. *WHereas, by your former Inſtructions, you are tied up to a Circumſtance of Time, and are not to proceed unto the Treaty upon the Propoſitions, untill the Ceſſation of Arms be firſt agreed upon: You are now authorized and required, as you may perceive by the Votes of both Houſes which you ſhall herewith receive, to treat and debate with his Majeſty upon the two firſt Propoſitions, according to thoſe Inſtructions, for four Days after the Day of the Receipt hereof, notwithſtanding that the Ceſſation be not agreed upon.*

Your Lordſhip's moſt humble Servant,

March 24, 1642. MANCHESTER, *Speaker of the Houſe of Peers* pro Tempore.

Thus ends the legal Year 1642, with a diſtant Proſpect of Peace; but, however pleaſing the Idea of it was to ſome, and we believe much the greater Part of the Kingdom, yet there were not wanting thoſe, who, for their own private Ends, ſpared no Pains to change it into much more Blood and Slaughter than had, hitherto, happened in theſe diſtracted Times. We may imagine that ſuch Members of the Commons, concerned in making an Order of that Houſe, on the twenty-fourth of this Month, to forbid the Tower Guns to be fired on the 27th, the Anniverſary of the King's Acceſſion, under Pretence of the Expence of Powder, and of hinder-

ing

[a] The Reaſon of this Addreſs being *My Lord*, and not *My Lords*, was becauſe the Lord *Say* did not go; and the Houſe, leſt they ſhould be thought to countenance the King's Objection, would not appoint another in his Stead.

ing the great Concourſe of People, were of the latter Sort: And indeed this Order ſeems to have been clandeſtinely obtained; for, the next Day, *March* 25, a Motion being made and the Queſtion put, Whether Liberty ſhould be given to ſpeak againſt the ſaid Order? The Houſe divided, and it was carried in the Affirmative, 61 againſt 56. What the Speeches were, *pro* and *con*, on this Occaſion, we know not; but, ſoon after, another Queſtion was put, Whether the Order made, concerning the firing and diſcharging the Guns of the Tower and Tower-Hill, ſhould be revoked? This alſo paſſed affirmatively by a greater Majority, 75 againſt 57: Whereby the Honour of the Houſe was ſaved againſt a very great Inſtance of ill Manners, or rather Diſloyalty, in thoſe who had procured the above-mentioned Order.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Remarkable Votes as to obſerving the Anniverſary of the King's Acceſſion.

The Tellers on this remarkable Occaſion were, on the firſt Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *Peter Wentworth*, with the Yeas; Sir *Robert Harley* and Sir *Nevile Poole*, with the Noes. And, upon the ſecond Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*, with the Yeas; Sir *Walter Erle* and Mr. *Strode*, with the Noes.

At the Opening of the Year 1643, the Eyes of a bleeding and miſerable Nation were all turned to the Treaty at *Oxford*, but to very little Purpoſe; for, ſo far from any real Advantage being gain'd by it, Matters were left in the ſame, or a worſe Situation than before.

To ſhew how little Deſire many of the Houſe of Commons had to bring this Treaty to a peaceable Concluſion, we ſhall mention the following Inſtances.—When the King deſired the Commiſſioners to get the Time, preſcribed for the Treaty, enlarged, which was voted in the Lower Houſe on the firſt of *April*, it was carried for the Enlargement, by the ſmall Majority of 62 againſt 56. And it being reſolved, on that Vote, to give further Time to *Friday* the ſeventh of *April*, for the Treaty, the Queſtion was again put, Whether that

And Diviſions relating to the Treaty at *Oxford*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April. Day was concluded in this Term? and it paſſed in the Affirmative by yet a ſmaller Majority, 57 againſt 54. Two Days after, *April* 3, another Queſtion was ſtarted, Whether, if the Commiſſioners received no poſitive Anſwer from the King, to the two firſt Propoſitions, by *Friday* Night, they ſhould come away on *Saturday?* The Houſe again divided, when 54 were for the Queſtion, and 41 againſt it. But this laſt Order was, ſoon after, revoked, and the Time enlarged to the *Saturday* following. So that, it is plain, near one Half of the Houſe, then preſent, were for knocking the Treaty down at once; and, 'tis too probable, were really againſt any Treaty at all. It ſhews alſo to what a low Ebb the Houſe of Commons was then reduced, that, even at this critical Conjuncture, ſcarcely one fifth Part of the Members were preſent: The Reaſons for which, being ſet forth in the Beginning of this Volume, we paſs over without further Remark.

We have already given the Initial Forms for the conſtituting this Treaty: What followed, as it takes up many Pages in the *Journals*, and is exactly printed in *Rushworth*'s and *Huſbands*'s *Collections*, and in the Pamphlets publiſhed, both by the King and Parliament, at that Time, we paſs over; and ſhall content ourſelves with the Account of this unſucceſsful Negotiation, as drawn up by thoſe two Contemporary Oppoſites, the Earl of *Clarendon* and Mr. *Whitlocke*; the former of whom was, at this Time, attending the King's Service at *Oxford*; and the other employed, as himſelf tells us, by his Brother-Commiſſioners, in drawing up all their Papers to the King, which were afterwards tranſcrib'd by their Secretaries.——And, firſt, Lord *Clarendon*.

Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of what paſſed between the King and the Commiſſioners there.

WHEN the Treaty was firſt conſented to by the two Houſes, they ordered that it ſhould be upon the firſt Propoſition made by his Majeſty, and the firſt Propoſition made by themſelves; and that thoſe ſhould be firſt concluded on, before they proceeded to treat upon any of the other

other Propositions: So that the Committee, in the first Place, applied themselves to his Majesty, upon his own first Proposition, which was, *That his own Revenue, Magazines, Towns, Forts, and Ships, which had been taken or kept from him by Force, should be forthwith restored to him.* To which the Committee answered, 'That the two Houses had 'made use of his Majesty's own Revenue but in a 'very small Proportion, which in a good Part had 'been employed in the Maintenance of his Chil-'dren, according to the Allowance established by 'himself: And the Houses would satisfy what 'should remain due to his Majesty of those Sums 'which they had received; and would leave the 'same to him for the Time to come. And they 'desired likewise, that his Majesty would restore 'what had been taken for his Use upon any of the 'Bills, assigned to other Purposes by several Acts 'of Parliament, or out of the Provision made for 'the War of *Ireland:* That all the Arms and 'Ammunition, taken out of his Magazines, should 'be delivered into his Stores, and whatsoever should 'be wanting they would supply in Kind, according 'to the Proportions they had received; but they 'proposed the Persons, to whose Charge those public 'Magazines should be committed, being nominated 'by his Majesty, might be such as the two Houses of 'Parliament might confide in; and that his Majesty 'would restore all such Arms and Ammunition, as 'had been taken for his Use, from the several 'Counties, Cities, and Towns.

An. 10. Car. I. 1643. April.

'That the two Houses would remove the Gar-'risons out of all Towns and Forts in their Hands, 'wherein there were no Garrisons before these 'Troubles, and slight all Fortifications made since 'that Time, and those Towns and Forts to con-'tinue in the same Condition they were in before; 'and that those Garrisons should not be renewed, 'or the Fortifications repaired, without Consent 'of his Majesty, and both Houses of Parliament: 'That the Towns and Forts, which were within 'the Jurisdiction of the Cinque-Ports, should be

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'delivered into the Hands of such a Noble Person 'as the King should appoint to be Warden of the 'Cinque-Ports, being such a one as they should 'confide in: That *Portsmouth* should be reduced 'to the Number of the Garrison, as was at that 'Time when the Lords and Commons undertook 'the Custody of it; and that all other Forts, 'Castles, and Towns, in which Garrisons had 'been kept, and had been, since the Beginning of 'these Troubles, taken into their Care and Custo-'dy, should be reduced to the same Establishment 'they had in the Year 1636. and should be so con-'tinued; and that all those Towns, Forts, and 'Castles should be delivered up into the Hands of 'such Persons of Quality and Trust, to be likewise 'nominated by his Majesty, as the two Houses 'should confide in: That the Warden of the Cinque-'Ports, and all Governors and Commanders of 'Towns, Castles, and Forts, should keep the same 'Towns, Castles, and Forts, respectively, for the 'Service of his Majesty, and the Safety of the 'Kingdom; and that they should not admit into 'them any foreign Forces, or any other Forces 'raised without his Majesty's Authority, and Con-'sent of the two Houses of Parliament; and they 'should use their utmost Endeavour to suppress all 'Forces whatsoever raised without such Authority 'and Consent; and they should seize all Arms and 'Ammunition provided for any such Forces.

'They likewise proposed to the King, that he 'would remove the Garrison out of *Newcastle*, 'and all other Towns, Castles, and Forts where 'any Garrisons had been placed by him since these 'Troubles; and that the Fortifications might be 'likewise slighted, and the Towns and Forts left 'in such State as they were in the Year 1636; 'and that all other Towns and Castles in his 'Hands, wherein there had been formerly Garri-'sons, might be committed to such Persons, no-'minated by him, as the Houses should confide 'in, and under such Instructions as were formerly 'mentioned; and that the new Garrisons should

'not

'not be renewed, or the Fortifications repaired, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.
'without the Consent of the King and both Houses
'of Parliament: That the Ships should be deli-
'vered into the Charge of such a Noble Person as
'the King should nominate to be Lord High-Ad-
'miral of *England*, and the two Houses confide
'in; who should receive that Office by Letters
'Patent, *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, and should have
'Power to nominate and appoint all subordinate
'Commanders and Officers, and have all other
'Powers appertaining to the Office of High-Ad-
'miral; which Ships he should employ for the
'Defence of the Kingdom, against all foreign
'Forces whatsoever, and for the Safeguard of
'Merchants, Securing of Trade, the Guarding
'of *Ireland*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies
'to be carried to the Rebels; and should use
'his utmost Endeavours to suppress all Forces
'which should be raised by any Person without his
'Majesty's Authority, and Consent of the Lords
'and Commons in Parliament; and should seize
'all Arms and Ammunition provided for Supply
'of any such Forces.

'To this Answer, by which they required, at least, to go whole Sharers with him in his Sovereignty, the King replied, 'That he knew not
'what Proportion of his Revenue had been made
'Use of by his two Houses, but he had Reason to
'believe, if much of it had not been used, very
'much remained still in their Hands; his whole
'Revenue being so stopped and seized on, by the
'Orders of one or both Houses, even to the taking
'of his Money out of his Exchequer and Mint,
'and Bonds forced from his Cofferer's Clerk, for
'the Provisions of his Household, that very little
'had come to his Use for his own Support; but
'he would be well contented to allow whatsoever
'had been employed in the Maintenance of his
'Children, and to receive the Arrears due to him-
'self, and to be sure of his own for the future.
'He was likewise willing to restore all Monies ta-
'ken for his Use, by any Authority from him, up-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'on any Bills assigned to other Purposes, being 'assur'd he had received very little, or nothing, that 'Way: And he expected, likewise, that Satisfac- 'tion should be made by them for all those several 'vast Sums received and diverted to other Pur- 'poses, by Orders of one or both Houses, which 'ought to have been paid by the Act of Pacifi- 'cation, to his Subjects of *Scotland*, or employed 'for the Discharge of the Debts of the Kingdom; 'or, by other Acts of Parliament, for the Relief of 'his poor Protestant Subjects in *Ireland*.

'For what concerned his Magazines; he was 'content that all the Arms and Ammunition, 'taken out of his Magazines, which did re- 'main in the Hands of both Houses, or of Persons 'employed by them, should be, as soon as the 'Treaty was concluded, delivered into the Tower 'of *London*; and that whatsoever should be want- 'ing of the Proportions taken by them, should be 'supplied by them, with all convenient Speed, in 'Kind; which, he said, should be committed to, 'and continued in, the Custody of the sworn Offi- 'cers, to whose Places the same belong'd: And 'if any of those Officers had already forfeited, or 'hereafter should forfeit, that Trust, by any Mis- 'demeanors, his Majesty would by no Means de- 'fend them from the Justice of the Law: That he 'always intended to restore such Arms and Am- 'munition, which he had been compelled to take 'from any Persons and Places, when his own had 'been taken from him; and would make them 'Recompence as soon as his own Stores were re- 'stored to him.

'To whatsoever they proposed for the slighting 'all Fortifications, and reducing all Garrisons 'which had been made since the Beginning of 'the Troubles, and leaving them in the State 'they were before, the King fully and absolutely 'consented; and that the old Castles and Garri- 'sons should be reduced to their antient Propor- 'tion and Establishment; but, for the Governors 'and Commanders of them, he said, That the

'Cinque-

'Cinque-Ports were already in the Cuſtody of a Noble Perſon, againſt whom he knew no juſt Exception; and who had ſuch a legal Intereſt therein, that he could not, with Juſtice, remove him from it, untill ſome ſufficient Cauſe were made appear to him; but he was very willing, if he ſhould at any Time be found guilty of any thing that might make him unworthy of that Truſt, that he might be proceeded againſt according to the Rules of Juſtice: That the Government of the Town of *Portſmouth*, and all other Forts, Caſtles, and Towns, as were formerly kept by Garriſons, ſhould be put into the Hands of ſuch Perſons, againſt whom no juſt Exceptions could be made; all of them being, before theſe Troubles, by Letters Patent, granted to ſeveral Perſons, againſt any of whom he knew not any Exceptions, who ſhould be removed, if juſt Cauſe ſhould be given for the ſame. The Warden of the Cinque-Ports, and all other Governors and Commanders of the Towns and Caſtles, ſhould keep their Charges, as by the Law they ought to do, and for the King's Service, and Safety of the Kingdom; and they ſhould not admit into any of them foreign Forces, or other Forces, raiſed or brought in to them contrary to Law; but ſhould uſe their utmoſt Endeavours to ſuppreſs ſuch Forces; and ſhould ſeize all Arms and Ammunition, which, by the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom, they ought to ſeize.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To that Part which concern'd the Ships, the King told them, 'That he expected his own Ships 'ſhould be delivered to him, as by the Law they 'ought to be; and that when he ſhould think fit 'to nominate a Lord High-Admiral of *England*, 'it ſhould be ſuch a Perſon againſt whom no juſt 'Exception could be made; and if any ſhould be, 'he would always leave him to his due Trial and 'Examination; and he would grant his Office to 'him by ſuch Letters Patent, as had been uſed. 'In the mean Time he would govern the Admi-

'ralty

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'ralty by Commiſſion, as had been in all Times 'accuſtomed; and whatſoever Ships ſhould be ſet 'out by him, or his Authority, ſhould be employ-'ed for the Defence of the Kingdom againſt all 'foreign Forces whatſoever, for the Safeguard of 'Merchants, Securing of Trade, Guarding of *Ire-'land*, and the Intercepting of all Supplies to be 'carried to the Rebels; and they ſhould uſe their 'utmoſt Endeavours to ſuppreſs all Forces which 'ſhould be raiſed, by any Perſon whatſoever, againſt 'the Laws and Statutes of the Kingdom; and to 'ſeize all Arms and Ammunition provided for the 'Supply of any ſuch Forces.'

'It is evident to all Men where the Difference now lay between them, being Whether the King would reſerve the Diſpoſal of thoſe Offices and Places of Truſt to himſelf, (which all Kings had enjoyed, and was indeed a Part of his Regality) or Whether he would be content with ſuch a Nomination, as, being to paſs, and depend upon their Approbation, no Man ſhould ever be admitted to them, who was nominated by him. The Committee, upon his Majeſty's Anſwer, deſired to know, 'Whether he did intend that both Houſes 'ſhould expreſs their Confidence of the Perſons, 'to whoſe Truſt thoſe Places were to be commit-'ted; for that they were directed by their Inſtruc-'tions, that, if his Majeſty was pleaſed to aſſent 'thereunto, and to nominate Perſons of Quality 'to receive the Charge of them, that they ſhould 'certify it to both Houſes of Parliament; that 'thereupon they might expreſs their Confidence 'in thoſe Perſons, or humbly deſire his Majeſty 'to name others, none of which Perſons to be re-'moved during three Years next enſuing, with-'out juſt Cauſe, to be approved by both Houſes; 'and if any ſhould be ſo removed, or die within 'that Space, the Perſons to be put in their Places 'to be ſuch as the two Houſes ſhould confide 'in.'

'The King anſwered, 'That he did not intend 'that the Houſes ſhould expreſs their Confidence

'of

'of the Perſons to whoſe Truſts thoſe Places ſhould An. 19. Car. I.
'be committed; but only that they ſhould have Li- 1643.
'berty, upon any juſt Exception, to proceed againſt April.
'any ſuch Perſons according to Law; his Majeſty
'being reſolved not to protect them againſt the Pub-
'lic Juſtice. When any of the Places ſhould be
'void, he well knew the Nomination and free Elec-
'tion of thoſe who ſhould ſucceed, to be a Right
'belonging to, and inherent in, his Majeſty; and
'having been enjoyed by all his Royal Progenitors,
'he could not believe his well-affected Subjects de-
'ſired to limit him in that Right; and deſired they
'would be ſatisfied with this Anſwer, or give him
'any Reaſons to alter his Reſolution, and he would
'comply with them.'

They told him, 'There could be no good and
'firm Peace hoped for, if there were not a Cure
'found out for the Fears and Jealouſies; and they
'knew none ſure, but this which they had propo-
'ſed.'

'The King replied, 'That he rather expected
'Reaſons grounded upon Law, to have ſhewed
'him, by the Law, that he had not that Right he
'pretended, or that they had a Right ſuperior to
'his, in what was now in Queſtion; or that they
'would have ſhewed him ſome legal Reaſon, why
'the Perſons truſted by him were incapable of ſuch
'a Truſt, than that they would only have inſiſt-
'ed upon Fears and Jealouſies; of which as he
'knew no Ground, ſo he muſt be ignorant of the
'Cure. That the Argument they uſed might ex-
'tend to the depriving him of, or at leaſt ſharing
'with him in, all his juſt Regal Power; ſince
'Power, as well as Forces, might be the Object of
'Fears and Jealouſies; and there would be always
'a Power left to hurt, whilſt there was any left to
'protect and defend.' He told them, 'If he had
'as much Inclination, as he had more Right, to
'Fears and Jealouſies, he might, with more Rea-
'ſons, have inſiſted upon an Addition of Power, as
'a Security to enable him to keep his Forts when
'he had them; ſince it appeared it was not ſo great,

'but

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'but that they had been able to take them from 'him, than they to make any Difficulty to reſtore 'them to him in the ſame Caſe they were before. 'But, he ſaid, as he was himſelf content with, ſo, 'he took God to Witneſs, his greateſt Deſire was 'to obſerve always, and maintain, the Law of the 'Land; and expected the ſame from his Subjects; 'and believed the mutual Obſervance of that Rule, 'and neither of them to fear what the Law feared 'not, to be, on both Parts, a better Cure for 'that dangerous Diſeaſe of Fears and Jealouſies, 'and a better Means to eſtabliſh a happy and per-'petual Peace, than for him to diveſt himſelf of 'thoſe Truſts, which the Law of the Land had 'ſettled in the Crown alone, to preſerve the Power 'and Dignity of the Prince, for the better Protec-'tion of the Subject and of the Law, and to avoid 'thoſe dangerous Diſtractions, which the Intereſt 'of any Sharers with him would have infallibly pro-'duced.'

'The Committee neither offered to anſwer his Majeſty's Reaſons, nor to oppoſe other Reaſons to weigh againſt them; but only ſaid, 'That they 'were commanded, by their Inſtructions, to inſiſt 'upon the Deſires of both Houſes formerly expreſ-'ſed.'

To which the King made no other Anſwer than, 'That he conceived it all the Juſtice in the World 'for him to inſiſt, that what was, by Law, his 'own, and had been, contrary to Law, taken from 'him, ſhould be fully reſtored to him, without 'conditioning to impoſe any new Limitations upon 'him, or his Miniſters, which were not formerly 'required from them by the Law; and he thought 'it moſt unreaſonable to be preſſed to diminiſh 'his own juſt Rights himſelf, becauſe others had 'violated and uſurped them.' This was the Sum of what paſſed in the Treaty upon that Propoſition.

'To the firſt Propoſition of the two Houſes, *That his Majeſty would be pleaſed to diſband his Armies, as they likewiſe would be ready to diſband all their*

their Forces, which they had raiſed, and that he would be pleaſed to return to his Parliament:

1643. April.

'The King anſwered, 'That he was as ready 'and willing that all Armies ſhould be diſbanded, 'as any Perſon whatſoever; and conceived the beſt 'Way to it would be a happy and ſpeedy Con-'cluſion of the preſent Treaty; which, if both 'Houſes would contribute as much as he would 'do to it, would be ſuddenly effected. And as 'he deſired nothing more than to be with his two 'Houſes, ſo he would repair thither as ſoon as he 'could poſſibly do it with his Honour and Safe-'ty.

'The Committee aſked him, 'If, by a happy and 'ſpeedy Concluſion of the preſent Treaty, he in-'tended a Concluſion upon the two firſt Propoſitions, 'or a Concluſion of the Treaty in all the Propoſi-'tions of both Parts?'

'The King, who well knew it would be very ungracious to deny the Diſbanding of the Armies, till all the Propoſitions were agreed, ſome whereof would require much Time, anſwered, 'That he 'intended ſuch a Concluſion of, or in, the Treaty, 'as there might be a clear Evidence to himſelf, and 'his Subjects, of a future Peace, and no Ground left 'for the Continuance, or Growth, of thoſe bloody 'Diſſentions; which, he doubted not, might be 'obtained, if both Houſes would conſent that the 'Treaty ſhould proceed without farther Interruption, 'or Limitation of Days.'

'They aſked him, 'What he intended ſhould be 'a clear Evidence to him, and his good Subjects, of 'a future Peace, and no Ground left for the Con-'tinuance, and Growth, of thoſe bloody Diſſen-'tions?'

'His Majeſty told them, 'If the Concluſion of 'the preſent Treaty upon his firſt Propoſition, and 'the firſt Propoſition of both Houſes, ſhould be ſo 'full and perfectly made, that the Law of the Land 'might have a full, free, and uninterrupted Courſe, 'for the Defence and Preſervation of the Rights of 'his Majeſty, and of themſelves, and the reſt of 'his Subjects, there would be thence a clear Evi-

'dence

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'dence to him, and all Men, of a future Peace; and 'it would be such a Conclusion as he intended, never 'meaning that both Armies should remain undis- 'banded untill the Propositions on both Sides were 'fully concluded.'

'To the other Clause of their own Proposition, concerning the King's Return to the Parliament, they said, 'They had no Instructions to treat up- 'on it;' which the King much wonder'd at; and finding that they had no other Authority to treat, or debate what was necessary to be done in order to Disbanding, but only to press him to appoint a Day for the actual Disbanding; and that the Forces in the North, where he had a great Army, and they had none, might be first disbanded, he endeavour'd to draw them to some Propositions upon his Return to the Parliament; from whence Expedients would naturally result, if they pursued that heartily, which would conclude a general Peace. And it seem'd very strange, that, after so many Discourses of the King's Absence from the Houses, from whence they had taught the People to believe that most of the present Evils flow'd and proceeded when a Treaty was now enter'd upon, and that was a Part of their own first Proposition, that their Committee should have no Instructions or Authority to treat upon it. After this they received new Instructions, 'To declare to his Majesty the De- 'sire of both Houses, for his coming to his Parlia- 'ment; which, they said, they had often express'd 'with full Offers of Security to his Royal Person, 'agreeable to their Duty and Allegiance; and they 'knew no Cause why he might not repair thither 'with Honour and Safety.'

'When the King found he could not engage them in that Argument to make any particular Overture or Invitation to him; and that the Committee, who express'd Willingness enough, had not in Truth the least Power to promote, or contribute to an Accommodation, lest they should make the People believe that he had a Desire to continue the War, because he consented not to their

their Propoſition of Diſbanding the Armies, he ſent this Meſſage, by an Expreſs of his own, to the two Houſes, after he had firſt communicated it to their Committee.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Oxford, April 12, 1643.

CHARLES *R.*

TO ſhew to the whole World, how earneſtly his Majeſty longs for Peace, and that no Succeſs ſhall make him deſire the Continuance of his Army to any other End, or for any longer Time, than that; and untill Things may be ſo ſettled, as that the Law may have a full, free, and uninterrupted Courſe, for the Defence amd Preſervation of the Rights of his Majeſty, both Houſes, and his good Subjects:

1. *As ſoon as his Majeſty is ſatisfied in his firſt Propoſition, concerning his own Revenue, Magazines, Ships, and Forts, in which he deſires nothing, but that the juſt, known, legal Rights of his Majeſty (devolved to him from his Progenitors) and of the Perſons truſted by him, which have violently been taken from both, be reſtored unto him, and unto them; unleſs any juſt and legal Exception againſt any of the Perſons truſted by him (which are yet unknown to his Majeſty) can be made appear unto him:*

2. *As ſoon as all the Members of both Houſes ſhall be reſtored to the ſame Capacity of ſitting and voting in Parliament, as they had upon the firſt of* January, 1641; *the ſame, of Right, belonging unto them by their Birth-rights, and the free Election of thoſe that ſent them; and having been voted from them for adhering to his Majeſty in theſe Diſtractions; his Majeſty not intending that this ſhould extend either to the Biſhops, whoſe Votes have been taken away by Bill, or to ſuch, in whoſe Places, upon new Writs, new Elections have been made:*

3. *As ſoon as his Majeſty, and both Houſes, may be ſecured from ſuch tumultuous Aſſemblies, as, to the great Breach of the Privileges, and the high Diſhonour of Parliaments, have formerly aſſembled about both Houſes, and awed the Members of the ſame; and*

occa-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

occasioned two several Complaints from the Lords' House, and two several Desires of that House to the House of Commons, to join in a Declaration against them; the complying with which Desire might have prevented all these miserable Distractions which have ensued; which Security, his Majesty conceives, can be only settled by adjourning the Parliament to some other Place, at the least twenty Miles from London; *the Choice of which his Majesty leaves to both Houses:*

His Majesty will, most chearfully and readily, consent that both Armies be immediately disbanded, and give a present Meeting to both his Houses of Parliament at the Time and Place, at, and to which, the Parliament shall be agreed to be adjourned: His Majesty being most confident that the Law will then recover due Credit and Estimation; and that upon a free Debate, in a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, such Provisions will be made against seditious Preaching and Printing against his Majesty, and the established Laws, which have been one of the chief Causes of the present Distractions; and such Care will be taken concerning the legal and known Rights of his Majesty, and the Property and Liberty of his Subjects, that whatsoever hath been published or done, in or by Colour of any illegal Declaration, Ordinance, or Order of one or both Houses, or any Committee of either of them, and particularly the Power to raise Arms without his Majesty's Consent, will be in such Manner recalled, disclaimed, and provided against, that no Seed will remain for the like to spring out of for the future, to disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, and to endanger the very Being of it. And in such a Convention his Majesty is resolved, by his Readiness to consent to whatsoever shall be proposed to him, by Bill, for the real Good of his Subjects (and particularly for the better Discovery, and speedier Conviction of Recusants; for the Education of the Children of Papists by Protestants in the Protestant Religion; for the Prevention of Practices of Papists against the State, and the due Execution of the Laws, and true

levying

levying of the Penalties againſt them) to make known An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.
to all the World, how cauſeleſs thoſe Fears and Jealouſies have been, which have been raiſed againſt him; and by that ſo diſtracted this miſerable Kingdom. And if this Offer of his Majeſty be not conſented to, (in which he aſks nothing for which there is not apparent Juſtice on his Side, and in which he defers many Things highly concerning both himſelf and People, till a full and peaceable Convention of Parliament, which in Juſtice he might now require) his Majeſty is confident that it will then appear, to all the World, not only who is moſt deſirous of Peace, and whoſe Fault it is that both Armies are not now diſbanded; but who have been the true and firſt Cauſe that this Peace was ever interrupted, or thoſe Armies raiſed, and the Beginning or Continuance of the War; and the Deſtruction and Deſolation of this poor Kingdom (which is too likely to enſue) will not, by the moſt intereſted, paſſionate, or prejudicate Perſon, be imputed to his Majeſty.

'To this Meſſage the two Houſes returned no Anſwer to the King, but required the Committee to return to *Weſtminſter* (having been in *Oxford* with his Majeſty juſt twenty Days) with ſuch poſitive Circumſtances, that the Houſe of Commons enjoined their Members to begin their Journey the ſame Day, which they obeyed; though it was ſo late, that they were forced to very inconvenient Accommodations; and, at their Return, ſome of them were looked upon with great Jealouſy, as Perſons engaged by the King, and diſinclined to the Parliament; and this Jealouſy prevailed ſo far, that Mr. *Martin* opened a Letter from the Earl of *Northumberland* to his own Lady, preſuming he ſhould therein have diſcovered ſome Combination; and this Inſolence was not diſliked.'——Thus far the Noble Hiſtorian.

The Proceedings of both Houſes, in relation to this Intercepting of the Earl of *Northumberland*'s Letter, will appear more at large, from their *Journals*, in its proper Order of Time.

We

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

We now proceed to give Mr. *Whitlocke*'s Account of what paſs'd, between the King and the above-mentioned Committee of Parliament, at *Oxford*.

And Mr. *Whitlocke*'s Account of that Treaty.

'THE King uſed the Commiſſioners with great Favour and Civility; and his General, *Ruthen*, and divers of his Lords and Officers, came frequently to their Table, and they had very friendly Diſcourſes and Treatments together. The King himſelf did them the Honour ſometimes to accept of part of their Wine and Proviſions, which the Earl of *Northumberland* ſent to him, when they had any Thing extraordinary.

'Their Inſtructions were very ſtrict, and tied them up to treat with none but the King himſelf, whom they often attended at his Lodgings in *Chriſt-Church*: They had Acceſs at all Times when they deſired it, and were allowed by his Majeſty a very free Debate with him.

'He had commonly waiting on him, when he treated with them, Prince *Rupert*, the Lord-Keeper *Littleton*, the Earl of *Southampton*, the Lord Chief Juſtice *Banks*, and ſeveral other Lords of his Council, who never debated any Matters with them; but gave their Opinions to the King in thoſe Things which he demanded of them, and ſometimes would put the King in Mind of ſome particular Things; but otherwiſe they did not ſpeak at all.

'In this Treaty the King manifeſted his great Parts and Abilities, Strength of Reaſon, and Quickneſs of Apprehenſion, with much Patience in hearing what was objected againſt him; wherein he allowed all Freedom, and would himſelf ſum up the Arguments, and give a moſt clear Judgment upon them.

'His Unhappineſs was, that he had a better Opinion of other Judgments than of his own, tho' they were weaker than his own; and of this the Parliament's Commiſſioners had Experience to their great Trouble.

'They

'They were often waiting on the King, and debating some Points of the Treaty with him untill Midnight, before they could come to a Conclusion. Upon one of the most material Points they pressed his Majesty with their Reasons, and best Arguments they could use, to grant what they desired. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'The King said, 'He was fully satisfied, and 'promised to give them his Answer in Writing ac-'cording to their Desire; but, because it was then 'past Midnight, and too late to put it into Writing, 'he would have it drawn up the next Morning '(when he commanded them to wait on him again); 'and then he would give them his Answer in Wri-'ting, as it was now agreed upon.'

'They went to their Lodgings full of joyful Hopes to receive this Answer the next Morning; and which, being given, would have much conduced to a happy Issue and Success of this Treaty; and they had the King's Word for it, and they waited on him the next Morning at the Hour appointed.

'But, instead of that Answer which they expected, and were promised, the King gave them a Paper quite contrary to what was concluded the Night before, and very much tending to the Breach of the Treaty. They did humbly expostulate this with his Majesty, and pressed him upon his Royal Word, and the ill Consequences which they feared would follow upon this his new Paper.

'But the King told them, 'He had altered his 'Mind; and that this Paper, which he now gave 'them, was his Answer, which he was now resol-'ved to make upon their last Debate:' And they could obtain no other from him; which occasioned much Sadness and Trouble to them.

'Some of his own Friends, of whom the Commissioners enquired touching this Passage, informed them, That after they were gone from the King, and that his Council were also gone away, some of his Bed-Chamber (and they went higher) hearing from him what Answer he had promised,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

and doubting it would tend to such an Issue of the Treaty as they did not wish, they being rather for the Continuance of the War, never left pressing and persuading of the King, till they prevailed with him to change his former Resolutions, and to give Order for his Answer to be drawn as it was now delivered.

'The Treaty, upon the King's Propositions, as well as upon the Commissioners, going slowly on, and their Instructions being strict, and such as they could not shew to the King when he desired it, he thought fit, *April* 12, to send a Message to the Parliament during the Treaty.

[*Here follow the Heads of this Message, which we have already given at Length, p.* 221.]

'This being intimated to the Commissioners, they dissuaded the sending of it, as that which they feared might break off the Treaty, and the Improbability that the Houses would adjourn, and leave the City of *London*, their best Friends and Strength, and put a Discontent upon them.

'Yet the King was prevailed with to send it; and, upon the Receipt of it by the Houses, they presently resolved to call away their Commissioners, and sent their Orders to them to return to the Parliament, which they obeyed; and so this Treaty, having continued from the 4th of *March* to the 15th of *April*, was now dissolved, and all their Labours and Hazards become fruitless and of no Effect; and all good *Englishmen*, Lovers of the Peace of their Country, were troubled and disappointed.

'When they were come to the Parliament they gave them a particular Account of all their Negotiation, wherewith they were so well satisfied, that they ordered the Thanks of the House to be given them; and, by Vote, approved of all their Proceedings.'

Thus much for the fruitless Treaty of *Oxford*: We now return to the other Proceedings of both Houses.

The

The Month of *April* begins with an Ordinance of Parliament, which, afterwards, proved the moſt oppreſſive to the Royal Party in the Kingdom, of any Thing yet done by either Houſe. This was the Ordinance for ſeizing and ſequeſtring the Real and Perſonal Eſtates of Delinquents. The whole is in *Ruſhworth*, except the Names of the Sequeſtrators, which, probably, were omitted in thoſe Collections, to prevent giving Offence to particular Perſons at that Time: But theſe we have ſupplied from the Original Edition of this Ordinance, publiſhed by the Authority of both Houſes. By this Liſt the Reader will ſee who were the Perſons the Parliament then nominated to be Sequeſtrators throughout the whole Kingdom; though ſome of them, there named, had too much Regard for their Character, or their Safety, to put the Office in Execution; and others of them, afterwards, declared in Favour of the King. The Liſt runs thus:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

BEDFORDSHIRE.

Names of the Perſons appointed to ſequeſter the Eſtates of ſuch as adhere to the King.

SIR *Beauchamp St. John* and Sir *John Burgoyn*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Alſton*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Roger Burgoyn*, Sir *Oliver Luke*, and Sir *Samuel Luke*, Knights; *Thomas Rolt*, *Thomas Sadler*, *James Beverley*, *Humphry Monoux*, *Edward Oſborn*, *Robert Stanton*, and *Samuel Brown*, Eſquires.

BEDFORD *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being.

BERKSHIRE.

Sir *Francis Pile*, Bart. Sir *Francis Knollis*, jun. Knt. *Peregrine Hobby*, *Henry Martin*, *Roger Knight*, *Henry Powle*, *Thomas Fettiplace*, and *Tanfield Vachell*, Eſquires.

BUCKINGHAMSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Ingoldſby*, Knt. *Henry Bulſtrode*, *Thomas Tyrrel*, and *Richard Grenville*, Eſquires; Sir *Peter Temple*, Bart. Sir *Thomas Sanders*, Knt. *Anthony Ratcliffe*, and *Thomas Weſtall*, Eſquires; Sir *William Andrews*, Knt. *Bulſtrode Whitlocke*,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

John Hampden, *Arthur Goodwyn*, and *Richard Winwood*, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGESHIRE.

Sir *Dudley North*, Sir *John Cuts*, and Sir *Thomas Martin*, Knights; Capt. *Symonds*; *Dudley Pope*, Esq; Sir *Miles Sandys*, Knt. *Francis Russell*, *Oliver Cromwell*, *William Fisher*, *Thomas Thomson*, *Thomas Becket*, *Walter Clopton*, *Robert Castle*, *Thomas Bendish*, *John Welbore*, *Robert Clark*, *Michael Dalton*, jun. *Thomas Parker*, *Thomas Ducket*, *John Hobart*, *Thomas Castle*, *George Clapthorn*, *John Towers*, *Edward Leeds*, and *William Marsh*, Esquires.

CAMBRIDGE *Town and University*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Oliver Cromwell*, *John Lowry*, *William Welbore*, *Talbot Pepys* Recorder, *John Sherwood*, *Samuel Spaulden*, *Thomas French*, and *Robert Robson*, Esquires.

CHESHIRE.

Sir *George Booth*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Brereton*, Bart. *Thomas Stanley*, *Henry Manwaring*, *Henry Brook*, *John Bradshaw*, *Robert Duckenfield*, *Henry Vernon*, *John Crewe*, and *William Marbury*, Esquires.

CHESTER *City*. *William Jaunce*, Mayor; *John Aldersey*, *Peter Leigh*, and *William Edwards*, Merchants.

CORNWALL.

Sir *Richard Carew*, Bart. *Francis Buller*, *Alexander Carew*, *John Trefusis*, *John St. Aubin*, *Richard Erisey*, *John Moyle*, *Francis Godolphin* of *Tremonegue*, *Thomas Gawen*, *John Carter*, and *Thomas Arundell*, Esquires.

CUMBERLAND.

William Lawson, *William Briscoe*, *Thomas Lamplugh*, *Richard Barwis*, and *John Barwis*, sen. Esquires.

DEVONSHIRE.

Sir *George Chudleigh*, Sir *John Pool*, and Sir *John Northcote*, Baronets; Sir *Edmund Fowell*, Sir *Samuel Rolle*, Sir *Shilston Calmady*, and Sir *Nicholas Martin*, Knights; Sir *Francis Drake*, Bart. *Robert*

bert Savery, *Henry Walrond*, *Francis Rous*, *Edmund Prideaux*, *Henry Wroth*, *Hugh Forteſcue*, *Arthur Upton*, *John Yeo*, *William Frye*, and *George Trobridge*, Eſquires; the Mayor of *Plymouth* for the Time being. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

EXON *City*. *Chriſtopher Clark*, Mayor; *Richard Sanders*, *Thomas Croſſing*, *Walter White*, and *John Hakewill*, Aldermen; *James Gould*, Sheriff.

DERBYSHIRE.

Sir *John Curzon*, and Sir *John Gell*, Baronets; Sir *John Coke*, Knt. *Francis Revitt*, *Nathaniel Hallowes*, and *James Abney*, Eſquires.

DORSETSHIRE.

Denzill Holles, *Eſq*; Sir *Thomas Trenchard* and Sir *Walter Erle*, Knights; *John Brown*, *Thomas Tregonall*; *John Bingham*, *John Hanham*, *John Trenchard*, *Dennis Bond*, *Richard Broderope*, *William Savage*, *Robert Butler*, and *William Sydenham*, jun. *Richard Roſe*, *John Henley*, *Thomas Ceely*, and *Thomas Erle*, Eſquires.

POOL *Town and County*. *Henry Martin*, Mayor; *George Skut*, *William Skut*, *Anthony Wait*, *William Williams*, *Aaron Durell*, *Richard Mayer*, and *Haviland Healy*, Aldermen.

DORCHESTER *Town*. The Mayor for the Time being; Mr. *John Hill* and Mr. *Richard Bury*.

DURHAM.

Henry Warmouth, *George Lilbourn*, *Thomas Mitford*, *Robert Hutton*, *Thomas Shadforth*, *Clement Falthrop*, *Richard Lilbourn*, *Francis Wren*, *John Blakiſton*, *Henry Draper*, and *John Brackenbury*, Eſquires.

ESSEX.

Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Henry Mildmay* of *Wanſtead*; Sir *Martin Lumley* and Sir *Harbottle Grimſton*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Richard Everard* and Sir *William Hicks*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Cheek*, Sir *Henry Halcroft*, Sir *William Rowe*, Sir *Thomas Honeywood*, Sir *William Martin*, and Sir *John Barrington*, Knights; Sir *William Maſham*, Bart. *William Maſham*, *John Wright*, *Oli-*

An. 19. Car. I 1643 April.

ver Raymond, Harbottle Grimston, John Sayer, John Burket, Anthony Luther, Timothy Middleton, Thomas Coke, Deane Tindal, James Herne, William Goldingham, John Atwood, John Sorrell, Richard Harbackenden, Henry Wiseman, Robert Smith, Robert Browne, William Atwood, Nathaniel Bacon, John Meade, Robert Wiseman of *Mayland, Isaac Allen, ——— Hasely, Samuel Friberne, Peter Whitcombe, Robert Young, Jeremy Aylet, William Cellard, Robert Crane, Robert Calthrop*, and *Arthur Barnardiston*, Esquires.

COLCHESTER *Town.* The Mayor for the Time being; *Harbottle Grimston* and *Henry Barrington*, Esquires.

GLOUCESTERSHIRE, *with the City of* Gloucester *and County thereof.*

Sir *Robert Cooke*, Knt. *Nathaniel Stephens, John George, Edward Stephens*, and *John Stephens*, Esquires; *Thomas Pury*, Alderman; Sir *John Seymour*, Knt. *Thomas Hodges* and *John Coddrington*, Esquires.

HEREFORDSHIRE.

Sir *Robert Harley*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *Richard Hopton*, Knt. *Walter Kirle, Edward Broughton*, and *Henry Vaughan*, Esquires.

HEREFORD *City.* Sir *Robert Harley*, Knight of the *Bath*; *Walter Kirle, Richard Hobson, John Flacket*, and *Henry Vaughan*, Esquires.

HERTFORDSHIRE.

Charles Lord Viscount *Cranborne*; *Robert Cecil*, Esq; Sir *John Garrat* and Sir *John Reade*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Dacres*, Sir *William Litton*, and Sir *John Witterong*, Knights; *Richard Jennings, Ralph Freeman, William Lemon, William Priestley, John Heyden, Alexander Wild, Richard Porter*, and *Adam Washington*, Esquires.

ST. ALBAN'S. The Mayor for the Time being; *John Robotham, Ralph Pemberton*, and *Graveley Norton*, Esquires.

HUNTINGDONSHIRE.

Sir *Thomas Cotton*, Bart. Sir *John Hewit*, Knt. *Onslow Winch, Terril Jocelyne, Thomas Tempte, John*

John Caſtle, *Oliver Cromwell*, *Abraham Burwell*, *Edward Montague*, and *John Bulkley*, Eſquires. An. 19. Car. 1. 1643. April.

KENT.

Sir *Thomas Walſingham* and Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Knights; Sir *John Sidley*, Sir *Edward Hales*, Sir *Humphry Tuſton*, and Sir *Henry Heyman*, Knights and Baronets; Sir *Michael Livesey*, Bart. Sir *Henry Lane*, jun. Sir *Edward Scot*, Sir *Edward Bois*, Sir *William Brook*, Sir *Peter Wroth*, Sir *George Sandys*, Sir *John Honeywood*, Sir *James Oxenden*, and Sir *Richard Hardreſſe*, Knights; *Auguſtine Skinner*, *Richard Lee*, *Thomas Scillard*, *John Bois*, ſen. *Thomas Blunt*, and *Samuel Short*, Eſquires.

CANTERBURY *City*. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *William Man*, Knt. Sir *Edward Maſter*, Knt. *John Nutt* and *Thomas Courthorpe*, Eſquires; *Avery Savine*, Alderman.

ROCHESTER *City*. The Mayor for the Time being; Sir *Anthony Weldon*, Sir *William Brooke*, and Sir *Thomas Walſingham*; *Richard Lee*, Eſq; the Mayor of *Tenterden* for the Time being; *William Bois*, *William James*, *Mark Dixwell*, and *Henry Samford*, Eſquires.

LANCASHIRE.

Sir *Ralph Aſhton* and Sir *Thomas Stanley*, Baronets; *Ralph Aſhton* of *Downham*, *Ralph Aſhton* of *Middleton*, *Richard Shuttleworth*, *Alexander Rigby*, *John Moore*, *Richard Holland*, *Edward Butterworth*, *John Bradſhaw*, *William Aſhurſt*, *Peter Egerton*, *George Dodding*, *Nicholas Cunliff*, *John Starkey*, *Thomas Birch*, and *Thomas Fell*, Eſquires; *Robert Cunliff*, *Robert Curwen*, and *John Nowell*, Gentlemen.

LEICESTERSHIRE.

Henry Lord *Grey* of *Ruthyn*, *Thomas* Lord *Grey* of *Groby*; Sir *Arthur Haſlirigge*, Bart. Sir *Edward Hartop* and Sir *Thomas Hartop*, Knights; *William Hewet*, *John Bembridge*, *Peter Temple*, *George Aſhby*, *William Roberts*, *Richard Bent*, *Arthur Stanley*, *William Danvers*, and *John Goodman*, Eſquires.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April. LEICESTER *Town*. *Richard Ludlam*, Mayor; *William Stanley*, Alderman.

LINCOLNSHIRE.

For the Parts of Lindsey. Sir *John Wray*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Edward Ascough* and Sir *Samuel Oldfield*, Knights; *John Wray*, *Willoughby Hickman*, *Edward Whichcot*, *Edmond Anderson*, *Edward Rossiter*, and *John Broxholme*, Esquires; Sir *William Armyn*, Bart. Sir *Hamond Whichcot*, Knt. Sir *John Brownlow* and Sir *Thomas Trollop*, Baronets; *Thomas Hatcher*; Sir *Christopher Wray*; *Thomas Grantham*, *Thomas Lister*, and *John Archer*, Esquires; Sir *William Brownlow*.

For the Parts of Holland. Sir *Anthony Irby*; *William Ellis* and *John Harrington*, Esquires; the Mayor of *Boston* for the Time being; *Thomas Hall*, *Thomas Welby*, and —— *Willesby*. Esquires.

LINCOLN *City and the Close*. The Mayor for the Time being; *Thomas Grantham* and *John Broxholme*, Esquires; *Robert Moorecroft*, *William Watson*, and *Stephen Dawson*, Aldermen.

MIDDLESEX.

Sir *Gilbert Gerrard*, Bart. Sir *Edward Barkham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Richard Sprignal*, Bart. Sir *John Franklyn*, Sir *John Hippesley*, Sir *William Roberts*, Sir *James Harrington*, and Sir *Robert Wood*, Knights; *Lawrence Whitacre*, *Justinian Paget*, *William Swallow*, *John Huckstey*, *Thomas Wilcox*, *John Morris*, *Richard Dutton*, and *John Smith*, Esquires.

LONDON *City, and Jurisdiction of the Lord Mayor*. The Lord Mayor and the Aldermen, Aldermen's Deputies, and Common Councilmen of the said City.

WESTMINSTER *City and Liberties*. Sir *Robert Pye*, Sir *William Ashton*, and Sir *John Corbet*, Knights; *John Glyn*, *John Trenchard*, and *William Wheeler*, Esquires; *John Brigham*, *George Beverhasset*, *Anthony Withers*, and *William Barns*, Gentlemen; *Josias Fendall*, *William Bell*,——*Tuckey*

key, ——— *Colcheſter*, and *Stephen Higgons*, Eſquires. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

NORFOLK *County, and City of* Norwich *with the County thereof.*

Sir *Thomas Woodhouſe*, Sir *John Holland*, Sir *John Potts*, and Sir *John Hobart*, Baronets; Sir *Miles Hobart* and Sir *Thomas Huggen*, Knights; *John Cook*, *John Spelman*, *Philip Beddingfield*, and *Samuel Smith*, Eſquires; the Sheriffs of *Norwich*; the Bailiffs of *Yarmouth*; *Thomas Toll* and *John Percival*, of *Lynn*; *Thomas Windham*, *Francis Jerny*, *Robert Wood*, *Gregory Cauſell*, *John Haughton*, *Thomas Weld*, *Martin Sedley*, and *Thomas Sotherton*, Eſquires; Sir *Edmond Mountford*, Knt. *William Heveningham*, *William Cook*, and *Robert Rich*, Eſquires; Sir *Richard Berney*, Sir *Iſaac Aſtley*, and Sir *John Palgrave*, Knights; *Brigg Fountayn* and *John Tooly*, Eſquires.

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.

Sir *Rowland St. John*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *John Norwich*, Knt. Sir *Gilbert Pickering*, Bart. Sir *Richard Samwel*, Knt. *John Crew*, *John Barnard*, *Edward Harvey*, *Edward Farmer*, *John Norton*, and *John Chappoole*, Eſquires; Sir *John Dryden*, Bart. *Richard Knightley*, Eſq; Sir *Chriſtopher Yelverton*, Knt. and Bart. *Zouch Tate*, *Philip Holeman*, and *Thomas Pentlow*, Eſquires.

NORTHAMPTON *Town.* The Mayor for the Time being; *Thomas Martin* and *John Fiſher*, Aldermen.

NORTHUMBERLAND.

Sir *John Fenwick*, Bart. Sir *Jo. Delaval*, Knt. *Thomas Middleton*, *William Shaftoe*, *Michael Welden*, and *Henry Ogle*, Eſquires.

NEWCASTLE *Town. John Blakiſton*, Eſq;

For the Town of BERWICK *upon* TWEED. *John Sleigh*, Mayor; Sir *Robert Jackſon*, Knt. *Ralph Salkeld*, Eſq;

NOTTINGHAMSHIRE.

Francis Pierpoint, Eſq; Sir *Francis Thornehaugh* and Sir *Thomas Hutchinſon*, Knights; *Francis Thorne-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Thornehaugh, *Joseph Widmerpoole*, *Robert Reynes*, *Gilbert Millington*, and *John Hutchinson*, Esquires; Sir *Francis Molineux*, Knt. *Charles White* and *Henry Ireton*, Esquires.

NOTTINGHAM *Town and County thereof.* The Mayor for the Time being; *James Chadwick*, Esq; *Huntington Plumtre*, M. D. *John James*, Alderman, and *John Gregory*, Gent.

OXFORDSHIRE. [b]

RUTLANDSHIRE.

Sir *Edward Harrington*, Knt. *Evers Armyn*, *Robert Horsman*, *John Osborne*, *Christopher Browne*, *Robert Horsman*, jun. and *Thomas Wait*, Esquires.

SOMERSETSHIRE.

Sir *John Horner*, Sir *Thomas Wroth*, and Sir *George Farwell*, Knights; *Clement Walker*, *Alexander Popham*, *William Strode*, *Richard Cole*, *John Harrington*, *John Hippesley*, *William Long*, *John Preston*, *Henry Henley*, *Henry Stamford*, *John Pymme*, *James Ash*, and *John Ash*, Esquires; *Roger Hill*, *George Serle*, and *Jasper Chaplyn*, Gentlemen; *Richard Capell*, *William Bull*, *Robert Harbin*, *John Hunt*, and *Robert Blake*, Esquires; the Mayor of *Bridgewater* that now is.

BRISTOL *City*. *Richard Aldworth*, Mayor; *Joseph Jackson*, *Hugh Browne*, Sheriffs; *Richard Aldworthy*, Alderman; *Luke Hodges*, and *Henry Gibbs*.

SOUTHAMPTON *County*, *the Town and County thereof*, *and the Isle of* Wight.

Sir *Henry Worsley* and Sir *William Lewis*, Baronets; Sir *Thomas Jervois*, Sir *William Lisle*, Sir *John Leigh*, Sir *Henry Clerke*, Sir *John Compton*, and Sir *Richard Kingsmill*, Knights; *Robert Dillington*, *Robert Wallop*, *Richard Whitehead*, *Richard Norton*, *John Doddington*, *Richard Jervois*, *John Lisle*, *John Button*, *Edward Hooper*, *John Bulkley*, *Thomas Clerke*, *John Kemp*, *Richard Major*, *Francis St. Barbe*, *Nicholas Love*, *John Fielder*, *Wil-*

[b] There are no Sequestrators nominated for this County:——As the King at this Time kept his Court at *Oxford* surrounded with his Army, we presume the Parliament thought it to no Purpose to

William Withers, *Thomas Chandler*, *James Tutt*, *John Pitman*, and *John Hooke*, Esquires; *George Gallop* and *Edward Exon*, Aldermen of *Southampton*; and the Mayor of *Winchester* for the Time being. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

SUFFOLK.

Sir *William Playters*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Nathaniel Barnardiston*, Knt. Sir *William Spring*, Bart. Sir *Roger North*, Sir *Thomas Barnardiston*, Sir *William Soame*, Sir *John Wentworth*, and Sir *Philip Parker*, Knights; *William Heveningham*, *Nathaniel Bacon* of *Frogton*, *Nicholas Bacon*, *Maurice Barrow*, *William Blois*, *Henry North*, *Robert Brewster*, *Brampton Gourdon*, *Francis Bacon*, *Theophilus Vaughan* of *Beckles*, *William Cage*, *William Rivet* of *Bilson*, *Edmund Harvey*, *John Gourdon*, and *Thomas Coale*, Esquires; *John Basse* and *Francis Brewster*, Gentlemen; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Ipswich* that now are; *John Sicklemer*, *Richard Puplet*, and *John Aldus*, Gentlemen; *Nathaniel Bacon* of *Ipswich*.

ST. EDMUND'S BURY. *Samuel Moody*, *Thomas Cole*, —— *Chaplin*; the Bailiffs of the Town of *Aldborough* for the Time being; *Thomas Gibbs*, Alderman, and *Thomas Johnson*.

SURREY.

Sir *Richard Onslow*, Sir *William Elliot*, and Sir *Robert Parkhurst*, Knights; *Nicholas Stoughton*, *George Evelin* of *Wotton*, *Henry Weston*, and *Arthur Onslow*, Esquires; Sir *Ambrose Browne*, Bart. Sir *Anthony Vincent*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *John Digney* and Sir *Matthew Brand*, Knights; *Edward Sanders*, *Robert Holman*, *Robert Houghton*, *George Evelin*, *Francis Drake*, *Thomas Sandys*, *George Myn*, and *William Muscamp*, Esquires; Sir *John Howland* and Sir *John Evelin*, Knights; *Robert Goodwin*, *George Fairwell*, and *John Goodwyn*, Esquires; *Richard Wright* and *Cornelius Cooke*, Gentlemen.

SUSSEX.

Sir *Thomas Pelham*, Bart. *Anthony Stapley*, *Herbert Morley*, *Thomas Whitfield*, *John Baker*, and *Her-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Herbert Hay, Esquires; *Herbert Springate* of the *Broyle*, *Ralph Cooper*, *Hall Ravenscroft*, *Edward Apsley*, *John Downes*, *William Cawley*, *Edward Higgons*, *Thomas Chute*, *George Oglander*, *George Simpson*, *John Busbridge*, *Thomas Middleton*, and *James Temple*, Esquires; Captains *Thomas*, *Collins*, *Carleton*, and *Everton*.

SALOP.

Sir *John Corbet*, Knt. *William Pierpoint*, *Richard Moore*, *Thomas Witton*, *Thomas Nichols*, *Humphry Mackworth*, *Andrew Lloyd* of *Aston*, *Lancelot Lee*, *Thomas Hunt*, and *John Corbet*, Esquires.

STAFFORDSHIRE.

Sir *Richard Skeffington*, Knt. *Richard Pyott*, *Michael Rydolph*, *Edward Manwaring*, *Matthew Morton*, *John Birch*, *Ralph Rudyard*, *Michael Lowe*, *Michael Noble*, and *Edward Leigh*, Esquires; Sir *Walter Wrotesley*, Sir *Edward Littleton*, and Sir *Edward Brereton*, Baronets.

LITCHFIELD *City*. The Bailiffs and the Sheriff of the said City for the Time being; *Michael Noble*, *Richard Draffgate*, *Richard Baxter*, and *Thomas Burnes*, Gentlemen.

WARWICKSHIRE.

The now Mayor of the City of *Coventry*; Sir *Peter Wentworth*, Knight of the *Bath*; Sir *Edward Peyto*, Knt. *John Hales*, *Godfrey Boswell*, *John Barker*, *William Purefoy*, *Anthony Staughton*, *George Abbot*, *Thomas Boughton*, *William Colemore*, *Thomas Basnet*, *William Jesson*, *Gamaliel Purefoy*, and *Thomas Willoughby*, Esquires.

COVENTRY *City and County thereof*. *John Barker*, *Isaac Bromich*, and *Robert Philips*, Esquires.

WILTSHIRE.

Denzil Holles, Esq; Sir *Edward Hungerford*, Sir *Edward Baynton*, Sir *Nevil Poole*, and Sir *John Evelyn*, Knights; *Edward Baynton*, *Edward Tucker*, *William Wheeler*, *Edward Goddard*, *Alexander Thistlethwait*, jun. *John White*, *Edward Poole*, *Thomas Meore*, *John Ash*, and *Robert Jennour*, Esquires.

WEST-

WESTMORELAND.

Sir *Henry Bellingham*, Knt. and Bart. *George Gilpin*, *Edward Wilson*, *Nicholas Fisher*, *Thomas Sleddall*, *Rowland Dawson*, and *Allan Bellingham*, Esquires; *Roger Bateman*, *Richard Branthwaite*, *Robert Phillipson*, and *Jervase Benson*, Gentlemen. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

WORCESTERSHIRE.

John Wilde and *Richard Creswell*, Serjeants at Law; *Humphry Salloway*, *Edward Dignley*, *Edward Pit*, *Thomas Greves*, and *William Jeffryes*, Esquires.

YORKSHIRE.

East-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *William Strickland*, Bart. Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *Thomas Rymington*, Knights; *Richard Rymington*, *John Hotham*, *John Anlaby*, *Richard Darley*, *Henry Darley*, and *John Allured*, Esquires.

North-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Sir *Henry Foulis*, Sir *Thomas Norcliffe*, and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Barts. Sir *William Sheffield*, Knt. *John Hotham*, *Bryan Stapylton*, *Henry Darley*, *Henry Anderson*, *John Wastell*, *Christopher Percey*, *George Trotter*, *Matthew Smelt*, *John Legard de Malton*, *Francis Lascelles*, *Geoffrey Gate*, *John Dent*, *Thomas Robinson*, *Francis Boynton*, and *Christopher Waters*, Esquires.

West-Riding. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*; Sir *Thomas Maleverer*, Bart. Sir *William Lister*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, Sir *William Fairfax*, Sir *John Savile*, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, Knights; *John Hotham*, *Charles Fairfax*, *Henry Arthington*, *John Farrer*, *William White*, *Thomas Maleverer*, *George Marwood*, *John Robinson*, *Thomas Stockdale*, *Thomas Westby*, *John Bright*, *Thomas Boseville*, *Godfrey Boseville*, and *John Ellis*, Esquires; and Capt. *Edward Briggs*.

YORK *City*. Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and Sir *Thomas Widdrington*, Knights; *Thomas Hodgson*, *James Hutchinson*, and *John Vaux*, Aldermen; Sir *William Allanson*, and *Thomas Hoyles*

Town

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Town of KINGSTON *upon* HULL *and County thereof.* Sir *John Hotham*, Knt. and Bart *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor; *John Hotham* and *Peregrine Pelham*, Eſquires; *Lancelot Roper*, *John Bernard*, *Joſhua Hall*, *Nicholas Denman*, and *William Fapple*, Gentlemen.

Sir Hugh *Cholmley* deſerts the Parliament,

April 3. A Letter to the Houſe of Commons, from Sir *John Hotham*, was read, intimating, That Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, Governor of *Scarbrough* Caſtle, had deſerted the Parliament; but that, by his Directions, the Caſtle was regained by Capt. *Broſhel*; on which the Houſe immediately expelled Sir *Hugh*, and diſabled him from ever ſitting as a Member there; and ordered that he ſhould be impeached of High Treaſon, for falſly and perfidiouſly betraying the Truſt repoſed in him by the Parliament, falſifying his Proteſtation, and revolting to the Popiſh Army raiſed againſt the Parliament.

Nothing elſe occurring in the *Journals* from this Time worth Notice, except the foregoing, we ſhall paſs on to the 18th of this Month; when the Parliament's Commiſſioners being all returned, the Earl of *Northumberland* had the public Thanks of the Houſe of Lords given him for his prudent Management in that Buſineſs. Lord *Clarendon*, in his Account of the Treaty before given, has hinted, that this Nobleman was one of the Suſpected amongſt the Commiſſioners, as too much favouring the Royal Cauſe; and that Mr. *Martin*, one of the Committee of Safety at *Weſtminſter*, had opened a Letter from the Earl, at *Oxford*, to his Lady. We find, by the *Journals*, that this Affair was highly reſented by his Lordſhip; who, at his Return, meeting Mr. *Martin* at a Conference in the Painted-Chamber, took him aſide and queſtioned him upon it; but Mr. *Martin* juſtifying what he had done, the Earl caned him in the Preſence of ſeveral Perſons Mr. *Martin* complained of this to the Houſe of Commons; which produced the follow-

The Earl of *Northumberland* having caned Mr. *Martin* for opening a Letter of his,

following Message to the Lords, brought up by Mr. *Glynne*, who said, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'He was commanded by the House of Commons to tell their Lordships, that they had always been very tender of their Lordships' Privileges, and very desirous of the Continuance of a fair Agreement between both Houses; and they were very confident that their Lordships would be as tender of the Privileges of the House of Commons. That they were informed, That, this Day, Mr. *Martin*, a Member of the House of Commons, appointed by them to be one of the Managers at a Conference, as he was returning from it, (as the Members ought to do without any Hindrance or Violence) was assaulted in the Painted-Chamber by a Peer of great Worth, the Earl of *Northumberland*; which they held to be a Breach of the Privilege of Parliament: And for this, he said, he was commanded by the House of Commons to desire Reparation.'

A Con thereby occasioned on Breach of Privilege.

The Earl being then in the House, stood up and said, 'That he submitted himself to their Lordships' Judgment in this Business; but desired them to take his Case first into Consideration, and to get Reparation for the great Breach of Privilege done to the House of Lords, and the Injury to himself, by Mr. *Martin*, in opening his Lordship's Letter sent from *Oxford*, without any Authority; he being a Peer of that House, and then employed by it as one of the Committee to treat with his Majesty about the Affairs of the Kingdom.'

All the Answer the Lords gave to this Message from the Commons, at first, was, That they would send one by Messengers of their own. They then took into Consideration the Fact done by Mr. *Martin*, in opening the Earl's Letter without any Authority: And considering the Earl of *Northumberland* as a Member of the House of Lords, and as a Person of that Capacity he was in when the Fact was committed, being employed by their House to treat with his Majesty about the great Affairs of the King-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April. Kingdom, they conceived the Matter to be a great Breach and Violation of the Privileges of their Houſe; and it was reſolved to have a Conference with the Commons, the next Morning, concerning their Privileges, and to give them a Narration of the whole Buſineſs; and a Meſſage was ſent down accordingly. But though we are told, by the *Lords Journals*, that a Conference was held the next Day, and a Narration of the Fact made by their Lordſhips; yet it is not entered in either *Journal*, nor is there any more ſaid about this Buſineſs. [c]

April 21. Mr. *Martin* had dropp'd ſome Expreſſions, at a Conference, the Day before, which the Lords reſented: It ſeems that Houſe was not ſo forward in paſſing Ordinances for ſeizing the Eſtates of Delinquents, as the other; and, this Day, the Lords making ſome Objections to an Ordinance of that Sort, they recollected that Mr. *Martin* ſaid,

'I have ſomething to deliver to your Lordſhips in the Behalf of the Houſe of Commons. It is true, my Lords, there are ſome Privileges belonging to the Houſe of Peers, and others to the Houſe of Commons; and this of raiſing Monies you have ever, ſolely, attributed to them; ſo as your Lordſhips have never refuſed to join with them, when they have brought up any Thing that concerns the raiſing of Money: And, therefore, they expect you would not now refuſe to paſs this Ordinance without giving them ſome very good Reaſons for it.

The Lords debated this Matter for ſome Time, and afterwards appointed a Committee of ten Lords to conſider of a fit Way how to vindicate the Privilege of their Houſe, in this Particular: But it is probable this Matter was dropp'd as the former, for we find nothing more of it in the *Journals*.

This

[c] It is probable the Affair was privately made up, and that Mr. *Martin* was prevailed upon to give Satisfaction to the Earl, rather than diſoblige a Man of ſuch Conſequence to the whole Party.

The Civil War now breaking out again, with fresh Fury, in most Parts of the Nation, there are few Proceedings in the *Journals* of either House worth Notice, in this Month, which are not relative thereto. We shall not enter into a Description of the Battles, Sieges, Skirmishes, or other Military Transactions of these Times, any further than giving the Letters of Intelligence, which both Houses received from their Generals in different Parts. These being most unquestionably authentic, and very few of them ever printed, highly deserve the Public Attention; as either confirming, or setting aside, the Accounts given by later Historians. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

April 25. A Letter from the Earl of *Essex*, who then lay before *Reading* with his whole Army, was read, in the House of Lords, addressed to their Speaker, in these Words:

My Lord,

I Hold it my Duty to acquaint the Parliament with some Passages that happened Yesterday Morning and this last Night. In the Morning, about Two of the Clock, Captain Kerr, *that commands Sir* William Balfour's *Troop, with two Troops more, being upon the Guard at* Caversham, *to take Care that no Provisions should be put into the Town, the General* Ruthen, *with about* 1500 *Horse and Dragoons, namely, seven Regiments of Horse and two or three hundred Dragoons, surprized two Centinels; but, having the Alarm, our Troops charged with forty Horse, and so retreated to Colonel* Berkeley's *Regiment that was drawn over the Bridge. The Enemy charging, the Musqueteers gave Fire, and attacked Colonel* Holborn *with his Musqueteers so resolutely, that they wheeled about and went away, our few Horse following them three Miles. Their Intention was to put forty Barrels of Powder into the Town.* The Earl of *Essex*'s Letter from before *Reading*.

That Evening I sent out Colonel Middleton *and Colonel* Meldrum *with their Horse, and Colonel* Milne *with four Troops of his Dragoons, to find out the Enemy. They fell in with them about Eleven at Night,*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

at Dorchester, *where the Life-Guard of Foot lay, and the King's Standard, which they knew not of till afterwards.*

If the Soldiers could have been kept from Plundering, they might have done much more; but there being four Troops of Horse there, besides a Regiment of Foot, and being in Danger of having the Communication with Wallingford *cut off between them and us, they only routed most of that Regiment, took the Captain and Lieutenant of the Life-Guard, another Lieutenant, two of the King's Harbingers, one Cornet, which they say was Sir* Thomas Aston's, *and* 40 *other Prisoners, with* 150 *Horse.*

The King draws together all his Forces; Prince Maurice *being come, and Prince* Rupert *hourly expected at* Brill, *and is marching this Way; so that we expect this Night, or* Tuesday *Night which we rather conjecture, all their Forces to fall upon us: Besides, Proclamations are sent out to raise all the Country from sixteen to sixty; which, if the Parliament had sent out in that Kind, it would well have strengthened their Army.*

We doubt not but that God, which hath shewed us so many Blessings hitherto, will protect us out of these Storms that threaten us. We, that serve you, are in a hard Condition, losing all our Fortunes; and those that are violentest against the Parliament, have their Estates protected; if the Army be well paid, it is no Matter; if not, it must break; which I think, for the Number, is the bravest Army in Christendom. I believe that the Time is thought long that Reading *holds yet out. I assure you it is a very strong fortified Town, all pallisadoed, and strong in Out-Works.*

I am very loth to venture the Soldiers upon such Work, it being probable that many may be lost in storming; and, now especially, it were our great Hazard, the Enemy being so near, and we must be in a Posture to fight. But I doubt not, by God's Blessing, I shall give a good Account of this great Business. Sir William Waller *doth not come to me according to my Expectation and Order, though Prince*

Prince Maurice *be come from him, and turned upon me; so that I have now all the King's Forces to deal with, both without and within the Town, without the Assistance which I had Reason to look for.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Your Lordship's

From before Reading, April 24, 1643.

Humble Servant,

ESSEX.

The same Day the Commons, at a Conference, communicated a Letter, which they had drawn up to be sent to the Lord *Fairfax*, in the North, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence; which was as follows:

My Lord,

A Letter of Encouragement from both Houses to Lord *Fairfax*.

YOUR Letter of the 17th of April *hath been imparted to both Houses of Parliament, who hath commanded us to let you know, that they do join with you in their Thanks to God, who hath hitherto preserved you and those small Forces from the Power and Violence of such a Multitude of malicious and devouring Enemies; and, by your Means, hath kept some Part of that Country from their Fury and Rapine.*

They would have you rest assured, that they do very much value your Merit, Industry, and Courage expressed in so many great Services; and that they cannot manifest it in so plentiful Supplies of Money, Men, and Ammunition, as they would, and as the Danger, Necessity, and Importance of those Parts do require; which they desire you to believe not to proceed from any Neglect of that County, which they acknowledge to have contributed as much to the Support of the Common Cause as any County in the Kingdom, and have borne as great Burden of the Public Miseries.

The true Reason is, That, in this general Combustion of the Kingdom, the Contribution of most Counties are consumed in their own Defence; and the City hath been so extremely exhausted, that it can

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 April.

hardly support the Lord-General's Army, unto which a great Arrear remains unpaid, both for Pay and Supply of the Magazine: Yet, in this great Difficulty, they have taken Care to assist you both with Men, Money, and Munition; and have especially recommended it to the Committee of Lords and Commons, both to procure such a Proportion of all, as the Affairs and Necessity of the State can afford, and to dispatch them to you with as much Expedition as may be.

Your Lordship is desired to tell Sir Thomas Fairfax, *your Son, and the rest of your Commanders, that their Courage and Constancy are very much approved by both Houses; and that they will endeavour to find some Opportunity of a more real and advantageous Expression of the Esteem they have of their Service; and likewise to publish to all the Soldiers, that the Lords and Commons will not forget what they have done and endured for the Public Defence of Religion, and of the Kingdom; or omit any Occasion of giving them all due Encouragement to continue their Faithfulness in this Service for the future, and a just Recompence for that which is past. Other Particulars shall be communicated to you by your Agent, Mr.* White.

This is all we have now received in Command; we shall add nothing of our own, but our hearty Prayers for the Continuance of God's Protection and Blessing to you, and the affectionate Respects of

Your Lordship's

Friends and Servants,

Westminster, April 25, 1643.

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*,

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons in Parliament.

The *Palatine* Family has been long laid aside in these Memoirs, the Parliament, during these Troubles,

Troubles, taking very little Notice of them: And the two Princes of that Houſe, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, acting at this Time as principal Commanders in the King's Army, the Commons were much enraged againſt them. Some Letters had alſo been intercepted by the Parliament from the Queen of *Bohemia* to the King her Brother, and to her Sons; which that Princeſs was afraid would have ſo far exaſperated them againſt her, as to deprive her of that ſmall Allowance, for a Crown'd Head, which the Parliament had made her, and was then almoſt her only Support. To take off therefore any evil Notions they might have inculcated againſt her by theſe Letters, the Queen wrote the following artful one to the Houſe of Commons; which, being a Singularity in its Kind, well deſerves our Notice. It was directed to the Speaker, and was in theſe Words:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

SIR,

The Queen of *Bohemia*'s Letter to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons.

HAving underſtood, by imperfect Reports, of the Interception of ſome Letters, which I wrote occaſionally to the King and my Sons, whereat the Parliament had taken Offence, I cannot be at Reſt 'till I have endeavoured to remove all ſuch Impreſſions as might deprive me of their good Opinion, which I ſo truly value, and have ever found favourable in my Behalf. I would therefore intreat you to acquaint the Honourable Houſe of Commons, whereof you are Speaker, that albeit I cannot at preſent remember what I then particularly wrote, yet if any Thing did, perchance, ſlip from my Pen, in the private Relation between a Mother and a Son, which might give them the leaſt Diſtaſte, I intreat them to make no worſe Conſtruction of it than was by me intended; having never admitted of any Thought or Reſolutions, which hath not been ſincere and conſtant to the Public Peace and Proſperity of the Kingdom.

With this Profeſſion I deſire the Honourable Houſe to reſt ſatisfied; that I may ſtand as upright in their

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

Judgments as I am in my own Affections; and that thereupon, conſidering the Diſtreſs whereunto I am brought by the Wrongs and Oppreſſion of mine Enemies, they would give them Occaſion to rejoice by ſtopping thoſe neceſſary Supplies, which, by the Love of the King my Father, and the King my Brother, I have hitherto enjoyed, and without which I have no other Subſiſtence in this World.

I do therefore intreat the Honourable Houſe to take my preſſing Wants into their kind Conſideration, and give ſuch ſpeedy Order for my Relief, that I may be kept from Inconvenience in a foreign Country.

Sir, I crave your Favour in repreſenting hereof, and I ſhall ever remain

Your moſt aſſured Friend,

Hague, April 13, 1643. ELIZABETH.

After this Letter was read, it was ordered to be entered in the *Journals* of the Houſe of Commons, to be conſidered of on *Thurſday* Morning next, this Day being *Tueſday*; and the Speaker directed to put the Houſe in Mind of it. But we find no farther Mention of it, neither on that Day, nor any ſucceeding.

April 27. The Houſe of Commons finding that their Armies were in great Want of Pay, they had a Conference with the Lords about it; in which they offered the following Propoſitions:

A Conference on the Means for ſupplying the Earl of *Eſſex*'s Army.

First. 'On account of the Lord-General's Letter, they conſidered that his Eſtate was all ſequeſtred and ſeized upon, whereby he was utterly unable to bear the Charge now laid upon him; therefore the Commons deſired the Lords to expedite the Order, formerly ſent to them, for to put the Lord-General into Poſſeſſion of the Lord *Capel*'s Eſtate.

'In the ſame Letter they took Notice, that the Army was in Danger to diſband, unleſs Care be taken to ſupply it with Money; therefore the Commons deſired their Lordſhips to join with them in ſending

sending a select Committee of both Houses to the City of *London*, this Morning, to communicate the Lord-General's Letter to them, except that Part of it concerning Sir *William Waller* and Delinquents' Estates; and to offer to them personal Security, of the Members of both Houses, to raise a considerable Sum of Money for the Relief of the Army: Likewise to return the Common Council Thanks for the procuring of the late Sum of 44,000*l.* Also

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

'To let them know, that the King is now drawing his Forces into the Field, and has made Proclamation for all, from sixteen to sixty, to come in to his Assistance; therefore to desire the City to get their Forces in Readiness to defend it, the adjacent Counties, and the Lord-General, if there be Occasion. And

'To desire the City to collect, speedily, the Money that is behind on the Weekly Assessment; and, since the Burdens of voluntary Contributions are very great, and divers rich Men have done nothing in the Counties, the House of Commons desired their Lordships to pass the Ordinance for seizing the Twentieth Part of the Malignants' Estates in the Country, which would speedily bring in a considerable Sum.'

The Lords agreed to send a Committee of both Houses into the City, upon the Particulars aforementioned; but they objected against enjoining any Lords to give their personal Securities for the procuring of Money, and left every Lord to do therein as he pleased. And as to the Ordinance for sequestring all the Lord *Capel*'s, and that for the Twentieth Part of Malignants' Estates, the Lords would take them into their Consideration. The Earls of *Bolingbroke* [a], *Manchester* [b], and *Rutland* [c], were nominated, by the Lords, to visit the City.

April 29. Many Judgments of Sequestration against Clergymen from their Livings, with the Addition

a *Oliver St. John.* b *Edward Montague.* c *John Manners.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Addition of Impriſonment to their Perſons, for preaching againſt the Proceedings of the Parliament, are entered in both *Journals* about this Time. And,

This Day, a Meſſage was brought up from the Commons, importing, That whereas it had pleaſed God to give the Lord-General good Succeſs in the taking of *Reading* with ſo little Blood, the Commons had voted to have public Thanks given in all Churches and Chapels in the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, and the Suburbs, the next Day, for ſo great a Mercy which God had vouchſafed them. Agreed to by the Lords.

A Thankſgiving for the taking of *Reading*.

May 2. We now firſt meet with the Name of Mr. *Oliver Cromwell*, as an Officer of Rank in the Parliament's Army; a particular Ordinance being made concerning him and ſome more Officers, as *Charles Fleetwood*, *Edward Whalley*, and *John Deſborough*: Names which will occur more frequently in the Sequel. The ſaid Ordinance appoints, 'That whereas Authority was given, by a former, to Col. *Oliver Cromwell*, and others, for the ſeizing of the Perſons, Horſes, Arms, Money, and Plate of Malignants and ill-affected Perſons in the County of *Cambridge*, the Iſle of *Ely*, *&c.*' It was now further ordained, That the ſaid Col. *Cromwell*, *&c.* ſhall have Authority to ſeize their Corn and Cattle, as well as other Goods, under the Protection of both Houſes of Parliament.

The *Dutch* had been, of late, much courted by the *Engliſh* Parliament, to prevent any Supplies of Men, Arms, or Money being ſent over to the King's Aſſiſtance; but their Agent, Mr. *Strickland*, at the *Hague*, could not hinder them from ſelling Arms, or taking Pawns of the Queen's, or Crown, Jewels, for that Purpoſe. At this Time the Parliament was alarmed with the Report of a Naval Armament, then getting ready at *Dunkirk*, which was to act againſt theirs at Sea; to prevent which,

the

the following Letter was agreed upon, by both Houſes, to be ſent to their High Mightineſſes with all Speed. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

High and Mighty Lords,

WE are commanded, by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, to make known to your Lordſhips, that ſeveral Advertiſements have been given to the Committee of the Lords and Commons, appointed by both Houſes to take Care of the Safety of the Kingdom on all Occaſions that concern the ſame, both at home and abroad, That the King hath hired divers Ships and Frigates of Dunkirk, *to the Number of* 24, *or thereabouts*; *and that he intended to employ them againſt the Fleet appointed by the Parliament for the Defence of this Kingdom. It was further informed, That two of theſe Ships, or Frigates, were permitted to paſs, out of* Dunkirk, *by the Admiral of your Lordſhips Fleet, by Warrant or ſome Command from his Highneſs the Prince of* Orange; *which Information that Committee ordered ſhould be communicated to Mr.* Strickland, *now reſident in the* Hague *by Authority and Inſtructions from both Houſes*; *which Direction of that Committee of both Houſes was likewiſe ſeconded by an Order of the Commons' Houſe, and Mr.* Strickland *commanded to preſent it to your Lordſhips as he hath done.* The Parliament's Letter to the United Provinces, deſiring a good Correſpondence.

We are to intreat your Lordſhips to believe, that the two Houſes have ſuch an Opinion of the Wiſdom and Juſtice of your State, that they cannot eaſily conceive you would do any Thing ſo much to the Prejudice of the Intereſt of yourſelves, as well as of the Kingdom; *and the high Eſteem and Value which they ſet upon your Friendſhip and Correſpondency is ſuch, that they would not ſuffer any Report of that Nature to be ſpread in the World, but ſpeedily preſent it to your Lordſhips, as an Information only commonly ſpoken of, to the great Prejudice and Diſreputation of that near Union and Concurrence between this Kingdom and your State, which they moſt earneſtly deſire*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

desire may ever be continued; and they very much rejoice to hear, that there was no Ground for that Report in any Resolution of your Lordships, nor in any Command or Direction of the Prince of Orange; *whose eminent Power and Abilities they shall always hope will be expres'd in such Counsels and Actions as may be most agreeable for the Preservation of the Reformed Religion, and the Interest of both States, against the antient known Enemies of both: And the Lords and Commons do assure your Lordships, that you shall never discern any Thing, in their Intentions and Proceedings, but what, in their Judgment, shall be most proper and effectual to that End; and as they rest fully satisfied concerning the Vanity and Falshood of that Report, so they pray your Lordships to rest assured, that this Information was appointed to be presented to you, out of a tender Affection to preserve both the Being and Reputation of an inviolable Conjunction betwixt this Kingdom and your State, without Intention to reflect upon the Honour of his Highness the Prince of* Orange; *and they desire you so to continue your favourable Audience to Mr.* Strickland, *and to give Credit to him, as one authorized by both Houses of Parliament to communicate to you the Affairs of this Kingdom, and to cherish the Peace and Amity betwixt the two States, which the two Houses of Parliament are confident he will ever faithfully and effectually perform.*

We commend the Prosperity of your State, and of your Lordships, to God's Blessing, and remain

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 2; 1643.

Affectionate Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers,
pro Tempore.

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons.

May

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 3. One *De Luke* having broke open the King's Stables, and taken two young Horſes belonging to his Majeſty, the Lords ordered the Horſes to be reſtored, and *De Luke* to attend them to anſwer it. This Man produced his Warrant to the Meſſenger, from Mr. *Martin*; and Mr. *Martin* himſelf denied to return the Horſes, ſaying, *We have taken the King's Ships and Forts, and may as well take his Horſes, leſt they might be employed againſt us; but, however, he added, he would acquaint the Houſe of Commons therewith the next Morning, who would ſatisfy the Lords at a Conference.* This the Lords took very ill, and, at the Conference, they told the Commons, That they had reſolved to write to the Lord-General, to recall Mr. *Martin*'s Commiſſion; but, for himſelf, they had done nothing, in regard he was a Member of their Houſe. Adding, That they did apply themſelves unto the Commons in all Reſpect and Civility, and did look for Reparation in this Buſineſs. Inſtead of which, the Commons, on their Return to the Houſe, voted, That Mr. *Martin* did well in not delivering the two Horſes till he had made them acquainted with it: That theſe two Horſes ſhould be kept by Mr. *Martin* till this Houſe gives further Order; and that the Lord-General ſhould be deſired not to do any Thing in the Buſineſs concerning Mr. *Martin*, till he heard further from that Houſe.——To ſo low an Ebb was the Authority of the Houſe of Peers already reduced!

Diſpute between the Houſes about ſeizing two of the King's Horſes.

May 5. An Order of Parliament was made, That the Book, enjoining and tolerating of Sports upon the Lord's Day, be forthwith burnt, by the Hands of the common Hangman, in *Cheapſide*, and other uſual Places. The Sheriffs of *London* and *Middleſex* were to attend, and ſee this Order duly executed; and all Perſons, who had any of the ſaid Books, were ordered to bring them to one of the Sheriffs, for their utter Deſtruction.

The Book of Sports ordered to be burnt.

May

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 8. The Lords were ſtill much occupied in trying and condemning to Sequeſtration, Impriſonment, *&c.* many more of the Clergy, whom the Commons had accuſed of Diſaffection to their Cauſe, and Superſtition in Religion, as bowing to the Altar, and the like: To prevent which, the King put out a Proclamation againſt oppreſſing the Clergy, and intruding of factious and ſchiſmatical Perſons into their Cures; and inverting or detaining their Tythes and Poſſeſſions, by Order of one or both Houſes of Parliament, contrary to all Law and Juſtice. But this had no Effect, for they ſtill went on to ſequeſter Numbers of the Clergy; though, this Day, they were interrupted by a Meſſage from the King, occaſioned by a Bill lately ſent down to his Majeſty, for his Royal Aſſent to it. This Meſſage was introduced, as uſual, by a Letter to the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords, from the Lord *Falkland*, and was as follows:

CHARLES *R.*

The King's Meſſage concerning the Subſcriptions for the Relief of *Ireland*.

'HIS Majeſty hath, with great Deliberation, conſidered and weighed a Bill, lately preſented to him by Sir *Robert King*, Knt. *William Jephſon* and *Arthur Hill*, Eſquires, from both Houſes of Parliament, intituled, *An Act for the ſpeedy Payment of Monies ſubſcribed towards the reducing of the Rebels in* Ireland, *which yet remained unpaid.* And though, in theſe miſerable Times of Diſtraction, where there are Armies, pretended to be levied by Order of both Houſes, almoſt in every County of the Kingdom, and the good old Laws (the Obſervation whereof would preſerve the Public Peace) violated and ſuppreſſed; when the Treaty, hopefully begun towards a happy Peace, is broken, and the Committee recalled by both Houſes, as if they intended no farther Overture for laying down Arms, but to decide all Differences by the Sword; the World will eaſily judge, whether his Majeſty might not well

'well deny to consent to any new Act of Parliament; 'the much Major Part of both Houses being, by 'Force and Violence, driven and kept from those 'Councils, and his Majesty himself not suffered to 'be present: Yet such is his Compassion of Soul 'towards his poor Protestant Subjects of that his 'Kingdom of *Ireland*, that he would willingly en- 'tertain any Expedient whereby it might be evi- 'dent the Condition of that Kingdom might be 'relieved, and the Distractions of this in no Danger 'of being increased: And therefore his Majesty de- 'sires to be satisfied in these Particulars:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

I. 'How the great and vast Sums of Money al- 'ready raised by the several Acts of Parliament for 'the Relief of *Ireland*, and which, by those Acts, 'ought not to be employed to any other Purpose 'than reducing the Rebels, untill they shall be de- 'clared to be subdued, have been expended? His 'Majesty having been informed, that no less than '100,000 *l.* of that Money was, by one Order of 'one or both Houses, issued for the Maintenance of 'the Army, which hath given him Battle, under 'the Command of the Earl of *Essex*.

II. 'How his Majesty shall be secured, that the 'Money, which, by his Majesty's Consent, shall 'be raised for the Support of his Army in *Ireland*, 'shall not, for the future, be diverted from that 'Use, and employed against him in this Kingdom.

III. 'Whether it be just to compel his good Sub- 'jects, who have subscribed, to pay those Subscrip- 'tions, when as, at the Time they did subscribe, they 'conceived themselves absolved from their Under- 'taking, if, at any Time, they were content to 'forfeit the Sum mentioned in that Act: For his 'Majesty doth not conceive, that, by that Act, 'they are liable to pay the whole Subscriptions, but 'to submit to the Penalty injoined: And then his 'Majesty is not satisfied, that, by a new Law, it 'can be just to compel them to what, at the first, 'they undertook voluntarily; and, it may be, would 'not have undertaken but upon the Liberty they con- 'ceived to be then left them?

IV.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

IV. 'Whether the Power given by this new Bill 'to *Warner*, *Towse*, and *Andrews* (Persons of whose 'Integrity and Affections to the Public Peace his 'Majesty is in no Degree satisfied) be not too great; 'any Certificate of theirs being Ground enough to 'extend the Estate of any Subject in *England*, whe-'ther he ever under-writ or not?

V. 'Whether all Lands, extended by Virtue of 'this Act, being to continue in Extent till all For-'feitures be satisfied, it may not be very prejudicial 'to Creditors to whom those Lands are liable; and 'and so the Common Justice may be disturbed?

VI. 'Whether, by this Act, the Extents being 'not to be avoided, or delayed, for Omission of any 'Lands, the same may not be prejudicial to all Pur-'chasers; and whether it be not against the known 'Course of the Law?

'His Majesty desires to receive Satisfaction from 'both Houses of Parliament in these Particulars with 'all possible Expedition; and then he shall give all 'the World an Account how sensible he is of the 'Misery of *Ireland*, and how desirous he is to find 'or embrace any Way for their Relief; the best, if 'not the only, Way to which, his Majesty conceives, 'would be by a good and blessed Accommodation of 'the lamentable Distractions of this Kingdom; which, 'if the Matter of his Majesty's last Message were so 'entertained, as his Majesty hoped and expected, 'might, by the Blessing of God, in a short Time 'be effected.'

May 12. On the Petition of a Clergyman to the Lords, complaining, That the Archbishop of *Canterbury* [d] refused to institute and collate him to a Parsonage, it was resolved, That an Ordinance of Parliament should be passed, by both Houses, for sequestring all his Jurisdiction and Power of bestowing Livings, and to place them in the Power and Disposal of Parliament: That the King's Counsel should draw up an Ordinance to this Purpose, and when it came to be sent down to the Commons, to

[d] *William Laud.*

to desire that House to think of proceeding against the said Archbishop, upon their Charge of High Treason. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The same Day the Lord-General, being in the House of Lords, represented the State and Condition of the Army, and the great Want of Money; which was the Reason why they could not march and take the Advantages which occurred to them: He likewise made a short Narrative of the taking of *Reading*. Upon which it was resolved to return Thanks to his Excellency for his good Conduct, and also to have a Conference with the Other House, in order to quicken them to consider of a certain Way of supplying the Army with Money; that it might not be again in the Straits it had been before, and lose the Opportunities that are offered; which might discourage the Lord-General's Forces, and encourage the other Side.

The Lord-General further signified, that he gave Command to the Lord *Grey*, Colonel *Cromwell*, and other Forces in the North, to draw themselves into a Body, which had not been done according to his Directions; by which Neglect Convoys of Waggons and Ammunition were come to the King without any Interruption. On this the Lords thought fit to recommend the Examination of this Affair to the Lord-General, why his Commands were not obeyed, and where he found the Disobedience and Neglect, to recall his Commissions.

The next Day the Effect of this Conference was reported, That the House of Commons agreed with their Lordships in giving public Thanks to the Lord-General, and desired that the Speakers of both Houses might go to his Lordship for that Purpose: Also that they agreed in settling some certain Way of raising Money for the Supply of the Army; and desired that a Committee of both Houses might be sent into the City, to declare to them the Necessity of it. A Committee was sent accordingly.

A Committee ordered to go into the City, to solicit Money for the Army.

It

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

It is neceſſary to be remembered in this Place, that a Committtee of Lords and Commons had, for ſome Days paſt, ſat conſtantly at *Haberdaſhers-Hall*, appointed purely for Advance of Monies; and, to all that would freely lend, the Parliament allowed 8 *l. per Cent.* But, to thoſe that would neither give nor lend, nor pay the Weekly Aſſeſſment, a Power was given to their Collectors to diſtrain, by Force, and publickly ſell the Goods for the ſpeedier Payment of it; for which Service Three-pence in the Pound, and all other incident Charges were allowed them: And this was practiſed, where they had the Power, all over *England*, as well as at *London*. Twelve-pence in the Pound was alſo ordered to be paid to any Perſons who could inform where ſuch Goods were ſecreted or hid.

Order of the Commons, for puniſhing ſuch Commiſſioners of Sequeſtration, *&c.* as refuſed to act.

We have already taken Notice that ſeveral Gentlemen, nominated by the Parliament as Sequeſtrators of Delinquents Eſtates, had forborne, for different Reaſons, to execute that Office; and there appearing the ſame Backwardneſs in executing the Ordinances for raiſing Money by Aſſeſſment, the Commons found it neceſſary to make an Order, whereby ſuch Commiſſioners as ſhould refuſe to join, or ſign any Warrants, or to meet the reſt of the Commiſſioners, not being detained by Sickneſs, or other inevitable Impediments, ſhould be reputed Perſons ill affected to the Parliament; and that their Names ſhould be returned to the Houſe of Commons, in order that their Eſtates might be ſeized and ſequeſtred in the ſame Manner as thoſe of Papiſts and Delinquents.——But it does not appear that the Conſent of the Lords was ever aſked, or given, to this Order.

May 15. The Parliament's Declaration concerning the late Treaty was this Day agreed to by both Houſes, and ordered to be printed and publiſhed. The King's came out ſome Time before. Both

Both these, which are too prolix for our Purpose, may be found in the Collections of these Times [a]. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Lord-General delivered to the Lords divers Copies of Examinations, taken at *Bristol*, concerning a late Conspiracy there to give up that City to the King. This Affair is also fully discussed by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians.

On the 9th of this Month there had been a Message sent up from the Commons to the Other House, desiring them to nominate and appoint a Committee of Lords, to join with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to be sent into *Scotland*, to intreat the *Scots* to give Aid and Assistance to this Kingdom, according to the Act of Pacification. This Day the said Request was again renewed by the Commons, but not yet agreed to by the Other House.

At the same Time a Letter was brought up, ready drawn, with an Intent to send it into *Scotland*, as a Complaint against some *Scots* Lords for assisting the King against the Parliament; which was agreed to by the Lords. This Letter was directed to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, and to the Commissioners for the Preservation of the Peace of the Kingdom, and was as follows:

A Letter of Complaint to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, against the Earl of *Roxburgh*, &c.

Our very good Lords,

THE Lords and Commons of England, *now assembled in Parliament, in Pursuance of that Amity and Correspondency which they desire should ever continue between the two Nations, have commanded us to remonstrate unto your Lordships, That divers great Officers and Peers of the Realm of* Scotland, *namely, the Earl of* Roxburgh, *Earl of* Morton, *Earl of* Annandale, *Earl of* Kinnoul, *Earl of* Carnwath, *and Earl of* Lanerk, *have, during the Time of their Continuance here, made themselves Incendiaries between the King and his People; and have advised Acts of Hostility against the Subjects of this Realm, to their great Harm and Wrong; contrary to the Laws of the Realm,*

[a] *Husbands*, Fol. Edit. from p. 91 to p. 117.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May. *and contrary to the Act of Pacification, as appears by a Letter under their own Hands, a Copy whereof they send here inclosed* [b].

They do earnestly, therefore, desire your Lordships, That Order may be taken for speedy Proceedings to be had against them, and against such, within the said Realm of Scotland, *that shall assist, receive, and harbour them, or any of them; that so they may receive such Punishment for their said Offence, as by the said Act of Pacification is provided. Herewith we take our Leaves, and rest*

Your Lordships

Westminster, May 15, 1643.

Friends and Servants,

MANCHESTER,
Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore.*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the House of Commons.

May 16. An Order was made by the Commons, directed to all Justices of Peace, *&c.* all over *England* and *Wales*, to put the Statute, 1^mo *Jacobi*, in Execution, That no strong Beer or Ale should be sold at above one Penny the Quart; and, of all other Beer, two Quarts for the Penny.

An Excise was also laid on, at this Time, as follows:

An Excise laid on Ale, Cyder, Perry, *&c.*

	s.	*d.*
For each Barrel of strong Beer or Ale, of 8 *s.* the Barrel,	1	0
For a Hogshead of Cyder or Perry,	1	0
To be paid by the first Buyer. The same Tax was laid on the House-keeper, for Beer, Ale, Cyder, or Perry, brewed or made for his own Spending.		
All Alehouse-keepers, or Inn-holders, that brew and sell strong Beer and Ale of their own, each Barrel,	2	0

For

[b] This Letter was intercepted, in the North, by the Lord *Fairfax*, and by him sent to the Parliament: But it is not entered in the *Journals*.

	s.	d.	An. 19. Car. I.
For all Sorts of retailed Wines, over and above the Customs due for the same, to be paid by the first Retailer, a Quart,	0	2	1643. May.
On all Sorts of Wines bought here, besides Customs, to be paid by the first Buyer, for all he shall use in his own House, for a Quart,	0	1	
The same to be paid by the Merchant for all the Wine he shall use in his own House, besides the due Customs.			
For a Barrel of six Shillings Beer sold, to be spent, as well in Private as in Victualling Houses, to be paid by the common Brewer, or those that brew or sell the same Beer,	0	6	
On all Tobacco, not of *English* Plantation, the Pound Value, not Weight,	4	0	
For the *English* Plantation Tobacco, the same Value; both over and above all other Customs,	2	0	

The Committee, who brought in these Rates, were ordered to proceed in raising of Money, by laying a Charge on other Commodities [c].

May 18. At a Conference, this Day, the Commons communicated the following Letter they had received out of *Buckinghamshire*, containing an Account of divers Murders, Burnings, and Plunderings, committed by the King's Forces in that County. It was directed, *For our much-honoured Friend Colonel* Hampden, *or, in his Absence, to Colonel* Goodwyn, *or* Bulstrode Whitlocke, *Esq*;

SIR, Aylesbury, May 16, 1643.

WE cannot but acquaint you, that you may make it known to the House of Commons, if you please, in what miserable Condition this County is at this Time. The King hath sent into these Parts about 12 *or*

A Letter from *Buckinghamshire*, concerning Plundering by the King's Troops.

[c] This is the first Instance we meet with of an Excise. The Plan, which is printed at large in *Husbands's Collections*, p. 267, *&c.* was vigorously pursued in the Protectorship of *Cromwell*, and established by Act of Parliament soon after the Restoration. How far it has since been extended every Body knows.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May. 1400 *of his Forces, commanded, as we are informed, by the Earl of* Cleveland [d], *who is accompanied with the Lord* Chandois, *Lord* Crawford, *Sir* John Byron, *and others of Note; who, contrary to the known Laws of the Land, pillage and plunder all the Towns where they come. They murder our Neighbours that make any Defence to preserve their Goods, one Woman, among the rest, big with Child, who could make no Resistance; they cut in Pieces what Houshold Goods they cannot carry away; they sweep clean divers of our Pastures, leaving no Cattle behind them; and that no Cruelty might be left unexercised by them, they have, this Day, fired a Country Village, call'd* Swanburne, *in seven Places of the Town, for no other Reason but because they were not willing to be plundered of all they had; and guarded the Fire so carefully, with all their Forces divided into several Parts, that no Neighbour durst adventure to come to quench it all the while it burned.*

Our Forces in this Garrison, consisting only of Foot, saving one Troop of Horse, were not able to encounter with the Enemy, nor relieve our Neighbours thus despoiled; but yet, to interrupt that which to them is a Sport, we drew out some Forces in their Sight, as far as with Safety we could; whereby they have not acted this Day all the Mischief they intended to execute before Night: But what they have left undone To-day, we expect, e'er they leave us, they will make up; for they are now so strong that they quarter at Buckingham, *and where they please in these Parts, without Resistance.*

We wish the Parliament's Army were so accommodated that this County, which hath hitherto been, and yet is, most ready to serve and obey the Orders of the Houses, might not be destroyed, and made utterly unable to contribute unto it, before we can be relieved by it; but relying upon God's Providence, and the best Means which may be afforded to preserve it, we rest

Your loving Friends,

JOHN WITTEWRONG.
THOMAS TYRREL.

Upon

[d] *Thomas Wentworth.*

Upon this Letter the House of Commons pass'd some Votes, to which they desired their Lordships Concurrence, and that the said Letter might be speedily printed and published. An. 19. Car. I. 1643 May.

1. 'That this House shall invite the several Counties under the Power of the Parliament, at the Moving of my Lord General, to rise and join with his Excellency, with all their Force and Strength, in the Maintenance of this Cause of Religion, for the Preservation of the Protestant Religion, and to prevent the setting up of Popery in *England* and *Ireland*; and to redeem themselves from the Rapines, Cruelties, Spoils, and Murders committed upon them by the King's Forces; and that Letters be sent from both Houses for this Purpose.' Votes of both Houses thereupon.

The Lords agreed to this Vote.

Next it was desired by the House of Commons, That Mr. *Jephson* might make a Narrative to the Lords of some Passages that came to his Knowledge at *Oxford* when he was there, *viz.*

'That when he was at *Oxford* he did see the Lord *Dillon* and the Lord *Taaffe* near about his Majesty, being great Papists, and keeping Corrrespondency with the Rebels in *Ireland*; and he calling to Mind what Letters he had seen in *Munster*, in *Ireland*, written to the Earl of *Muskerry*, a chief Rebel, under their Hand-writing, which was to this Effect: 'To exhort him to encourage the Rebels there to go on; and though the King's Affairs were now such that he could not be seen in it, yet, in the End, he would thank them for it.' Upon this Mr. *Jephson* said, he went to the Lord Viscount *Falkland*, to acquaint him therewith, and told him of this particular Business, and what dangerous Persons they were to be near the King. His Lordship said, *He that writ this deserved to be hang'd*; nevertheless nothing is yet done to remove them from the King's Council; but the Lord *Taaffe* is since sent into *Ireland* about the Affairs there.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Houſe of Commons taking theſe Particulars into Conſideration, and ſeeing the ſame Spirit here againſt the Proteſtant Religion, and the rooting out of Proteſtants, as is in *Ireland*, have made another Vote, wherein they deſire their Lordſhips Concurrence, *viz.*

2. 'That Proceedings ſhall be had againſt all Papiſts *whatſoever*, as Traitors, that have been in Arms or actual War againſt the Parliament, or have furniſhed the King with Horſe, Arms, Ammunition, or Money, to the Maintenance of this War.'

The Lords agreed with the Commons in this Vote, leaving out the Word *whatſoever*.

May 20. Another Conference was held between the two Houſes, the Effect of which was, That the Commons preſented to the Lords certain Votes they had lately paſſed, and left them to their Lordſhips Conſideration.

Reſolutions of the Commons relating to the Great Seal.

1. 'That the Great Seal of *England* ought, by the Law of the Land, to attend the Parliament.

2. 'That the Great Seal of *England* doth not attend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do.

3. 'That, by reaſon of this, the Commonwealth hath ſuffered many grievous Miſchiefs, tending to the Deſtruction of King, Parliament, and Kingdom.

4. 'That it is the Duty of both Houſes of Parliament to provide a ſpeedy Remedy for theſe Miſchiefs.

5. 'That a Great Seal of *England* ſhall be forthwith made, to attend the Parliament for the Diſpatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom.'

This laſt Vote occaſioned a Diviſion in the Houſe, when the Numbers were 86 for making a new Seal, and 74 againſt it; in all 160 Members preſent: The moſt that have divided on any Queſtion for a long Time.

The Commons alſo added ſome Reaſons, upon which theſe Votes were grounded; which are not enter'd

enter'd. The Lords deferred debating on all these Matters till another Day. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 22. A Message from the King was this Day read in the House of Lords. It was directed to their Speaker, and was as follows:

CHARLES *R.*

The King requires an Answer to his Message of the 12th of *April*.

'SINCE his Majesty's Message of the 12th of *April*, in which he conceived he had made 'such an Overture for the immediate disbanding 'of all Armies, and Composure of these present 'miserable Distractions, by a full and free Con- 'vention in Parliament, that a perfect and settled 'Peace would have ensued, he hath, in all this 'Time, (above a full Month) procured no Answer 'from both Houses; his Majesty might well believe 'himself absolved, before God and Man, from the 'least possible Charge of not having used his utmost 'Endeavours for Peace; yet when he considers 'that the Scene of all the Calamity is in the Bowels 'of his own Kingdoms; that all the Blood 'which is spilt is of his own Subjects; and what 'Victory soever it shall please God to give him, it 'must be over those who ought not to have lifted 'up their Hands against him: When he considers 'these desperate civil Dissentions may encourage 'and invite a foreign Enemy to make a Prey of the 'whole Nation; that *Ireland* is in present Dan- 'ger of being totally lost; that the heavy Judg- 'ment of God's Plague, Pestilence, and Famine, 'will be inevitable Attendants of this unnatural 'Contention; and that, in a short Time, there 'will be so general a Habit of Uncharitableness 'and Cruelty contracted throughout the Kingdom, 'that even Peace itself will not restore his People 'to their old Temper and Security: His Majesty 'cannot but again call for an Answer to that his 'Message, which gives so fair a Rise to end these 'unnatural Distractions. And his Majesty doth 'this with the most Earnestness, because he doubts

'not

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

'not but the Condition of his Armies in several 'Parts; his Strength of Horse, Foot, and Artil-'lery; his Plenty of Ammunition (which some 'Men lately conceived he might have wanted) is so 'well known and understood; that it must be 'confessed, that nothing but the Tenderness and 'Love to his People, and those Christian Impres-'sions which always have dwelt, and, he hopes, 'always shall dwell, in his Heart, could move him, 'once more, to hazard a Refusal: And he requires 'them, as they will answer to God, to himself, 'and all the World, that they will no longer suf-'fer their Fellow-Subjects to welter in each other's 'Blood; that they will remember by whose Autho-'rity, and to what End, they met in that Council; 'and send such an Answer to his Majesty, as may 'open a Door to let in a firm Peace and Security to 'the whole Kingdom.

'If his Majesty shall again be disappointed of 'his Intention herein, the Blood, Rapine, and Di-'stractions which must follow in *England* and *Ire-'land*, will be cast upon the Account of those who 'are deaf to the Motion of Peace and Accommoda-'tion.'

Ordered, That this Message should be communicated to the House of Commons; and some Lords being appointed to draw up what was fit to be delivered to them besides, at this Conference, as the Sense of this House about it, they soon after brought in the following:

'That the Lords conceive it necessary to send the Reasons to the King, why the two Houses of Parliament could not agree to the Propositions offered in his Majesty's Message of the 12th of *April* last. To express, in that Answer to be made to his Majesty, That their Endeavours had been, and ever shall be, to put an End to these unhappy Differences; so as their Religion, Laws, and Liberties might be secured. To desire the Commons to appoint a Committee to meet one from

from the House of Lords, to consider of this whole Message, and to prepare such an Answer as they think fit to offer to the two Houses.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

The Archbishop of *Canterbury* having now lain a very long Time in the Tower, and no Process, as yet, brought against him by the Commons, his Accusers, tho' often urged to it by the Lords, an humble Petition was, this Day, (*May* 23) presented to that House, from this fallen Prelate, in these Words:

The HUMBLE PETITION of WILLIAM Archbishop of *Canterbury*,

Shewing,

THAT he hath neither Lands, Lease, nor Money; that the small Store of Plate he had is long since melted down for his necessary Support and Expences, caused by his present Troubles: That his Rents and Profits are sequestered, and now all his Goods taken from him, and no Maintenance at all allowed him; insomuch that, if some Friends of his had not had Compassion on his Wants, and sent him some little Supply, he had not been able to subsist till this present; and now this Supply is at the last. Abp. *Laud*'s Petition for Relief.

He humbly prays that your Lordships would take his sad Condition into your Considerations, that somewhat may be allowed him out of his Estate to supply the Necessities of Life; assuring himself that your Lordships will not, in Honour and Justice, suffer him either to beg or starve.

And your Petitioner, *&c.*

The Lords seem to have been touched with Compassion on the hearing of this Petition, and immediately resolved to allow the Archbishop some Maintenance, out of Charity, to supply his Necessities; and further ordered, That the Petition should be recommended from that House to the Commons. The Commons returned for Answer, That they would send one by Messengers of their own;

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

own; but we hear no more of it from that Quarter.

A Meſſage being ſent up from the Lower Houſe, to deſire the Lords to ſit a while, for they had a Matter of great Importance to communicate to them: Soon after came up Mr. *Pymme* to acquaint their Lordſhips, that the Commons had diſcharged their Conſciences by the following Vote which they had paſſed:

The Commons accuſe the Queen of High Treaſon.

'That the Queen had levied War againſt the Parliament and Kingdom; and, having diſcharged their Conſciences, they think it fit to diſcharge their Duty too; and ſaid, He was commanded by the Houſe of Commons aſſembled in Parliament, in the Name of themſelves, and of all the Commons of *England*, to accuſe and impeach, and he did accordingly now accuſe and impeach, *Henrietta Maria*, Queen of *England*, of High Treaſon. And they deſired their Lordſhips to iſſue forth Proclamations to ſummon her to appear before them, and receive a Trial and due Sentence for the ſame.' It is obſervable that theſe Votes were carried in the Houſe of Commons *Nem. Con.* The Queen had juſt before met the King at *Edge-Hill*, with a Reinforcement of 3000 Foot, 30 Troops of Horſe and Dragoons, and ſix Pieces of Cannon, beſides great Store of other Warlike Ammunition, which made the Houſe of Commons ſo exaſperated againſt her.

All that is entered in the *Lords Journals*, on this extraordinary Impeachment, is, *This to be conſidered of*; but we hear no more of it for ſome Time. There is a remarkable Letter of this Queen's, publiſhed in Duke *Hamilton's* Memoirs, wherein ſhe mentions this Impeachment in theſe Words: After giving the Duke an Account of the good State the King's Army was then in, ſhe adds, *You will give a Share of theſe News to all our Friends, if any dare own themſelves ſuch after the Houſe of Commons have declared me Traitor, and carried up their Charge againſt me to the Lords. This, I aſſure you, is true*; but

but I know not yet what the Houſe of Lords have done upon it. God forgive them for their Rebellion, as, I aſſure you, I forgive them from my Heart for what they do againſt me. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

May 27. The Committee for the Exciſe brought into the Houſe of Commons a Charge of one Penny in the Pound on all Manner of Currants imported; upon Raiſins of the Sun, one Halfpenny; *Malaga* Raiſins, and all Figs imported, one Farthing; to be paid by the firſt Buyer, over and above all other Duties and Cuſtoms. Next an Exciſe was laid on all the different Sorts of Sugars, imported and refined here; likewiſe ſo much a Yard on all imported Silks, Sattins, *&c. &c.* by Name, a long Liſt of which is entered in the *Commons Journals*; by which may be ſeen that they did not even then want a Taſte for foreign Fineries. An Exciſe laid upon Currants, Raiſins, Sugars, Silks, *&c.*

This Day the Lords entered into a long Debate, concerning the Votes lately brought up from the Houſe of Commons, about making a new Great Seal: And, the firſt Vote being debated, theſe Queſtions were put, Whether the uſe of the Great Seal of *England* ought to be applied to the Commands of the Parliament, by the Laws of the Land? It paſſed in the Affirmative. The next, Whether the Great Seal ought to attend the Commands of the Parliament, according to Law? Reſolved Negatively. The Lords agree only to ſome of the Commons' Votes relating to the Great Seal.

The ſecond Vote, 'That the Great Seal doth not atttend the Parliament, as, by the Laws of the Land, it ought to do,' being read, the Lords reſolved to have a Conference, to be informed by the Commons wherein the Great Seal hath not been applied to the Commands of the Parliament. They likewiſe reſolved to defer giving any Reſolution as to the third Vote till the ſecond was cleared.

The Houſe then proceeded to the fourth Vote, 'That it is the Duty of both Houſes of Parliament to

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

to provide a ſpeedy Remedy for theſe Miſchiefs;' and, after Debate hereof the Lords came to this Reſolution, ſomewhat different from the other, That it is the Duty of both Houſes of Parliament to uſe their beſt Endeavours to provide a fitting and ſpeedy Remedy.

The fifth Vote, 'That a Great Seal of *England* ſhall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament, for Diſpatch of the Affairs of Parliament and Kingdom,' was put to the Queſtion, and paſſed in the Negative.

To palliate theſe Reſolutions to the Commons, the Lords appointed a conſiderable Commi tee to conſider what was fit to be delivered to them, on this Subject, at the enſuing Conference.

The ſame Day another Conference was held between the two Houſes; in which the Commons communicated to the Lords ſome Letters which they had received from their General in the North, the Lord *Fairfax*, and other Officers, concerning the taking of *Wakefield*, *&c.* and that they had voted a public Thankſgiving for the ſame; which the Lords agreed to. Theſe Letters, which were addreſſed to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, were ordered to be printed and publiſhed.[e]

Lord FAIRFAX's LETTER.

SIR,

A Letter from the Lord *Fairfax* to the Speaker, about his taking of *Wakefield*.

UPON the 6th of this Month I writ to you by a ſpecial Meſſenger, which I hope is come to your Hand: Preſently after the Diſpatch of that Letter the News was brought me, that the Earl of Newcaſtle

[e] From the original Edition, publiſhed by *Edward Husbands*, *May* 27, 1643. In the Title Page it is call'd *A miraculous Victory obtained by the Right Honourable* Ferdinando *Lord* Fairfax, *againſt the Army under the Command of the Earl of* Newcaſtle, *at* Wakefield; and has the following remarkable Introduction:

'Whereas it has too often been ſeen, that, in a great Appearance 'of outward Means, we are over confident; and that, in the 'Smallneſs or Diminution of the ſame, we are too low and 'diſtruſtful; ſo walking by Sight, and not by Faith: The Divine 'Goodneſs and Wiſdom, to wean us from this Corruption, and to 'teach

castle *had possessed himself both of* Rotherham *and* Sheffield: *The Forces in* Rotherham *held out two Days Siege, and yielded up the Town upon Treaty; wherein it was agreed, that the Town should not be plundered, and that all the Gentlemen, Commanders, and Soldiers, (six only excepted, that were specially named) leaving their Arms, should have free Liberty to go whither they pleased: But, when the Enemy entered, they not only, contrary to their Articles, plundered the Town, but have also made all the Commanders and Soldiers Prisoners, and do endeavour to constrain them to take up Arms on their Party. The* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. April.

teach us the contrary Lesson, to walk by Faith and not by Sight, hath often wrought and given great Victories, by little Means, and unexpected Ways.

'A notable Pattern and Proof whereof is now seen in the Victory given at *Wakefield*; wherein God gave a happy Success upon great Disadvantage and Inequality, a far lesser Number, even less by half, overcoming a greater in a fortified Town, and the Persons taken far exceeding in Number those that took them; and all this not with the Loss of ten Persons. As this calls for the Eye of Faith, spiritually to discern the great Power and Goodness of God, which gives the Advantage of Victory on the Side of the Disadvantage in outward Force; so it calls upon us to maintain and continue a Course of Faith for the Time to come; and, by continually looking up to God, and Dependence on him, to expect from his Goodness and Bounty the like Blessing in other Times of Inequality and Disadvantage. And as this ought to confirm our Expectations for the future, so, both now and hereafter, when God's Strength doth so visibly appear in our Weakness, we ought to give the whole Glory and Praise to his Strength, and none to our own Weakness.

'Thankfulness for Blessings past being an Invitation of Blessings to come; and God not failing to supply that, which he knows will certainly turn to his own Glory. Neither ought our Thanksgiving only to bound itself in Words, or in short Thoughts and Intentions; but it should especially be expressed in a hearty and real Conversion and Conformity of Soul and Life to him, whose Will ought to be the Rule of our Life, and whose Service is the End of our Being.

'Let it also be further observed, That both this and other Victories have been given on that Day, which hath been so much opposed by dissolute and Popish Persons, even to a Confutation of it by set Discourses and practical Profanations.

'And having given all the Glory to God, it is next just and commendable to take Notice of those whom God hath vouchsafed to use in his Service, as to encourage them in God's Work, and that Cause which God doth maintain by his own mighty and outstretched Arm, thus made good in this extraordinary both Deliverance and Victory.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May. *The Commanders at* Sheffield *hearing of the Loſs of* Rotherham, *and ſeeing ſome of the Enemy's Forces advanced in View of the Town, they all preſently deſerted the Place, as not tenable with ſo few againſt ſo potent an Army; and fled away with their Arms, ſome to* Cheſterfield, *and ſome to* Mancheſter.

The Loſs of theſe two Places hath much elated the Enemy, and caſt down the Spirits of the People in theſe Parts, who daily ſee the Enemy increaſe in Power, and to gain Ground; and no Succours come to them from any Part: The Earl of Newcaſtle's *Army do now range over all the South-Weſt Part of this County,* [f] [pillaging and cruelly uſing the well-affected Party] *and the laſt Week there was a Garriſon of Horſe and Foot laid at* Knareſbrough, *where they begin to fortify the Town,* [and pillage and utterly ruin all the religious People in thoſe Parts, and round about them.]

On Friday *Se'nnight laſt three Troops and ſome other Forces, of which many were* French, *came from that Garriſon and pillaged* Otley, [and there barbarouſly uſed ſome honeſt Women of that Town] *and, in their Retreat to* Knareſbrough, *upon the Foreſt they took a Man and a Woman; the Man they wounded and beat cruelly, and before his Face raviſhed the Woman.*

Theſe Particulars I repeat, that you may the more clearly diſcern the Miſeries which this Country groans under; and here, about Leeds, Bradford, *and* Halifax, *being a mountainous barren Country, the People now begin to be ſenſible of Want; their laſt Year's Proviſions being ſpent, and the Enemy's Garriſons ſtopping all Proviſions both of Corn and Fleſh, and other Neceſſaries that were wont to come from the more fruitful Countries to them; their Trade utterly taken away, their Poor grow innumerable, and great Scarcity of Means to relieve them. And this Army, which now lies amongſt them to defend them from*

[f] This and the following Letter are printed in *Ruſhworth*; but the Introduction before given, and the Paſſages between Crotchets are omitted; as is likewiſe the Poſtſcript in Mr. *Stockdell*'s Letter, relating to the King's Commiſſion for plundering.

from the Enemy, cannot defend them from Want, which causeth much Murmur and Lamentation amongst the People. And for the Army itself, it is so far in Arrear, and no Way appearing how they shall either be supplied with Money or Succours, as they grow very mutinous. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Yet, upon Saturday *last, in the Night, I caused to be drawn out of the Garrisons in* Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, *and* Howley, *some Horse, Foot, and Dragooners, in all about* 1500 *Men, and sent them against* Wakefield, *commanded by my Son, and assisted by Major-General* Gifford, *Sir* Henry Fowlis, *and Sir* William Fairfax, *with divers other Commanders: They appeared before* Wakefield *about Four o'Clock on* Sunday *in the Morning, where they found the Enemy, who had Intelligence of their Design, ready to receive them; there was in the Town General* Goring, *Serjeant-Major-General* Mackworth, *the Lord* Goring, *with many other principal Commanders and eminent Persons, about seven Troops of Horse, and six Regiments containing* 3000 *Foot; the Town well fortified with Works, and four Pieces of Ordnance; yet our Men, both Commanders and common Soldiers, went on with undaunted Courage; and, notwithstanding the thick Vollies of small and great Shot from the Enemies, charged up to their Works, which they entered, seized upon their Ordnance, and turned them upon themselves; and pursued the Enemy so close as they beat quite out of the Town the most Part of the Horse, and a great Number of the Foot, and made all the rest Prisoners; with them they took four Pieces of Ordnance, and all the Ammunition then in the Town, and a great Number of Arms; and, amongst the Prisoners, General* Goring *himself, with divers other Commanders and other common Soldiers, in all about* 1500 *Men,* 27 *Colours of Foot, and three Cornets of Horse; of which I send a more particular Account inclosed. The more exact and particular Relation of this Service, as it is testified to me under the Hands of the principal Commanders employed*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

ployed in that Design, I send you inclosed for your better Information; and truly, for my Part, I do rather account it a Miracle than a Victory; and the Glory and Praise be ascribed to God that wrought it; in which, I hope, I derogate nothing from the Merits of the Commanders and Soldiers, who every Man, in his Place and Duty, shewed as much Courage and Resolution as could be expected from Men. When the Town was thus taken, they found their Number and Strength too weak to keep it and their Prisoners, so left the Place and marched away with their Booty.

In taking the Town we lost no Man of Note, and only seven Men in all; of which one was the Clerk of the Stores, an Ensign of Foot, and one Quarter-master of Horse, the rest common Soldiers; but many of our Men were shot and wounded. This Overthrow hath much enraged the Enemy, who threaten a present Revenge, and are drawing all their Forces this Way to effect it.

I perceive there are Succours sent to Lincolnshire *and other adjacent Counties, which, if they were here, might be employed to as much Advantage for the Public Safety, as in any Place. I desire our Condition may be seriously thought on by the House, and the Aids, often promised, may presently march away to us; and that Col.* Cromwell, *with his Horse and Foot, may also be ordered to march to me; that, being joined together, I may be able to draw this Army into the Field, and gain fresh Quarters for the Soldiers, and furnish ourselves with Powder, Arms, and Ammunition; which is now grown very scarce, and cannot be supplied untill the Passage to* Hull *be forced open, which now is possessed by the Enemy. If such Succours come not timely to us, we cannot long subsist, but must be forced to accept of dishonourable Conditions; which, besides the Loss and Ruin of this Country, will be a great Disadvantage to the general Safety; and, withall, some Course must be thought on to furnish some large Proportion of Money to defray the Soldiers Arrears, which I be-*

beſeech you to endeavour for them and me, who am

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

Your moſt affectionate

Leeds, May 23, 1643.

Friend and Servant,

FER. FAIRFAX.

P. S. *I ſend you a Letter incloſed from the Lord* Goring *to his Son, General* Goring, *found in his Chamber at* Wakefield, *which will let the Houſe ſee the Enemies great Deſire to have this Army ruined, that they might, with their whole Force, march Southwards.*

Lord GORING's LETTER *to his* SON.

George,

'I Saw what you wrote to *H. Jermin*, and find 'that the Buſineſs will be put on that Way: 'But I am of Opinion that your General will never 'conſent to it, the latter Way of dividing his 'Force, unleſs it be in the Country where he will 'abide himſelf; this will be tried To-morrow, at 'his Return hither, where the Queen expects him. 'In the Interim, if it were poſſible to give the 'Enemy any ſuch Knock, or conſiderable Diſturb-'ance to the Country round about them, which 'hath not yet felt the Miſery of their Neighbours, 'I would not doubt the Treaty might be reſumed 'again; by which Means, and by no other, your 'Army may be ſet at Liberty to change your 'Stations, and do ſomething that may be of Con-'ſequence indeed. I pray you think ſeriouſly 'hereof, and once in your Life follow the Advice 'of

Your beſt Friend,

April 17, 1643. *and dearly loving Father,*

GORING.

'After I had ſealed my Letter I was adviſed to 'advertiſe you, that the Lord *Fairfax* never be-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

'lieved you would look into the Parts where now 'you are, but intended to draw back to the Place 'from whence you came, which made him so lofty 'in his Conditions; wherefore, if you can (as my 'Authors propose) get between *Bradford* and *Leeds*, 'you will so annoy, divert, and separate them in 'all their Designs, as you may be sure to carry '*Halifax* and *Bradford* on that Hand, or *Leeds* on 'the other. Take this to Heart, and let General '*King*, with my humble Service, know thus much, 'not as new to him and the rest of you, but as that 'which all the wisest and most knowing Men in 'the Country advise and hope; this will so hare 'them, and satisfy this Country, and will give such 'other Advantages as will render you happy and 'glorious too; whereas, on the contrary, all will 'fall flat, both in Power and Reputation, past Ex-'pression; her Majesty will be either unprovided of 'such a Convoy from thence as is fit for her and 'the King's present Occasions, or else leave this 'Country naked to the Tyranny of the mercileſs 'Enemy, contrary to Contract and all due Justice. 'This is the Opinion of others far better able to ad-'vise than he that so heartily prays for you, and is

York, April 17, 1643. *Yours,*

GORING.

P. S. 'Cudgel them to a Treaty, and then let 'us alone for the rest.'

A LETTER from Sir THOMAS FAIRFAX and other Officers.

ON Saturday *Night, the 20th of* May, *the Lord-General gave Order for a Party of* 1000 *Foot, three Companies of Dragooners, and eight Troops of Horse, to march from the Garrisons of* Leeds, Bradford, Halifax, *and* Howley. *Sir* Thomas Fairfax *commanded in Chief; the Foot were commanded by Serjeant-Major-General* Gifford *and Sir* William Fairfax; *the Horse were divided into two Bodies, four Troops commanded by Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *and the*

the other four Troops by Sir Henry Foulis. Howley *was the Rendezvous, where they all met on* Saturday *laſt, about Twelve o'Clock at Night; about Two next Morning they marched away, and coming to* Stanley, *where two of the Enemy's Troops lay with ſome Dragooners, that Quarter was beaten up, and about twenty-one Priſoners taken. About Four o'Clock in the Morning we came before* Wakefield; *where, after ſome of their Horſe were beaten into the Town, the Foot, with unſpeakable Courage, beat the Enemies from the Hedges, which they had lined with Muſqueteers, into the Town, and aſſaulted it in two Places,* Wrengate *and* Northgate. *After an Hour and a Half's Fight we recovered one of their Pieces, and turned it upon them, and entered the Town at both Places, at one and the ſame Time: When the Barricadoes were opened, Sir* Thomas Fairfax, *with the Horſe, fell into the Town, and cleared the Street; where Col.* Goring *was taken by Lieutenant* Alured, *Brother to Capt.* Alured, *a Member of the Houſe; yet in the Market-Place there ſtood three Troops of Horſe, and Col.* Lambton's *Regiment, to whom Major-General* Gifford *ſent a Trumpet with Offer of Quarter, if they would lay down their Arms; they anſwered, They ſcorned the Motion; then he fired a Piece of their own Ordnance upon them, and the Horſe fell in upon them, beat them out of the Town, and took all theſe Officers hereafter-mentioned, alſo twenty-ſeven Colours of Foot, three Cornets of Horſe, and about* 1500 *common Soldiers. The Enemy had in* Wakefield 3000 *Foot, and ſeven Troops of Horſe, beſides Col* Lambton's *Regiment, which came into the Town after we had entered it. The Enemy left behind them four Pieces of Ordnance, with Ammunition, which we brought away; and made the following Commanders Priſoners,* viz. *General* Goring; *Sir* Thomas Bland, *Lieutenant-Colonel to Sir* George Wentworth; *Lieutenant-Colonels* Saint George *and* Macmoyler; *Serjeant-Major* Carr; *Captains,* Carr, Knight, Wildbore, Rudſton, Pemberton, Croft, Legard, Laſhley, Kayley, *and* Nuttall; *Captain-Lieutenant* Benſon; *Serjeant-Major* Carnabie, *and*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. May.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Capt. Nuttall *left wounded in* Wakefield, *upon their Engagements to be true Prisoners*; *Lieutenants*, Monckton, Thomas, Wheatley, Kent, *and* Nicholson; *Ensigns*, Squire, Vavasor, Maskew, Lambton, Ducket, Stockeld, Baldwinson, Davis, Carr, Gibson, Smathweight, Ballinson, Watson, Smelt, *and* Haliburton; *Cornet* Wyvill.

THOMAS FAIRFAX,	JOHN HOLMAN,
HENRY FOULIS,	ROBERT FOWLIS,
JOHN GIFFORD,	TITUS LEIGHTON,
WILLIAM FAIRFAX,	FRANCIS TALBOT.

Annexed to the foregoing Letter we find Part of a Postscript wrote by another Hand.

I had forgotten, in the Letter to the Speaker, to mention the new Commissions granted by the King; wherein his Majesty, according to the known Laws of the Land (as all Things are said to be done) gives Liberty to the Parties to whom the Commissions are directed, to plunder and take Men's Estates, so as they account for the Moiety of the Profit to his Majesty: This is confessed by the Captains now Prisoners here.

Your Servant,

From Leeds, May 23, 1643. THOMAS STOCKDELL.

It is now about three Weeks since we had any Letter from you, or any Advertisement from the South.

An Order relating to the Regalia in *Westminster* Abbey.

June 2. On a Motion in the House of Commons, That the Dean, Sub-Dean, and Prebendaries of *Westminster* Abbey, should be required to deliver up the Keys of the Treasury there, where the Regalia were kept, that the Place might be searched, and a Report of it made to the House, the Question was put, Whether, upon Refusal of the Keys, the Door of that Place should be broke open? It passed in the Negative, 58 against

againſt 37: But, the next Day, the ſame Queſtion being again put, with the Addition of an Inventory of the Things there to be taken, new Locks put on the Doors, and nothing removed till upon further Order of the Houſe, it was carried by ſo ſmall a Majority as 42 againſt 41, for breaking open the Doors. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

The important Town of *Newcaſtle* upon *Tyne* had been, for ſome Time paſt, in the Hands of the King's Forces; by which the City of *London* was much ſtraitened for Coals, the Works and Mines for digging this uſeful Commodity being all engroſſed by the Royaliſts, as well as the ſeveral Ports from which it was ſhipped off and conveyed to *London*. To remedy this great Inconvenience to the City, after many Conſultations and Conferences, a Scheme was publiſhed, put on the Footing of the Adventurers for *Ireland*; by which Means thoſe Northern Parts of *England* were to be as much a conquered Country as the other; and the Lands and Eſtates of many great Families ſhared out amongſt thoſe who would venture to advance Money for this Expedition. An Ordinance to that Purpoſe was paſſed by both Houſes, about this Time, and ordered to be printed and publiſhed. Another for reducing of *Newcaſtle*.

June 5. A Petition from the Univerſity of *Cambridge* was preſented to the Lords: That of *Oxford* was, at this Time, protected from the Parliament's Reſentment, by the King's Reſidence there with his Army; but what her Siſter ſuffered is beſt expreſſed in her own Words:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS now aſſembled in the High Court of Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*

HUmbly preſenteth to your Honourable Conſideration the ſad dejected State of the Univerſity; how our Schools daily grow deſolate, mourning the Petition from the Univerſity of *Cambridge*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Absence of their Professors, and their wonted Auditories; how, in our Colleges, our Numbers grow thin and our Revenues short; and what Subsistence we have abroad is, for the most Part, involved in the common Miseries; how, frighted by the neighbouring Noise of War, our Students either quit their Gowns or abandon their Studies; how our Degrees lie disesteemed, and all Hopes of our public Commencements are blasted in the Bud; besides sundry other Inconveniences which we forbear to mention.

We cannot but conceive your Honourable Piety (out of a noble Zeal for Learning) will duly pity our sad Condition; and, as the present general Calamities give Way, afford us some Succour and Encouragement.

Your Wisdoms best know what Privileges and Immunities have been, in all good Times, afforded to the Seats of Learning and Professors of it; and, even in the Fury and Heat of War, Places of Religion and Devotion have usually not only, on both Sides, been spared from Ruin, but supported and esteemed as Sanctuaries. Hence it is that the Members of our University (by Charter confirmed by Act of Parliament) are expressly freed from all Preparations and Contributions to any War; hence it is that, in neighbouring Territories, where the Excise is most in Use, the University, with all their Students, are exempt.

May it therefore not be displeasing to your pious Wisdoms, if, in all Humility, we crave at your Hands a tender Consideration of our Case; that you will be pleased to exempt our poor Estates from all such Rates and Impositions; to vouchsafe such Freedom to our Persons, not giving just Offence, as may enable us the better to keep together, and daily to offer up our joint Prayers to God for a blessed Union betwixt our gracious Sovereign and you, and the Blessing of Peace upon the Land.

After this Petition the Ordinance of the Lords and Commons, formerly made, was read, for the calling an Assembly of learned and godly Divines, to

to be consulted with by Parliament, for the setting the Government and Liturgy of the Church of *England*; and vindicating and clearing the Doctrine of the said Church from false Aspersions and Interpretations. This Ordinance was referred to the Consideration of thirteen Lords, appointed as a Committeee, to report the same to the House. This Assembly of Divines soon after met, to the Number of sixty-nine, in *Henry* VIIth's Chapel, in the Abbey of *Westminster*, where a Sermon was preached, before them and the two Houses of Parliament, by Dr. *Twist*, their Prolocutor; and, a Day or two after, a public Fast was kept by them[a]. What they did, when met together, will appear in the Sequel.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

Meeting of the Assembly of Divines at *Westminster*.

June 8. The House of Commons had been very busy, some Days, in tracing out a Plot against the Parliament, and securing the Authors and Contrivers of it. The Names of these Conspirators were, Mr. *Waller*, a Member of the House of Commons, and one of their late Commissioners at *Oxford*, Mr. *Tomkins*, Mr. *Chaloner*, and others, whose Design, being amply related by Lord *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, and other Historians, we shall confine our Account of it to what the Journals and the Pamphlets of these Times afford us. It appears from the former that

A Plot against the Parliament;

This Day, at a Conference, the House of Commons produced the Examinations they had taken concerning this Plot, to prove the Particulars of it, and also made some Observations thereupon. They then presented to the Lords the Form of an Oath, or Covenant, which the Members of their House, for the most Part, had already taken, except a few, who desired some Days to consider of it; and this they requested the House of Lords to take also. They further brought up an Oath, or Covenant, to be taken by the whole Kingdom, for Discovery of such Designs as these, and to express a Detestation of

Which gives Rise to a new Oath, or Covenant.

[a] The Ordinance for calling this Assembly is at Length in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 337, and in *Husbands's Collections*, p. 208, whereby it appears that a vast Number more were named than met at this Time.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

of all of the like Nature. Laſtly, they ſaid it was to diſtinguiſh the good and the well-affected Party from the bad, and unite the former faſter together amongſt themſelves.

This Affair, *Whitlocke* tells us, was long debated in the Houſe of Commons; but was, at laſt, carried, and thoſe Members looked upon as diſaffected who were any way backward in taking of it. And, after another long Debate, it was ordered to be taken by all Perſons, in City and Country; and thoſe who refuſed it had the Mark of Malignancy fixed upon them.

Next the Commons offered ſome Votes, which had paſſed their Houſe to the Lords, for their Concurrence; as,

1. 'That a particular ſhort Day may be appointed, wherein both Lords and Commons, with the Cities of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, &c. may meet and give public Thanks to God for this Diſcovery and great Deliverance.' Agreed; and the 13th Inſtant appointed for the Parliament and City, and that Day Month for the whole Kingdom.

2. 'That a free Pardon ſhall be granted for all ſuch Perſons that have been in this Plot, and are not yet taken, nor have fled, as ſhall come in voluntarily before the 15th of this Month, and diſcover their whole Knowledge of this Deſign, and ſhall heartily join with the Parliament in Defence of the Kingdom.

3. 'That it be recommended to the City to have a ſtricter Guard kept till this Buſineſs be ſettled; and that ſome better Courſe may be taken for ſecuring the Priſoners, and keeping them in cloſe Cuſtody.

4. 'That Letters be ſent to the Earl of *Warwick*, to inform him of this Plot; and that the ſaid Oath may be taken by all the Officers and Mariners through the whole Fleet.

The Lords agreed to every one of theſe Votes, without any Alteration.

The

The Commons also thought fit to send a Deputation of their House into the City, as this Day, to make the same Narrative to them as was made to the Lords. Mr. *Pymme*, being chosen Orator for this Purpose, delivered himself, at a Common-Hall, in these Words [b]:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

My Lord Mayor, and you worthy Citizens of this famous and magnificent City,

Mr. *Pymme*'s Narrative of the Plot, as delivered at the *Guildhall*.

'WE are sent hither to you from the House of Commons, to make known to you the Discovery of a great and mischievous Design, tending not only to the Ruin and Destruction of the City and of the Kingdom; but, in those Ruins, likewise to have buried Religion and Liberty. I might call it a strange Design (though, in these late Times, Designs of this Kind have been very frequent) because it exceeds others in divers considerable Circumstances of it; in the Malice of the Intention, Subtilty of Contrivance, Extent of Mischief, and Nearness of Execution; all which arose from the Wickedness of the Authors. Two others may be added; that is, the Clearness of the Discovery and Proof, and the Greatness of the Deliverance, proceeding from the great Mercies of God.

'I shall, in the opening this Design, take this Course for my own Memory and yours; and observe,

'*First*, What was in their Aims.

'*Secondly*, The Variety of Preparations.

'*Thirdly*, The Degrees of Proceedings. And,

'*Fourthly*, The Maturity and Readiness for Execution.

'The Parliament, the City, and the Army, seem to be the three vital Parts of this Kingdom; wherein not only the Well-being, but the very Life and Being of it doth consist; this Mischief would have seized upon all these at once.

'The

[b] From the Original Edition, printed for *Peter Cole*, in *Cornhill*, near the *Royal Exchange*; and said, in the Title-Page, to be corrected by Mr. *Pymme*'s own Hand for the Press.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The City should have been put into such a Combustion, as to have your Swords imbrued in one another's Blood: The Parliament should have been corrupted, and betrayed by their own Members: The Army destroyed, if not by Force, yet for Want of Supply and Maintenance, that so they might have had an open and clearer Way to the rest which they had in Proposition; especially to that main and supreme End, The Extirpation of Religion.

'I shall tell you, first, out of what Principles this did rise; it was from the Ashes of another Design that failed; that mutinous Petition which was contrived in this City; the Actors of that Petition being therein disappointed, they fell presently into Consultation how they might compass their former End in another Way; that is, under Pretence of securing themselves by Force against the Ordinances of Parliament, and, under Pretence of procuring Peace, they would have made themselves Masters of the City, yea of the whole Kingdom; and they would have ruined and destroyed all those that should have interrupted them in their mischievous Intentions.

'The first Step in their Preparation was, To appoint a Committtee that might often meet together, and consult how they might compass this wicked End.

'Their next was, That they might enable that Committee with Intelligence from both Armies, as well those on the King's Side, (as they call themselves, though we be of the King's Side indeed) as those that are raised by the Parliament; especially they were careful to understand the Proceedings of Parliament, that so, by the Advantage of this Intelligence, they might the better effect that which they had in Project, and find the readiest and the neareſt Ways to it.

'After they had thus provided for Intelligence, then how to procure Power and Countenance to this Action, by some appearing Authority from his Ma-

Majesty: For which Purpose they projected to get a Commission from the King, whereby many of themselves, and of those that were of their own Consort, should be established a Council of War in *London* and Parts adjacent, with Power to raise Forces, make Provisions of Ammunition, and of other Kind of Arms, and to give Authority to the leading and conducting of those Forces, and to raise Money for the Maintenance of them; and, as it is expressed in the Commission, for the Destruction of the Army under the Command of *Robert* Earl of *Essex*, raised by Authority from the two Houses of Parliament. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Having laid these Grounds, I shall, in the next Place, discover to you those that should have been Actors and Agents in this Business, their several Qualifications and Relations.

'The first Sort was some Members of the City, whereof there were divers, you shall hear the Names out of the Proofs; the next was (in their Pretence, as they gave out) Members of the two Houses of Parliament; the third Sort was, two Gentlemen, Mr. *Waller* and a Brother-in-Law of his, Mr. *Tomkins*, that were to be Agents betwixt the Parliament and the City, as they pretended; a fourth Sort was, those that were to be Messengers to convey Intelligence from this Place to the Court at *Oxford*, and to other Places where there should be Occasion; and the fifth and last consisted but in one Man, that we yet discover, and that was the Lord of *Falkland*, that kept Correspondency with them from the Court: These were to be the Actors in this mischievous Design.

'They began then to think upon some other Courses of very great Advantage to themselves.

'The first was of Combination; how they might be more closely conjoined one to another, and how they might be more secure from all others that were not of the same Party; and, for this Purpose, there was devised a Protestation of Secrecy, whereby, as they were Christians, they did bind them-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

themſelves to keep one another's Counſel, not to reveal that which they had Knowledge of, which they were truſted with: And the ſecond was, a Warineſs in diſcovering the Buſineſs to any of thoſe who were to be brought into the Plot; for though they came in amongſt them to be of them, they would not truſt all of their own Body: But they took this wary and ſubtle Courſe, that no one Man ſhould acquaint above two in this Buſineſs, that ſo, if it came to Examination, it ſhould never go farther than three, by the ſame Party that diſcovered it; and then thoſe two had the like Power, that any one of them might diſcover it to two others, that ſo ſtill it might be confined within the Number of three: Then there was a ſpecial Obligation, as was pretended by Mr. *Waller*, which he had made to thoſe that he ſaid were Members of both Houſes of Parliament, and conſenting to this Plot; but that is yet but a Pretence, no Names or Parties are known.

'After they had provided thus for their Combination, and for their Security, then, in the next Place, they thought of ſome Means of Augmentation, how they might increaſe their Numbers, and draw in others to come to be of their Party; and for this they did reſolve to uſe all their Art and Subtilty to irritate Men's Minds againſt the Parliament; they found out thoſe that thought themſelves moſt heavily burdened with theſe Taxes; they did cheriſh all that had any Diſcontents about the Aſſeſſment, adviſing them to repair to the Committee for Eaſe, which they knew would be difficult to obtain; and that they, being diſappointed, would be more enraged, and the apter to join with them in this Plot.

'From this Care of Augmentation, they went, in the next Place, to find out ſome Means of Diſcovery; that they might know how far their Party did extend, who were of their Side, and who were againſt them; and, for this Purpoſe, they did deviſe that there ſhould be a Survey of all the Wards, nay

nay of all the Pariſhes, within the City of *London*, the Suburbs and Places adjoining in every Pariſh, to obſerve thoſe that were for them, whom they called Right Men; and others that were againſt them, whom they called Averſe Men; and then a third Sort, whom they called Neutrals and Indifferent Men; and they appointed ſeveral Perſons, that were truſted with this Survey and Inquiry, to find out theſe ſeveral Degrees and Sorts in every Pariſh. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Thus far this Deſign ſeems to be but a Work of the Brain, to conſiſt only in Invention and Subtilty of Deſign; but the other Steps and Degrees, which I ſhall now obſerve to you, will make it to be a Work of the Hand, to bring it ſomewhat nearer to Execution.

'The firſt Step that came into Action and Execution was, That they procured this Commiſſion, which they had before deſigned and endeavoured to obtain: Now they had obtained a Commiſſion, as I told you before, to eſtabliſh certain Men, ſeventeen in Number; their Names are there expreſſed; you ſhall hear them read to you; they were to be a Council of War here within the City; theſe ſeventeen Men had Power to name others to themſelves, to the Number of Twenty-one; and they ſhould be enabled both to appoint not only Colonels and Captains, and other inferior Officers of an Army, but to appoint and nominate a General; they had Power to raiſe Men, to raiſe Arms and Ammunition, and to do all thoſe other Things that I told you before; and to lay Taxes and Impoſitions, to raiſe Money, and to execute Martial Law.

'When they had gone thus far, in the next Place they did obtain a Warrant from the King; and this was to Mr. *Chaloner*, that he might receive Money and Plate of all thoſe, that, either by voluntary Contribution or Loan, would furniſh the King, in this Neceſſity of his, as they call'd it; and thereby the King was obliged to the Repayment of it: This was obtained.

'By

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'By this cometh in the Liſt; and what was before Part of the Deſign, cometh now into Act; the Citizens that were truſted with framing of this Liſt brought it in, except in ſome few Pariſhes, under thoſe Heads of Diſcovery that I formerly told you of; that is, in every Pariſh who were Right, who were Indifferent and Neutral, and who were Averſe; and thoſe were brought to Mr. *Waller*'s Houſe. After they had delivered that Liſt, the Citizens then declared themſelves that now they had done their Part; as they had diſcovered to them a Foundation of Strength, they did expect from them again a Foundation of Countenance and Authority, that was from both Houſes of Parliament; and they did declare that they would proceed no farther till they knew the Names of thoſe Members of both Houſes that ſhould join with them, and ſhould undertake to countenance this Buſineſs. Mr. *Waller* made this Anſwer, That he did aſſure them that they ſhould have Members of both Houſes, both Lords and Commons, to join with them; that he himſelf was but their Mouth; that he ſpoke not his own Words, but their Words; that he was but their Agent, and did their Work; that they ſhould have of the ableſt, of the beſt, and of the greateſt Lords, and the greateſt Number; nay, that they ſhould pick and chuſe; that they could not wiſh for a Lord, whom he doubted not but to procure them: This was the Vanity of his Boaſting to them to draw them on, and to encourage them in this Plot. This being now done, and propounded by the Citizens on their Part, Mr. *Waller* propounded from the Lords divers Quæries and Queſtions which had been framed, as he ſaid, by the Lords and Commons; and, in their Name, he did preſent them that were for the Removal of Difficulties, of ſome Obſtructions, that might hinder this Work: Thoſe Quæries were delivered upon *Friday* was Se'nnight to ſome of the Citizens, and, upon the *Saturday* Morning, (that was *Saturday* was Se'nnight) they were returned back again with Anſwers.

'I

'I shall now relate to you both the Quæries and the Answers that were returned by those of the City. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The first Quære was, What Number of Men there were armed?

'The Answer to this was, That there was a third Part well armed, a third Part with Halberts, and another third Part with what they could get; with what came to Hand.

'The second Quære was, In what Places the Magazines were laid?

'The Answer to that was, At Alderman *Fowk*'s House, at *Leadenhall*, and at *Guildhall*.

'The third Quære was, Where the Rendezvous should be?

'The Answer was, At all the Gates, the Places of the Magazines, in *Cheapside*, in the *Exchange*, and at what other Places the Lords should think fit.

'The fourth Quære was, Where was the Place of Retreat, if there should be Occasion?

'The Answer was, That they had *Banstead Downs*, they had *Blackheath*, in Proposition; but they did refer the Conclusion of the Place to the Lords.

'The fifth was, What Colours there should be?

'To this it was answered, That at every Rendezvous there should be Colours.

'A sixth Consideration was, By what Marks and Tokens they should be distinguished from others, and know their Friends from their Enemies?

'To this it was answered, That they should have white Ribbons or white Tape.

'Then, in the seventh Place, it was asked, What Strength there was within the Walls, and what Strength without the Walls?

'To this it was answered, That, within the Walls, there was for one with them, three against them; but, without the Walls, for one against them, there were five for them.

'The eighth was, What was to be done with the *Tower*?

'The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The Answer was, That they could conclude nothing in that Point.

'The ninth was, Where the Chief Commanders dwelt?

'To that they made this Answer, That every Parish could tell what new Commanders and Captains they had, and who of the Militia dwelt in it.

'The tenth and the last was, What Time this should be put in Execution?

'To that the Answer was, That the Time was wholly left to the Lords.

'After all these Quæries, thus propounded and answered, Mr. *Waller* told them, That he would acquaint the Lords with those Answers that he had received from them to their Quæries; and wished them not to be troubled, tho' the Lords did not yet declare themselves, for they could do them as good Service in the House.

'Being proceeded thus far, they came then to some Propositions which should be put in Execution, and they were these:

'*First*, That they would take into their Custody the King's Children that were here.

'The *second* was, That they would lay hold of all those Persons that they thought should be able to stand in their Way, or to give them any Impediment, or at least of some considerable Number of them; it is unlike that all were named, but some were named; of the Lords' House there were named my Lord *Say* and my Lord *Wharton*; and besides my Lord Mayor, whom they took into their Consideration as the Head of the City, there were named of the House of Commons, Sir *Philip Stapylton*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Strode*; and they did me the Honour and Favour to name me too.

'When they had taken into Consideration the Surprizal of these Members of both Houses, they did take into their further Resolution, that, with my Lord Mayor, should have been seized all your Committee of Militia; they would not spare one of them.

'They

'They intended further, that they would releaſe all Priſoners that had been committed by the Parliament; that they would ſeize upon the Magazines; that they would make a Declaration to ſatisfy the People. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'There are no Deſigns, be they never ſo ill, but they do put on a Maſk of ſome Good, for betwixt that that is abſolutely and apparently ill, there is no Congruity with the Will of Man; and therefore the worſt of Evils are undertaken under a Shadow and a Shew of Goodneſs: A Declaration muſt be ſet out, to make the People believe that they ſtood up for the Preſervation of Religion, for the Preſervation of the King's Prerogative, of the Liberties of the Subject, of the Privileges of Parliament; and of theſe 1000 Copies were to be printed; they were to be ſet upon Poſts and Gates in the moſt conſiderable and open Places; and they were to be diſperſed, as much as they could, through the City againſt the Time it ſhould be put in Execution: This was done upon *Saturday* laſt was Se'nnight, in the Morning.

'Then, in the next Place, they thought fit to give Intelligence to the Court of what Proceedings they had made here; and thereupon Mr. *Hazel* was ſent to *Oxford*, that very *Saturday* in the Afternoon, from Mr. *Waller*'s Houſe. There were two Meſſages ſent by him, for this main Deſign they would not truſt in Writing: The firſt Meſſage was from Mr. *Waller*, That he ſhould tell my Lord of *Falkland*, that he would give him a more full Notice of the great Buſineſs very ſpeedily: The other Meſſage was from Mr. *Tomkins*, and that was, That the Deſign was now come to good Maturity; that they had ſo ſtrong a Party in the City, that tho' it was diſcovered, yet they would be able to put it in Execution: They promiſed to give Notice to the King of the very Day, and, if it were poſſible, of the very Hour, wherein this ſhould be put in Execution; and then they did deſire, when they had ſeized upon the Outworks, that there might ſome Party of the King's Army come up

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

within fifteen Miles of the City, who, upon Knowledge of their Proceedings, must be admitted into the City. These were the four Points upon which the Message did consist, which was sent from Mr. *Tomkins* to my Lord of *Falkland*, by Mr. *Hazel*. To both these Messages my Lord of *Falkland* returned an Answer by Word of Mouth; (they kept themselves so closely that they durst not venture to write) and he bid the Messenger tell Mr. *Waller*, Mr. *Tomkins*, and Mr. *Hampden*, (a Gentleman that was sent up with a Message from the King, and remained here in Town to agitate this Business, and made that Use of his being here in Town) That he could not well write, and did excuse himself; but prayed them that they would use all possible Haste in the main Business.

'Mr. *Waller* having plotted it, and brought it on thus far, now he began to think of pushing it further; and, the *Tuesday* following this *Saturday*, which was *Tuesday* was Se'nnight in the Evening, after he came home to his Lodging, Mr. *Tomkins* and he being together, he told him, That the very next Morning, that was *Wednesday*, the Fast-Day, he should go to my Lord of *Holland*, and acquaint him with this Plot, and discover so much to him as he thought fit; that he himself would go to some other Lords, and do the like. This was the *Tuesday* Night, in which Conference they put on that Confidence in Expectation of Success in this Plot, that Mr. *Waller* broke out with a great Oath to affirm, That if they did carry this throughout, then they would have any Thing. This he spoke to Mr. *Tomkins* with a very great deal of Earnestness and Assurance. So far they went on in Hope and Expectation; but here they were cut short: That very Night there were Warrants issued, upon some Discoveries that were made of this Plot, to the Lord Mayor, and to the Sheriffs here; which they did execute with so much Diligence and Care of the Good of the City, that the next Morning, when Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Waller* should have gone about their Business, they were ap prehended, and

and the reſt of the Citizens, divers of them, but ſome eſcaped. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Thus far I have diſcovered to you the Materials and the Lineaments of this miſchievous Deſign; you ſhall now be pleaſed to hear the Proofs and the Confeſſions out of which this Narration doth ariſe, and that will make all this good to you that I have ſaid. And, after thoſe are read, I ſhall then tell you what hath been done ſince in the Houſe of Commons, ſomewhat in the Houſe of Lords, and what elſe is in Propoſition to be offered to you from the Houſe of Commons; but I ſhall deſire you firſt, that you may be fully convinced of the great Goodneſs of God in Diſcovery of this Plot, and the Truth of theſe Things that I have ſpoken to you, that you will hear the Evidence of the Proofs; and then we ſhall go on to thoſe other Things which we have in Charge.

The Proofs being read, Mr. *Pymme* proceeded thus:

'Gentlemen, we have held you long, you are now almoſt come to the End of your Trouble; I am to deliver to you ſome ſhort Obſervations upon the whole Matter, and then to acquaint you with the Reſolutions thereupon taken in the Houſe of Commons; and to conclude with a few Deſires from them to you.

'The Obſervations are theſe:

Firſt, 'I am to obſerve to you the Contrariety betwixt the Pretences, with which this Deſign hath been maſked, and the Truth: One of the Pretences was Peace; the Truth was Blood and Violence: Another of the Pretences was, the preſerving of Property; the Truth was, the introducing of Tyranny and Slavery, which leaves no Man Maſter of any Thing he hath.

'A *ſecond* Obſervation is this: The unnatural Way by which they meant to compaſs this wicked Deſign, that was, To deſtroy the Parliament by the Members of Parliament; and then, by the Carcaſs and Shadow of a Parliament, to deſtroy the Kingdom: What is a Parliament but a Carcaſs when

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

the Freedom of it is suppressed? When those shall be taken away by Violence, that can, or will, oppose and stand in the Way of their Intentions? The High Court of Parliament is the most certain and constant Guardian of Liberty; but if it be deprived of its own Liberty, it is left without Life or Power to keep the Liberty of others. If they should bring a Parliament to be subject to the King's Pleasure, to be correspondent, as they call it, to his Will, in the Midst of such evil Councils which now are predominant, there would little or no Cure be left; but then all Things that are most mischievous would seem to be done by Law and Authority.

'The *third* Observation is this: With what an evil Conscience these Men undertook this Work: They that pretended to take Arms to defend their own Property, obtained a Commission to violate the Property of others: They would take the Assertion of the Laws of the Land; but assumed to themselves such a Power as was most contrary to that Law; to seize upon their Persons without due Process; to impose upon their Estates without Consent; to take away some Lives by the Law Martial; and, besides all this, without any Commission, they intended to alter the Government of the City, which is now governed by your own Council, by a Magistrate chosen by yourselves, then to be governed by Violence.

'The *fourth* Observation is this: That the mischievous Effect of this Design would not have ceased in the first Night's Work; all the godly Part in the Kingdom, all faithful Ministers especially, would have been left not only to the Scorn and Reproach, but to the Hatred, Malice, and Cruelty, of the Papists and Malignants.

The *fifth* and last Observation I shall make to you is this: That this Matter was prosecuted in Part, and agitated and promoted by those that were sent from the King, and seemed to be Messengers of Peace; and while we should be amused with the Pretences of gracious Messages to propose Peace, this villainous Project, which should have set you all

all in Blood, was promoted by those Messengers, and should have been put in Execution very shortly after. This is all I shall trouble you with by way of Observation. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'The Matters resolved on in the House of Commons are these Things:

'*First*, That there may be public Thanksgiving to God, both in the City and throughout the Kingdom, for this great Deliverance; that a near Day be appointed for the City, the Parliament, and the Parts adjacent, and a convenient Day for other Parts of the Kingdom.

'The *next* Thing resolved on was, That the House of Peers should be made acquainted with these Proofs, and with all this Discovery; which hath been done accordingly.

'It was likewise resolved, That there should be a Covenant made, whereby we should both testify our Detestation of this mischievous Plot, and join ourselves more closely in the Maintenance of the common Interest of the Church and Commonwealth, in Religion and Liberty, which are still in great Danger, and would have been utterly subverted, if this Project had taken Effect.

'It was resolved in the *fourth* Place, which is now partly executed, That this should be communicated to you of the City; that so, as you have a great Part in the Blessing, you may do your Part in the Duty of Thankfulness, together with us.

'It is further resolved, That it shall be communicated to the Army, that they likewise take Notice of this great Mercy of God, and join with us, both in the Thanksgiving and in the Protestation and Covenant, as we shall likewise desire you of the City to do.

'Then we are commanded to give Thanks to my Lord Mayor, to the Sheriffs, and to the rest of the Officers of the City, for their great Care in the apprehending of these Persons, in guarding the Peace and Quiet of the City.

'We are likewise to give Thanks to those Gentlemen that have had the Custody of these Prisoners.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

We know it cannot but be a Trouble to them; but there was no Means to keep them safe from Messages one to another, and from Speeches, but by such a Way of putting them in honest Men's Hands; therefore the House of Commons have commanded us to give them special Thanks for their undertaking this Care, and to assure them that they will see them fully recompensed for all the Trouble and Charge they shall undergo by it.

'And we are to give you Thanks, which are the Citizens of this City, for your good Affections to the Public Cause, and for your continual Bounty for the Support of it.

'Thus far we are enjoined by the Resolution of the House: Now we are further to intreat you to hear both the Covenants; you shall thereby know to what we have bound ourselves, and to what we desire you should be bound. There are two Covenants; that is, one proper for the Houses of Parliament, which hath been taken in the House of Commons by all the Members, even by those Gentlemen that are named in the Examinations to have been privy to this Plot, which they all have disavowed; and the other Covenant is to be taken by all the other Part of the Kingdom; by the Citizens, by the Army, and the rest of the People generally in all Places.

'The Draught of these two Covenants we shall communicate to you; the House of Lords they have had them already, and have taken them into Consideration, and we hear they do resolve, That what is appointed for them shall be taken by the Members of that House.

'We are further to desire you, That you would co-operate with the Divine Providence, in God's great Mercy to this City and the whole Kingdom: God doth not only [illegible], but thereby gives Assurance that he will do Good: his Mercies they are Comforts for the present, they are Pledges for the future; but yet our Care must not cease.

'We are to desire that you would keep your Guards, and look well to your City; and that you would

would find out these evil Members that are among you, as near as may be; that so, for the Time to come, this Plot may be prevented, as hitherto it hath been stopped; for out of Doubt all the Malignity is not drawn out of them, though the Opportunity is hindered for the present putting it in Execution. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'I am to tell you further, That, in Desire to win those that shall be taken with Remorse for this wicked Design and Conspiracy, it is resolved, That if any Man shall come in before the 15th Day of this present *June*, and freely confess his Fault, and what he knows of this Conspiracy, that he shall have a full, free, and plenary Pardon for the Time to come, except those that are already taken or fled; I say, those that come in voluntarily shall be pardoned.

'Your Care, and our Care, they will be all little enough; we hope God's Blessing will be so upon them both, that you shall be restored to a full Peace; and that, in the mean Time, you shall enjoy such a Degree of Safety and Prosperity as may make Way to it.'

To return to the Proceedings at *Westminster*:—

June 9. The Lords having considered of the Vow and Covenant, brought up by the Commons, judged it a voluntary Oath, and proper to be given to every Member of their House in a solemn and serious Manner. Accordingly every Lord, beginning at the youngest Baron, and going upwards according to their Degrees, held the Paper in their Hands, and read it distinctly as follows:

The Covenant, taken by the Lords on that Occasion.

'WHereas there hath been, and now is, in this Kingdom, a Popish and Traiterous Plot, for the Subversion of the true Protestant Reformed Religion, and the Liberty of the Subject: And, in pursuance thereof, a Popish Army hath been raised, and is now on Foot in divers Parts of this Kingdom: And whereas there hath been a treacherous and horrid Design lately disco-

'vered

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'vered by the great Bleſſing and ſpecial Providence 'of God, of divers Perſons, to join themſelves with 'the Armies raiſed by the King, and to deſtroy the 'Forces raiſed by the Lords and Commons in Par-'liament; to ſurprize the Cities of *London* and '*Weſtminſter*, with the Suburbs, and, by Arms, 'to force the Parliament; and finding, by con-'ſtant Experience, that many Ways of Force and 'Treachery are continually attempted to bring to 'utter Ruin and Deſtruction the Parliament and 'Kingdom, and, that which is deareſt, the true 'Proteſtant Religion; and that, for the preventing 'and withſtanding the ſame, it is fit that all, who 'are true-hearted and Lovers of their Country, 'ſhould bind themſelves each to other in a ſacred 'Vow and Covenant:

I A B, *in Humility and Reverence of the Divine Majeſty, declare my hearty Sorrow for my own Sins, and the Sins of this Nation, which have deſerved the Calamities and Judgments that now lie upon it: And my true Intention is, by God's Grace, to endeavour the Amendment of my own Ways. And I do further, in the Preſence of Almighty God, declare, vow, and covenant, That, in order to the Security and Preſervation of the true Reformed Proteſtant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, I will not conſent to the laying down of Arms, ſo long as the Papiſts, now in open War againſt the Parliament, ſhall, by Force of Arms, be protected from the Juſtice thereof: And that I do abhor and deteſt the ſaid wicked and treacherous Deſign lately diſcovered; and that I never gave, nor will give, my Aſſent to the Execution thereof; but will, according to my Power and Vocation, oppoſe and reſiſt the ſame, and all others of the like Nature: And in Caſe any other like Deſign ſhall hereafter come to my Knowledge, I will make ſuch timely Diſcovery as I ſhall conceive may beſt conduce to the preventing thereof. And whereas I do in my Conſcience believe, That the Forces raiſed by the two Houſes of Parliament, are raiſed and continued for their juſt Defence, and for the Defence of the true Pro-*

Proteſtant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, againſt the Forces raiſed by the King, that I will, according to my Power and Vocation, aſſiſt the Forces raiſed and continued by both Houſes of Parliament, againſt the Forces raiſed by the King, without their Conſent: And will likewiſe aſſiſt all other Perſons that ſhall take this Oath, in what they ſhall do in purſuance thereof; and will not, directly or indirectly, adhere unto, nor willingly aſſiſt, the Forces raiſed by the King, without the Conſent of both Houſes of Parliament. And this Vow and Covenant I make in the Preſence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the ſame, as I ſhall anſwer at the Great Day, when the Secrets of all Hearts ſhall be diſcloſed.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

At the ſame Time, however, it was moved and agreed to by the Lords, That a ſhort Declaration might be drawn up, and taken by them, the Houſe of Commons, and the whole Kingdom, declaring their Loyalty to the King's Perſon, his Crown and Dignity; and a Committee of eleven Lords were ordered to draw it up and report it to the Houſe.

June 11. The Earl of *Portland*[a] and the Lord Viſcount *Conway* being accuſed, by the Houſe of Commons, of being concerned in Mr. *Waller*'s Plot, they were ſequeſtered from the Lords' Houſe and committed; the one to the Cuſtody of the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the other to one of the Sheriffs; but their Lands and Goods not to be ſeized on, till, upon Trial, it appeared they were guilty of the Charge againſt them.

The Liberty of the Preſs having, of late, been very grievous to the Parliament, they paſſed an Ordinance to reſtrain it, and to ſtrengthen ſome former Orders made for that Purpoſe. This extraordinary Stretch into *Engliſh* Liberty, by thoſe who pretended to be the Preſervers of it, deſerves our Notice.

The

[a] *Jerome Weſton.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

An Ordinance for reſtraining the Liberty of the Preſs.

The Preamble to this Ordinance ſets forth,

'THAT whereas divers good Orders have been lately made, by both Houſes of Parliament, for ſuppreſſing the great Abuſes and frequent Diſorders in printing many falſe, forged, ſcandalous, ſeditious, libellous, and unlicenſed Papers, Pamphlets, and Books, to the great Defamation of Religion and Government; which have taken little or no Effect, by reaſon the Bill in Preparation, for Redreſs of the ſaid Diſorders, hath hitherto been retarded: And that, through the preſent Diſtractions, very many Perſons, as well Stationers and Printers, as others of ſundry other Profeſſions, have taken upon them to ſet up private Printing Preſſes in Corners, and to print, vend, publiſh, and diſperſe Books, Pamphlets, and Papers in ſuch Multitudes, that no Induſtry could be ſufficient to diſcover or bring to Puniſhment all the ſeveral abounding Delinquents: Therefore, *&c.*

The moſt material Clauſes are theſe;

'That no Order or Declaration of either Houſe of Parliament ſhall be printed without Order of one or both the ſaid Houſes; nor any other Book, Pamphlet, Paper, nor Part of any ſuch Book, Pamphlet, or Paper, ſhall, from henceforth, be printed, bound, ſtitch'd, or put out to Sale, by any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, unleſs the ſame be firſt approved and licenſed under the Hands of ſuch Perſons as both or either of the ſaid Houſes ſhall appoint for licenſing of the ſame; and be entered in the Regiſter-Book of the Company of Stationers, according to antient Cuſtom, and the Printer thereof to put his Name thereto.

'The Maſter and Wardens of the ſaid Company, the Gentleman-Uſher of the Houſe of Peers, the Serjeant of the Commons' Houſe, and their Deputies, together with the Perſons formerly appointed by the Committee of the Houſe of Commons for Examinations, are authorized and required

'to

'to make diligent Search in all Places, where they 'shall think meet, for all unlicenſed Printing Preſſes, and all Preſſes any way employed in the Printing of ſcandalous or unlicenſed Papers, Pamphlets, or Books; and to ſeize and carry away 'ſuch Printing Preſſes, Letters, and other Materials, of every ſuch irregular Printer, which they 'find ſo miſemployed, unto the Common-Hall of 'the ſaid Company, there to be defaced and made 'unſerviceable, according to antient Cuſtom; and 'likewiſe to make diligent Search in all ſuſpected 'Printing-Houſes, Ware-Houſes, Shops, and other 'Places, for ſuch ſcandalous and unlicenſed Books, 'Papers, Pamphlets, and all other Books, not 'entered, nor ſigned with the Printer's Name as 'aforeſaid, being printed contrary to this Order; 'and the ſame to ſeize and carry away to the ſaid 'Common-Hall, there to remain till both or either 'Houſe of Parliament ſhall diſpoſe thereof; and 'likewiſe to apprehend all Authors, Printers, and 'other Perſons whatſoever employed in compiling, 'printing, ſtitching, binding, publiſhing, and diſperſing of the ſaid ſcandalous, unlicenſed, and 'unwarrantable Papers, Books, and Pamphlets as 'aforeſaid; and all thoſe who ſhall reſiſt the ſaid 'Parties in ſearching after them, and bringing 'them before either of the Houſes or the Committee of Examinations, that ſo they may receive 'ſuch further Puniſhments as their Offences ſhall 'demerit; and not to be releaſed untill they have 'given Satisfaction to the Parties employed in their 'Apprehenſion for their Pains and Charges, and 'ſufficient Caution not to offend in like Sort for the 'future.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'All Juſtices of the Peace, Captains, Conſtables, 'and other Officers, are ordered and required to be 'aiding and aſſiſting to the aforeſaid Perſons in the 'due Execution of all and ſingular the Premiſes, 'and in the Apprehenſion of all Offenders againſt 'the ſame; and, in caſe of Oppoſition, to break 'open Doors and Locks, *&c.*

June

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

June 14. The Affair of the Great Seal came on again in the Houſe of Lords, when the Earl of *Holland*, from the Committee appointed to prepare Heads for a Conference on this Affair, reported, That the Senſe of the Committee was, That the Votes of this Houſe ſhould be firſt read, and then to add, That the Parliament having, in all their Actions and Reſolutions, gone upon the Power of their Ordinances, the Lords conceive it will be proper to continue upon that Ground. That the making of a new Great Seal will not hinder the Uſe and Power of the King's Great Seal; but if they found the Sealing of Original Writs of Error be denied, they would join with the Commons in their Care to do what will be neceſſary and advantageous to the Parliament, the free Courſe of Juſtice, and the Laws of the Kingdom.

June 16. The Earl of *Northumberland* reported from the Committee a Draught of what they thought proper to be taken, to declare the Loyalty of the Lords to the King's Perſon, his Crown and Dignity; which was read:

A Declaration made by the Lords, of their Loyalty to the King's Perſon,

We the Lords and Commons do further declare, That our Intentions have been, and ſtill are, to our Power, to maintain, preſerve, and defend his Majeſty's Perſon and juſt Rights of the Crown; together with the Perſons of his Royal Iſſue; and that we ſhall uſe our utmoſt Endeavours in purſuance of the ſame.

Ordered, To communicate this to the Houſe of Commons the next Morning, at a Conference: And, at the ſame Time, to offer ſomewhat to them for compoſing the preſent Diſtractions and ſettling Peace between the King and Parliament.

June 17. A Committee of Lords were appointed to conſider of this laſt Article; and, after ſome Time, the Lord *Say* and *Sele* brought in a Draught of

of what they had to offer for that Purpose; which was as follows: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

And a Draught of a Petition to the King for Peace.

'WE your loyal Subjects, the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, having a deep Sense of the present Miseries of this your Kingdom, and of the Christian Blood, the Blood of your Subjects, that hath been spilt in this unnatural War: To prevent the Desolation and Ruin of this Kingdom, the Destruction of your People, and the Danger of your own Royal Person and Children, do again, in all Humility, petition your Majesty, that you will be pleased, before the Armies be engaged in Battle, they being now drawn near together, to accept of our humble Answer to your Majesty's first Proposition, and agree unto the first Proposition presented unto you by the Hands of our Commissioners, for the Disbanding of all Armies; whereby your Kingdom will be restored to the former happy Condition of Peace, and the sad Accidents and Consequences of a Civil War be prevented; and that, as the most likely Means to compose and settle these unhappy Differences between you and your People, you will please to return to your Parliament, your great and most faithful Council, whose Advice your Majesty will find more conducing to your Greatness, Honour, and Safety, than the Council of some few about you; whose Counsels if they may prevail, we find all our Petitions and Endeavours for the Peace of this Kingdom to be fruitless.

'If God shall make us so happy as to incline your Majesty's Heart to this our humble Petition, which your Parliament and Kingdom may expect from your Justice and Goodness, our Endeavours and Counsels shall all be directed to settle the true Protestant Religion, your Majesty's just Rights, the Preservation and Safety of your Royal Person and Children, and the Laws

'of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'of the Kingdom, the Liberties of the Subject, and 'the Privileges of Parliament.'

Ordered, That this Petition be communicated to the Houſe of Commons at a Conference; and to be delivered to the King in the ſame Manner as one was at *Shrewſbury*.

June 21. Nothing elſe, memorable, intervening, the Committee for managing this Conference reported what they thought fit to be offered at it, to the Commons, along with the Petition; which was as follows:

The Reaſons offered to the Commons for their Concurrence therein.

'The Lords looking, with much Compaſſion, upon the divided and diſtracted Condition of this Kingdom, and that, in all Probability, the Continuance of the War in Chriſtendom will only remain amongſt ourſelves, in theſe our ſad and civil Diviſions, they have been moved, from the Tenderneſs they owe to the Preſervation of this Kingdom, to make a further Trial of his Majeſty's Inclinations to the Peace of it, and conſequently to the Peace of his other Kingdoms; which, in all human Reaſon, doth depend upon the Peace and Safety of this; and likewiſe to ſhew to his Majeſty, and all the World, that we are ſtill, upon our firſt Grounds and Principles, to petition him for Peace; thereby to make it viſible to his Majeſty, and the whole Kingdom, that we ſtill purſue the Ways of Peace; which will either procure us that Happineſs, or make the Miſeries that we and the Kingdom muſt expect, by a Battle between theſe near-approached Armies, the more ſupportable by the Unavoidableneſs of it; and this we deſire may no way weaken, or contradict, the Covenant and Vow we have united ourſelves in, but rather purſue the ſame; in that we do deſire the Force, whereby Papiſts are protected againſt the Juſtice of Parliament, may be laid down before we lay down our Arms; neither is it intended to draw on any Treaty, but alone to receive the King's preſent and poſitive Anſwer.'

June

June 22. The Lords sent down to acquaint the other House, That they had added two more of their Body to the Committee of Sequestration, and had given them Power to compound and regulate that Ordinance, by making some Allowance to Widows and Children for their Maintenance; desiring the Commons to add a proportionable Number of their House, and also to give the like Power to them. But this merciful Disposition of the Lords was not complied with, at this Time, by the Lower House. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

A Committee of Commons had been busy some Time, in framing Articles of Impeachment against the Queen, in order to support the Charge they had exhibited to the Lords. And, this Day, they had proceeded so far as to appoint Mr. *Stroud* to go up, and desire a Conference with them concerning these Articles. Whether this Message was sent or not, we cannot learn, for there is no Entry, in the *Lords Journals*, relating to it.

June 24. The Assembly of Divines being now ready to sit to do Business, the Lords thought proper to order, That all Ministers employed in the next public Monthly Fast, should, in their Prayers, particularly and earnestly desire the Assistance and Blessing of Almighty God upon that Assembly, for carrying on the great Work: And that the said Assembly should meet in *Henry* the Seventh's Chapel, on the 30th Instant, at Nine in the Morning. Agreed to by the Commons.

June 26. This Day the Lord *Say* and *Sele* acquainted the Lords, That he had received a Letter from the King, in which was inclosed a Proclamation from his Majesty, which was read:

The King's Proclamation, forbidding Obedience to the Parliament, and for calling the Members to him at *Oxford*.

'WHereas we have been long since driven by Force and Violence from our Palace at '*Westminster*, (the Place of Sitting for us and our 'two Houses of this Parliament) so that we could 'not, with Safety of our Life, be present with our 'Great

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Great Council; and much the greater Part of the 'Members of both Houſes of Parliament have been 'likewiſe driven, by Tumults and Force, for their 'Safety, from their Attendance upon that Council, 'the ſaid Members having been threatened and aſ-'ſaulted for delivering their Opinions freely in the 'Houſes; or have, out of Conſcience and Duty, 'withdrawn themſelves from being preſent at the 'Debates and Reſolutions, which they have well 'known to be ſo contrary to their Duty and Alle-'giance; or, for ſo withdrawing, or for freely ſpeak-'ing in the Houſes, have been expelled or ſuſpend-'ed from being Members of that Council, contrary 'to the antient Practice and juſt Privileges of Par-'liament. Since which Time. and by which Means, 'a great and rebellious Army hath been raiſed 'againſt us, under the Command of *Robert* Earl of '*Eſſex*; which Army hath not only endeavoured 'to take away our Life from us in a ſet Battle, but 'the ſame, and other Forces raiſed by the like 'Means, have committed all the Acts of Outrage, 'Robbery, and Murder, upon our good Subjects 'throughout the Kingdom, and ſtill continue to do 'the ſame.

'And though, in Truth, a very ſmall Part of 'that Great Council remain there together; yet, 'under Pretence of having the Countenance of our 'two Houſes of Parliament, ſome ſeditious Perſons 'aſſume to themſelves (with the Aſſiſtance of thoſe 'rebellious Armies, and of divers mutinous and 'deſperate Browniſts, Anabaptiſts, and other ill-'affected Perſons in our City of *London*, by whoſe 'Means they awe ſuch Members of both Houſes 'who yet continue amongſt them) a Power to do 'Things abſolutely contrary to the Laws of the 'Land, and deſtructive to our Rights, and to the 'Liberty and Property of the Subject, and to alter 'the whole Frame and Government of this King-'dom; diſpoſing of the Lives and Fortunes of us 'and our good Subjects, according to their Diſcre-'tion; ſubjecting both to their own unlimited Ar-'bitrary Power and Government.

'We

'We have only accuſed ſome particular Perſons, An. 19. Car. I.
'whom we well know to be the Authors and Con- 1643.
'trivers of theſe deſperate Counſels and Actions; June.
'and have forborne to cenſure, or charge, the whole
'Number of the Members remaining, by whoſe
'Orders and Authority the Evils have been pretend-
'ed to be done; hoping that the Senſe of the miſe-
'rable Diſtractions of the Kingdom would, at length,
'have brought them to diſcern where they had
'erred; and our often Meſſages and Complaints of
'the Violence offered to us, and to the Members of
'both Houſes, would have procured Juſtice and
'Redreſs: And that the Power and Reputation of
'ſuch amongſt them, who wiſhed well to the Peace
'of the Kingdom, and Honour and Dignity of Par-
'liaments, would have at laſt ſo far prevailed, that a
'right Underſtanding might have been begotten be-
'twixt us and our People; and all Shew of Force
'and Violence ſo taken away and ſuppreſſed, that
'we might, in a full and peaceable Convention of
'Parliament, with the Advice of that our Great
'Council, have ſo ſettled the preſent Diſtempers,
'that there might be no Fear left of the like for the
'future.

'But finding, to our great Grief, that the Power
'of thoſe ſeditious Perſons, who firſt contrived
'theſe deſperate and bloody Diſtractions, continues
'ſo great; that as they have driven, and now keep
'us, and the much greater Part of both Houſes,
'from being preſent at that Council; ſo they
'ſo far awe thoſe who remain there, that they
'cannot, with Freedom, give their Votes and
'Reſolutions according to their Conſciences, and
'the Laws and Conſtitutions of the Kingdom:
'That the Members of both Houſes have been
'compelled to make Proteſtations to live and die
'with the Earl of *Eſſex*, the General of the re-
'bellious Army, and other unlawful and treaſon-
'able Proteſtations; and that ſuch who have re-
'fuſed to take the ſaid Proteſtations, have been
'expelled and impriſoned for ſuch their Refuſal:
'That the great Affairs of the Kingdom are

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'managed and concluded by a private Committee, 'without being ever reported to the Houſes, con- 'trary to the Laws and Rules of Parliament: 'That the Common Council of *London*, moſt of 'them being Perſons factiouſly choſen out of Brown- 'iſts, Anabaptiſts, and ſuch who oppoſe the re- 'gular wholeſome Government of that City, and 'have promiſed themſelves the Deſtruction of the 'Church, are grown the Superintendents over both 'Houſes, and obtrude upon them what Concluſions 'and Reſolutions they pleaſe: That they take upon 'them to juſtify this Rebellion againſt us, and have 'preſumed, under Pretence of the Order of both 'Houſes, to invite foreign Forces to invade this 'Kingdom: To ſend Agents to foreign Princes, 'to negotiate and treat with them in their own 'Names: To impriſon our good Subjects contrary 'to Law, prohibiting our Judges to grant *Habeas* '*Corpus* according to Law: To introduce a new 'Clergy throughout the Kingdom, by diſplacing 'godly learned Divines, without the leaſt Colour 'of Law or judicial Proceedings, and putting ig- 'norant and ſeditious Preachers in their Places, 'to poiſon the Hearts of the People: To counte- 'nance the Vilifying of the Book of the Com- 'mon-Prayer, eſtabliſhed by the Law of the Land: 'To ſeize, levy, and take away what they pleaſe 'of the Eſtates and Fortunes of our Subjects, by 'diſpoſing of the twentieth Part of their Eſtates, 'by exhauſting them with unſupportable Weekly 'Taxes for the Maintenance of their rebellious 'Army, and by endeavouring to lay odious Ex- 'ciſes upon Victuals, Goods, and Merchandize of 'our People for the ſame Purpoſe; while they 'ſuffer our poor Proteſtant Subjects of our King- 'dom of *Ireland*, whoſe Defence was undertaken 'by our two Houſes, and that Army raiſed for the 'ſuppreſſing of that horrid Rebellion to be ſtar- 'ved and in Danger of diſbanding, or neceſſita- 'ted to deſert that Kingdom for Want of Mo- 'ney, Victuals, and ſuch other Neceſſaries as 'were to be provided for them by Act of Parlia- 'ment,

'ment, out of those Monies which they have spent An. 19. Car. I.
'to destroy us and this Kingdom: By exacting 1643.
'from Merchants Tonnage and Poundage, and June.
'other Impositions upon Merchandizes, as well
'Native as Foreign, contrary to an Act made this
'present Parliament, with a Penalty of *Premunire*
'on those who shall pay or receive it: And, last-
'ly, that they have (after the breaking off the late
'Treaty, by a peremptory recalling their Com-
'mittee, who, in Truth, during their Abode with
'us, had no Power to treat by reason of their strict
'Limitation) so far rejected all possible Means and
'Overtures of Treaty and Accommodation, that,
'instead of answering our gracious Messages, the
'House of Commons hath imprisoned our Mes-
'senger sent by us to them, to invite both Houses
'to an Accommodation; and especially to move
'them to take such a Course for the Freedom of
'Parliament, that we might safely advise with
'that our Great Council for the settling those mi-
'serable Distractions and Distempers: And hath
'maliciously, and in Contempt of us, after an
'Attempt to murder our Royal Consort, in *Brid-*
'*lington* Road, (the Place of her Landing) im-
'peached her of High Treason, for assisting us
'with Arms and Ammunition to defend us from
'this Rebellion: 'Tis Time now to let our good
'Subjects know, that they may no longer look
'upon the Votes and Actions of the Persons now
'remaining, as upon our two Houses of Parlia-
'ment; Freedom and Liberty to be present, and
'of Opinion and Debate there, being essential to
'a Parliament; which Freedom and Liberty all
'Men must confess to be taken away from this
'Assembly, when they remember the great Tu-
'mults brought down to awe and terrify both
'Houses; and that they were then brought down
'when any great Debate was in either House, and
'not like to be so carried as some seditious Persons,
'who governed those Tumults, did desire; that,
'in the greatest Heat and Fury of those Tumults,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'the principal Governors amongſt them directed 'the unruly People to go to *Whitehall*, where our 'own Perſon then was; and deſigned, by Force, 'to have ſurprized the Perſon of our Son the Prince; 'that, when it was deſired that a Declaration might 'be made againſt ſuch Tumults, inſtead of con-'ſenting thereunto, the Tumults themſelves were 'juſtified; and when a legal Courſe was preſcribed 'by the Lords, and taken by the proper Miniſters 'of Juſtice, to ſuppreſs and prevent ſuch Tumults 'and Riots, that legal Courſe was ſuperſeded by thoſe 'who were then preſent of the Houſe of Commons, 'and the Miniſters of Juſtice puniſhed and impri-'ſoned for executing the Law. When they re-'member that ſeveral Members of either Houſe 'have been threatened and aſſaulted in thoſe Tu-'mults, and their own Names proſcribed as Per-'ſons diſaffected, becauſe they freely uſed to ſpeak 'their Conſciences in both Houſes: That the Houſe 'of Peers have been ſo far threatened and me-'naced, that the Names of thoſe have been, 'with Threats, demanded by the Houſe of Com-'mons at the Bar of the Lords' Houſe, who 'refuſed to conſent to this or that Propoſition 'which had been in Debate before them; and 'tumultuous Petitions countenanced, which have 'been preſented to that ſame Purpoſe: That the 'Members of both Houſes have been impriſoned, 'and forbid to be preſent at thoſe Councils, for 'no Reaſons but becauſe their Opinion hath not 'been liked: That our negative Voice (our greateſt 'and moſt ſovereign Privilege) is boldly denied: 'That a preſumptuous Attempt hath been made, 'by the major Part of the remaining Part of the 'Houſe of Commons, to make our Great Seal of '*England*; the making of which, by the expreſs 'Letter of the Law, is High Treaſon, and would 'ſubvert the antient and fundamental Adminiſtra-'tion of Juſtice: That, at this Time, we and 'the major Part of both Houſes are kept, by a 'ſtrong and rebellious Army, from being preſent

'at

'at that Council; and that those who are present are, by the same Army, awed and forced to take unlawful and treasonable Protestations to engage their Votes: And that such Resolutions and Directions, which concern the Property and Liberty of the Subjects, are transacted and concluded by a few Persons, (under the Name of a Close Committee, consisting of the Earl of *Manchester*, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pymme*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Martin*, and others, the whole Number not exceeding the Number of seventeen Persons) without reporting the same to the Houses, or having the same confirmed by the Houses, contrary to the express Law and Customs of Parliament. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'All these, for the Matter of Fact, we are ready to make Proof of, and desire nothing but to bring the Contrivers of all the aforesaid Mischiefs to their Trial by Law; and, till that be submitted to, we must pursue them by Arms or any other Way, in which our good Subjects ought to give us Assistance to that Purpose: The imagining the Death of us, our Royal Consort, or our eldest Son; the levying War against us in our Realm; giving to them Aid or Comfort; the Counterfeiting our Great Seal or Money, being, by the express Words of the Statute of the twenty-fifth Year of *Edward* III. *Cap.* 2. High Treason: And how applicable this is to those who have borne Arms against us, and to those who have consented that such Arms be borne; to those who have promised to live and die with the Earl of *Essex*, and to those who every Day consent to some Act for the Support and Increase of that Army, we shall leave to all the World to judge; and hope that this gracious Warning and Information, now given by us, will make that Impression in the Hearts of our People, that they will no longer suffer themselves to be misled from their Duty and Allegiance upon any Pretences whatsoever; and we

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'do declare, That we shall proceed with all Se-
'verity against all Persons whatsoever, who shall
'henceforward assist, vote, or concur in any Kind
'toward the Maintenance and Countenancing such
'Actions and Resolutions, which, by the known
'and express Laws of the Land, are High Treason;
'and against all those who shall adhere to them,
'who are in Rebellion against us, as against Re-
'bels and Traitors, in such Manner as by the
'Laws and Statutes of the Realm is directed and
'appointed.

'And since, by the Power of seditious Persons, we
'and both Houses are kept from being secur'd against
'tumultuous Assemblies, and both Houses from Ad-
'journment to some Place of Safety; which, being
'done, might quickly make an End of these mise-
'rable Distractions, whereby we are debarred from
'the Benefit and Advice, we expected from that our
'Great Council, the Members thereof being scat-
'ter'd into several Places: Therefore, that the whole
'Kingdom may see that we are willing to receive
'Advice from those who are trusted by them, tho'
'we cannot receive the same in the Place to which
'they were called, for the Reasons aforesaid, nor in-
'tend to receive Advice from them elsewhere in the
'Capacity of Houses of Parliament: We do here-
'by declare, That such of the Members of both
'Houses, as well those who have been, by the Fac-
'tion of the Malignant Party, expelled for perform-
'ing their Duties to us, and into whose Rooms no
'Persons have been since chosen by their Countries,
'as the rest who shall desire our Protection, shall
'be welcome to us at our City of *Oxford*; untill,
'by the Adjournment of the Houses to some fit and
'free Place or otherwise, due Course be taken for
'the full and free Convention in Parliament of us
'and all the Members of both Houses: And for
'their better Encouragement to resort to us, we
'hereby will and command all the Officers and
'Soldiers of our Army to suffer all such Persons who
'are Members of either House, with their Attend-
'ants

'ants and Servants, to come to us to this our City of *Oxford*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'And that none of our good Subjects may believe 'that, by this our neceſſary Declaration againſt the 'Freedom and Liberty of that preſent Aſſembly, 'we may have the leaſt Intention to violate or to 'avoid any Act or Acts paſſed by us for the Good 'and Benefit of our People this Parliament, we 'do hereby declare to all the World, That we ſhall, 'as we have often promiſed, as inviolably obſerve 'all thoſe Acts, as if no ſuch unhappy Interruption 'had happened in the Freedom and Liberty of that 'Council: And deſire nothing more than to have 'ſuch a free Convention in Parliament, that we may 'add ſuch further Acts of Grace as ſhall be thought 'neceſſary for the Advancement of the true Prote-'ſtant Religion, for the Maintenance of the Liberty 'and Property of the Subjects, and the Preſervation 'of the Liberty, Freedom, and Privileges of Parlia-'ment.

'And that all the World may ſee how willing 'and deſirous we are to forget all the Injuries and 'Indignities offered to us by ſuch who have been 'miſled through Weakneſs or Fear, or who have 'not been the principal Contrivers of the preſent 'Miſeries, we do offer a free and general Par-'don to all the Members of either Houſe (except '*Robert* Earl of *Eſſex*, *Robert* Earl of *Warwick*, '*Edward* Earl of *Mancheſter*, *Henry* Earl of *Stam-'ford*, *William* Viſcount *Say* and *Sele*, Sir *John Ho-'tham*, Knt. and Bart. Sir *Arthur Haſlerigge*, Bart. 'Sir *Henry Ludlow*, Sir *Edward Hungerford*, and 'Sir *Francis Popham*, Knights; *Nathaniel Fiennes*, '*John Hampden*, *John Pymme*, *William Stroud*, '*Henry Martyn*, and *Alexander Popham*, Eſquires; '*Iſaac Pennington*, Alderman of *London*, and Capt. '*Ven*; who, being the principal Authors of theſe 'preſent Calamities, have ſacrificed the Peace and 'Proſperity of their Country to their own Pride, Ma-'lice, and Ambition; and againſt whom we ſhall 'proceed, as againſt Perſons guilty of High Treaſon,

'by

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'by the known Laws of the Land; and ſhall, in 'the Proceeding, be moſt careful to preſerve to 'them all Privileges in the fulleſt Manner that, by 'the Law or the Uſage of former Times, is due to 'them) if they ſhall, within ten Days after the pub-'liſhing of this our Proclamation, return to their 'Duty and Allegiance to us.

'And, laſtly, we further command and enjoin 'all our Subjects, upon their Allegiance to us, as 'they will anſwer the contrary to Almighty God, 'and as they deſire that they and their Poſterity 'ſhould be freed from the foul Taint of High Trea-'ſon, and as they tender the Peace of this King-'dom, That they preſume not to give any Aſſiſt-'ance to the before-mentioned rebellious Armies, 'in their Perſons or Eſtates in any Sort whatſo-'ever; but join with us, according to their Duty 'and the Laws of the Land, to ſuppreſs this horrid 'Rebellion.

'And our Pleaſure and Command is, That this our 'Proclamation be read in all Churches and Chapels 'within this our Kingdom.'

Given at our Court at Oxford *the 20th Day of* June, *in the nineteenth Year of our Reign.*

Reſolutions of the Lords on the foregoing Proclamation.

After reading this Proclamation the Lords agreed, That it declared this Parliament to be no true Parliament; and that the King would not receive whatſoever came to him from them; thereupon they reſolved to communicate this to the Commons, at a Conference, and appointed a Committee of four Lords to conſider of the Senſe of this Houſe, to be delivered on this Occaſion; as alſo to draw up a proper Anſwer to the Proclamation. Soon after the Lord *Say* and *Sele*, from this Committee, brought in the following:

'The Lords do apprehend that the foregoing Proclamation, whereby this Parliament is declared to be no free Parliament, and the People are required not to look upon the Votes or Actions of the

the Persons now remaining as upon the two Houses of Parliament, is destructive as to the present Parliament and all Acts therein, so also to the established Government of this Kingdom; which Declaration being maintained and pursued by Force, the Lords do conceive themselves bound to defend this present Parliament, and to maintain the Freedom thereof, with their Lives and Fortunes, and are resolved so to do. They think it fit also, that a Declaration be made to that Purpose to all the Kingdom, and to invite therein all *Englishmen*, both of the Nobility, Gentry, and Commons, to join with them, assuring such as shall do so, that they shall be embraced and received into the Protection of the Parliament, and acknowledged as those who have done a good Service to the State; except it be such Persons who shall appear to be the Contrivers of these destructive Counsels, those to be named and excepted in the Declaration; and to this End to desire, that a Committee of both Houses may be named to meet to draw up the Declaration, their Lordships being resolved to name four Lords for that Purpose. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

The Parliament had dispatched a Messenger into *Scotland*, some Time since, to bring over the *Scots* to their Interest; and, this Day, (*June* 27) they thought proper to send another on the same Business, who was to acquaint them with their present State and Condition; and that, after being long entertained with Treaties and Propositions for Peace, they were frustrated by the prevailing Party of Papists and other ill-affected Persons about the King: That they commended this great Cause to the Christian Wisdom and brotherly Affection of the *Scots* Nation and State, to consider how, by their concurrent Advice and Assistance, the Faction of Papists, Bishops, and other Malignants of this Kingdom, might be suppress'd; the Ruin of Religion and Liberty here prevented, and thereby their own better preserved and established. With these, and many

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June,

many more Inſtructions, Mr. *Corbet* ſet out, on this ſecond Embaſſy into *Scotland*; the Conſequence of which will ſoon appear.

This Day alſo the Effect of a Conference, on the King's laſt Proclamation, was reported to the Lords by their Speaker, which was,

Propoſals from the Commons at a Conference thereupon,

'That the Houſe of Commons had conſidered their Lordſhips Senſe, delivered at the late Conference, touching the King's Proclamation, wherein they agree with their Lordſhips in every Particular; and as they apprehend their Lordſhips Intentions to be real in what they have reſolved, ſo the Houſe of Commons deſire that their Lordſhips would make good their real Intentions, by real Demonſtrations, that it may appear ſo to the Kingdom.

'And, to the End that their Lordſhips may better carry on their Reſolutions, and have the fitter Means of Support for the ſame, the Houſe of Commons have thought proper to offer ſome Particulars to their Lordſhips Conſideration:

1. 'That their Lordſhips would pleaſe to join with the Houſe of Commons in the Propoſitions for the making a new Great Seal, to prevent the Abuſes of it; ſuch as was the ſealing the Commiſſion for the horrid Deſign againſt the Parliament and the City of *London*; and alſo becauſe, by the making a new Great Seal, Juſtice ſhall be the better adminiſtred to the Kingdom, and the People will be the more dependent upon the Parliament: Whereas now they are forced to go to *Oxford* for the Diſpatch of their Affairs, which otherwiſe they would not; and alſo their Lordſhips will be the more enabled to do that for the Maintenance of the Parliament, and the Freedom and Liberty thereof, which otherwiſe they cannot.

2. 'The Houſe of Commons deſire their Lordſhips to give Order, that Proclamation may iſſue out to ſummon the Queen to anſwer the Impeachment, according to the Articles; and the Houſe of Commons make this Obſervation, That though the

the King's Councils have flown very high in the Contempt of this Parliament, yet they never presumed to declare it to be None, till the Queen was impeached; therefore the House of Commons think it fit to proceed against her, to shew their Love to Justice, and to let them see that the Parliament shrinks not from their Duty, notwithstanding this Proclamation; and also because the World may see what Reason they have to charge the Queen; and those that have Dependence upon the Queen's Ways, Designs, and Counsels, may be weaken'd and deterred from their Dependence on her, and acting her Commands. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

3. 'To take off the Impression that this Proclamation may make in foreign Parts, the House of Commons desire their Lordships to send the Commissioners into *Scotland* speedily, and to resolve to send Agents abroad to other States, whereby the Imputations will be taken away which are laid upon the Parliament by the King's Ministers; also that the Aid expected by the King from foreign Parts may be prevented, and Trade secured, which they have endeavoured to molest.

4. 'To desire their Lordships will take into Consideration the two Ordinances sent up to them by the House of Commons.

'The first, concerning Intelligence held with *Oxford* and the King's Army; the other, concerning the lifting of Horses.

1. 'That the Freedom of Intercourse hath been a Means to supply the King both with Money and Arms.

2. 'That it gives Opportunity to make great Factions in the City, to corrupt the Well-affected to the Parliament, and to effect many dangerous Practices and Conspiracies, to the Hazard of the whole Kingdom.

3. 'It acquaints the Enemy with all our Designs, Preparations, and Convoys.

4. 'It is contrary to all Rules and Grounds of War.

'Con-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

'Concerning lifting of Horſes; it will be a Means to furniſh the Parliament with a Body of Horſe upon all Occaſions, to preſerve the City and reinforce the Army.

5. 'The Houſe of Commons conceive that the King, by his Proclamation, as far as in him lies, hath diſabled the Parliament to offer any Petition, and preſent any humble Advice to him, in Quality of both Houſes of Parliament, and that he will not receive any ſuch in that Capacity; which Conſideration the Houſe of Commons preſents to their Lordſhips, as an Anſwer for not joining with their Lordſhips in that Petition, which their Lordſhips propoſed to them to be delivered to the King for Peace, which yet depends unpaſs'd.

6. 'The Houſe of Commons deſire their Lordſhips to join with them in an Oath to be drawn, to be taken by all Commanders and Officers in the Army and Fleet, and by Keepers of Forts and Caſtles, and by other public Officers in the Army; whereby they ſhall be bound to maintain and defend the two Houſes of Lords and Commons, in this preſent Parliament, and faithfully to diſcharge the Truſt committed to them by both Houſes of Parliament, againſt all Authority whatſoever.'

The Lords taking the Report of this Conference into Conſideration, ordered, That a Committee of their Houſe ſhould meet with the Committee of the Houſe of Commons on *Thurſday* next in the Afternoon, in the Prince's Lodgings, to draw up a Declaration upon the King's Proclamation.——Touching the lifting of Horſes; the Lords thought fit that the Thing ſhould be done, but not in the Way as the Ordinance was then drawn; therefore appointed another Committee to meet this Afternoon, to conſider of the drawing up another Ordinance for that Purpoſe.——And touching the Ordinance to prevent Intelligence, and ſending of Letters to the King's Army, the Lords reſolved to abide by their former Reſolution of rejecting it; and

and appointed a Committee to draw up some Reasons to be offered to the House of Commons for the same. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. June.

June 29. A Petition from the Earl of *Portland* to the Lords was read, shewing,

THAT he was committed Prisoner in the City, the Beginning of August *last, at the Desire of the House of Commons, upon some Suspicions and Jealousies they had of him; where he continued six Months, almost to the Ruin of his whole Estate.* A Petition from the Earl of *Portland*, imprisoned on Account of the late Plot.

That he is now made a Prisoner upon the same Grounds, and at the same Request; but, as he conceives, without any Charge brought up against him: Whereby, and by what Mr. Waller *hath threatened him with since he was imprisoned, he doth apprehend a very sad, long, and ruinous Restraint, all his Goods being already taken out of his Power, which were the only Means he had for the present Subsistence of his Family.*

He therefore humbly prays the Lords, That he may not find the Effects of Mr. Waller's *Threats, by a long and close Imprisonment; but that he may be speedily brought to a legal Trial before them; and then he is confident the Vanity and Falshood of these Informations, which have been given to the House of Commons against the Petitioner, will appear both to their Lordships and to them; and he shall have the Testimony of having ever borne a very faithful Heart to his Country.*

And for this he shall ever pray, *&c.*

PORTLAND.

The Lords taking Notice of the Expressions in the Petition, about Mr. *Waller*'s Threats to the Earl, ordered, That they should be both examined, Face to Face, the next Day; to which the Commons also agreed.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

The Earl of *Northumberland* was another Perſon the Commons accuſed as having ſome Knowledge of the late Plot; and this Day the Commons ſent up to the Lords to have him examined forthwith. The Earl being in the Houſe deſired the ſame Thing, that ſo, as he ſaid, his Innocency might ſooner appear, and he not lie longer under a Jealouſy; which was done accordingly.

The Commons deſire the Earl of *Northumberland* may be examined touching that Affair.

July 1. The Earl of *Manchester*, from the Committee appointed to take Examinations in the above Affair, reported what Diſcourſe the Earl of *Portland* had lately with Mr. *Waller*.

Mr. *Thinn*, the Uſher of the Houſe of Lords, depoſed, 'That on the 21ſt *ult.* whilſt he ſtaid to ſee whether Mr. Alderman *Atkins* would receive the Lord *Portland*, Mr. *Waller* came to ſpeak to his Lordſhip, as he conceived. The Alderman carried them into an upper Room, and, when they came down again, Lord *Portland* came into the Parlour, and ſaid theſe, or the like Words, *Pray do me the Favour to tell my Lord* Northumberland, *that Mr.* Waller *has extremely preſſed me to ſave my own Life and his, by caſting the Guilt or Blame upon the Lord* Conway *and the Earl of* Northumberland.'

The Lord *Lovelace* alſo teſtified, but not upon Oath, 'That he went to the Earl of *Portland* on *Monday* laſt; and, after he had been there a while, the Earl ſhewed Alderman *Atkins*'s Wife a Petition; and, when ſhe had read it, the Earl ſhewed it to him; and he remembers that, in the ſame Petition, there was this Clauſe, *That Mr.* Waller *deſired him to ſave himſelf and him, by laying the Blame on the two other Lords as before.*'

Theſe Teſtimonies, with the Earl of *Portland*'s own Examination, which is not entered in the *Journals*, were ordered to be written out and delivered to Mr. *Pymme*, or any of the Committee of the Houſe of Commons, by Direction of the Lords.

The

The same Day the Speaker acquainted the Lords, that he had received a Letter from the Lord-General; which was read as follows: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

My Lord,

SINCE the Coming of the Army to this Place, the Unseasonableness of the Weather, and some other Accidents, hath prevented many Things which I purposed to have attempted, had God seen it fit; and therefore I much desire that some of the Lords of your House might be sent down, together with some of the Commons, that we may debate Things of great Necessity to be considered of; which I must desire may be done with all possible Speed; that, upon a Result of what may be offered, you may receive full Satisfaction of our Condition; which I leave to the Wisdom of the House, resting A Letter from the Earl of *Essex*, desiring the Advice of Parliament.

Your Lordship's

me, June 30, 1643.

Faithful Servant,

ESSEX.

A Conference being desired, and held, between the two Houses, on the Subject of this Letter, the Result of it was, That the Lords named the Earl of *Holland* and the Lord *Grey* of *Werk* to go, with a proportionable Number of the Commons, to the General: But the next Day of Meeting, *July* 3, the said Lords being returned, reported to the House, That they set out on their Journey, and got as far as *Aylesbury*, where they met with another Letter from the Lord-General, informing them that the King's Forces were abroad that Way; and therefore advising them not to proceed any further.

July 4. In the House of Commons, this Day, Mr. *Waller* was brought to the Bar, in order to answer to his Charge for being concerned in the late Plot; when his Examinations and Confessions were

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

were ſhewn unto him, who acknowledged them all to be true. Then being told by the Speaker, if he had any Thing more to ſay, either as to the Plot, or for himſelf, he had Leave to do ſo, he made the following Speech to the Houſe [a].

Mr. Speaker,

Mr. *Waller*'s Speech in his own Defence, concerning the late Plot.

'I Acknowledge it a great Mercy of God, and a great Favour from you, that I am, once more, ſuffered to behold this Honourable Aſſembly,

'I mean not to make uſe of it to ſay any Thing in my own Defence, by Juſtification or Denial of what I have done. I have already confeſſed enough to make me appear worthy, not only to be put out of this Houſe, but out of the World too. All my humble Requeſt to you is, that, if I ſeem to you as unworthy to live as I do to myſelf, I may have the Honour to receive my Death from your own Hands, and not to be expoſed to a Trial by the Council of War: Whatever you ſhall think me worthy to ſuffer in a Parliamentary Way, is not like to find Stop any where elſe.

'This, Sir, I hope you will be pleaſed, for your own Sakes, to grant me; who am already ſo miſerable, that nothing can be added to my Calamity—but to be made the Occaſion of creating a Precedent to your own Diſadvantage: Beſides the Right I may have to this, conſider, I beſeech you, that the Eyes of the World are upon you. You govern in Chief, and if you ſhould expoſe your own Members to the Puniſhment of others, it will be thought that you either want Power, or Leiſure, to chaſtiſe them yourſelves; nor let any Man deſpiſe the ill Conſequence of ſuch a Precedent, as this would be, becauſe he ſeeth not preſently the Inconveniences which may enſue: You have many Armies on Foot, and it is uncertain how long you may

[a] From the Original Edition printed by *G. Dexter*, and licenſed by *John White*.

Lord *Clarendon*, after giving a very long and particular Narrative of this Affair, remarks, 'That Mr. *Waller* did as much owe the keeping his Head to this Oration, as *Cataline* did the Loſs of his to thoſe of *Tully*.

may have Occaſion to uſe them. Soldiers and Commanders (though I know well they of the Parliament's Army excell no leſs in Modeſty than they do in Courage) are generally of a Nature ready to pretend to the utmoſt Power of this Kind, which they conceive to be due to them; and may be too apt, upon any Occaſion of Diſcontent, to make uſe of ſuch a Precedent as this. In this very Parliament you have not been without ſome Taſte of the Experience hereof; it is now ſomewhat more than two Years ſince you had an Army in the North, paid and directed by yourſelves; and yet you may be pleaſed to remember there was a conſiderable Number of Officers in that Army, which joined in a Petition, or Remonſtrance, to this Houſe, taking Notice of what ſome of the Members had ſaid here, as they ſuppoſed, to their Diſadvantage, and did little leſs than require them of you. 'Tis true, there had been ſome Tampering with them; but what has happened at one Time, may wiſely be thought poſſible to fall out again at another. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Sir, I preſume but to point you out the Danger: If it be not juſt, I know you will not do me the Wrong to expoſe me to this Trial; if it be juſt, your Army may another Time require the ſame Juſtice of you in their own Behalf, againſt ſome other Member, whom, perhaps, you would be leſs willing to part with. Neceſſity has, of late, forced you into untrodden Paths; and, in ſuch a Caſe as this, where you have no Precedent of your own, you may not do amiſs to look abroad upon other States and Senates, which exerciſe the Supreme Power, as you now do here.

'I dare confidently ſay you ſhall find none, either antient or modern, which ever expoſed any of their own Order to be tried for his Life, by the Officers of their Armies abroad, for what he did while he reſided among them in the Senate.

'Among the *Romans* the Practice was ſo contrary, that ſome inferior Officers in their Army, far from the City, having been ſentenced by their

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

General or Commander in Chief, as deſerving Death by their Diſcipline of War, have nevertheleſs (becauſe they were Senators) appealed thither, and the Cauſe has received a new Hearing in the Senate.

'Not to uſe more Words to perſuade you to take heed that you wound not yourſelves, through my Sides, in violating the Privileges belonging to your own Perſons, I ſhall humbly deſire you to conſider likewiſe the Nature of my Offence; (not but that I ſhould be much aſhamed to ſay any Thing in Diminution thereof: God knows 'tis horrid enough for the Evil it might have occaſioned) but if you look near it, it may, perhaps, appear to be rather a Civil than a Martial Crime, and ſo to have Title to a Trial at the Common Law of the Land: There may, juſtly, be ſome Difference put between me and others in this Buſineſs.

'I have had nothing to do with the other Army, or any Intention to begin the Offer of Violence to any Body; it was only a civil Pretence to that which I then, fooliſhly, conceived to be the Right of the Subject. I humbly refer it to your Conſiderations, and to your Conſciences. I know you will take Care not to ſhed that Blood by the Law of War, which hath a Right to be tried by the Law of Peace.

'For ſo much as concerns myſelf and my Part in this Buſineſs, (if I were worthy to have any Thing ſpoken, or patiently heard, in my Behalf) this might truly be ſaid, That I made not this Buſineſs, but found it; it was in other Men's Hands long before it was brought to me; and when it came, I extended it not, but reſtrained it. For the Propoſitions of letting in Part of the King's Army, or offering Violence to the Members of this Houſe, I ever diſallowed, and utterly rejected them.

'What it was that moved me to entertain Diſcourſe of this Buſineſs, ſo far as I did, I will tell you ingenuouſly; and that rather as a Warning for

'for others, than it makes any Thing for myself; it was only an Impatience of the Inconveniences of the present War, looking on Things with a carnal Eye, and not minding that which chiefly, if not only, ought to have been considered, the inestimable Value of the Cause you have in Hand, the Cause of God and of Religion; and the Necessities you are forced upon for the Maintenance of the same. As a just Punishment for this Neglect, it pleased God to desert me and suffer me, with a fatal Blindness, to be led on and engaged in such Counsels as were wholly disproportioned to the rest of my Life. This, Sir, my own Conscience tells me, was the Cause of my Falling, and not Malice, or any ill Habit of Mind or Disposition towards the Commonwealth, or to the Parliament: For from whence should I have it? If you look on my Birth you will not find it in my Blood: I am of a Stock which hath borne you better Fruit. If you look on my Education, it hath been almost from my Childhood in this House, and amongst the best Sort of Men; and for the whole Practice of my Life, till this Time, if another were to speak for me, he might reasonably say, That neither my Actions out of Parliament, nor my Expressions in it, have savoured of Disaffection or Malice to the Liberties of the People or Privileges of Parliament. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Thus, Sir, I have set before your Eyes both my Person and my Case; wherein I shall make no such Defence by denying or extenuating any Thing I have done, as ordinary Delinquents do. My Address to you, and all my Plea, shall only be such as Children use to their Parents, I have offended, I confess it. I never did any Thing like it before. It is a Passage unsuitable to the whole Course of my Life beside; and for the Time to come, as God, that can bring Light out of Darkness, hath made this Business in the Event useful to you, so also hath he to me: You have by it made an happy Discovery of your Enemies, and I of myself and the evil Principles I walked by; so

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

that if you look either on what I have been heretofore, or what I now am, and by God's Grace assisting me, I shall always continue to be, you may perhaps think me fit to be an Example of your Compassion and Clemency.

'Sir, I shall no sooner leave you, but my Life will depend on your Breath; and not that alone, but the Subsistence of some that are more innocent. I might therefore shew you my Children, whom the Rigour of your Justice would make compleat Orphans, being already motherless. I might shew you a Family, wherein there are some unworthy to have their Share in that Mark of Infamy which now threatens me: But something there is, which if I could shew you, would move you more than all this; it is my Heart, which abhors what I have done more, and is more severe to itself, than the severest Judge can be. A Heart, Mr. Speaker, so awakened by this Affliction, and so intirely devoted to the Cause you maintain, that I earnestly desire of God to incline you so to dispose of me, whether for Life or Death, as may most conduce to the Advancement thereof.

'Sir, not to trouble you any longer, if I die I shall die praying for you; if I live I shall live serving you; and render you back the Use and Employment of all those Days you shall add to my Life.'

The Commons expel him, and he is condemned by the Council of War.

After this Speech, Mr. *Waller* having withdrawn, he was called in again; and, being by the Speaker required thereto, gave the House an exact Account how he came first to the Knowledge of this Business; as also what Lords were acquainted therewith, or had engaged themselves therein. Notwithstanding which he was expelled the House; and so being left to the Council of War, as all the rest of the Conspirators had been, he was condemned to die. But Mr. *Whitlocke* tells us, 'That the Lord-General granted him a Reprieve; and, after a Year's Imprisonment, and paying a Fine of 10,000 *l.* he was discharged, and travelled into *France*.'

France.' Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner* were hanged. An. 19. Car. I. 1643.

July.

The Houſe of Commons had received Information of ſome Deſign of betraying *Hull* to the King, in which the famous Sir *John Hotham* and his Son were concerned: And, this Day, they ſent Sir *William Strickland* up to the Lords with a Meſſage and ſeveral intercepted Letters from the aforeſaid Sir *John* and his Son; in Conſideration of which, he ſaid, the Commons had come to ſome Reſolutions for the better ſecuring and preſerving that Fortreſs; which were theſe:

Information of Sir *John Hotham*'s intending to deliver up *Hull* to the King.

'That Sir *William Strickland* and Mr. *Hatcher*, Members of their Houſe, with the Mayor of the Town of *Hull* and Sir *Matthew Boynton*, ſhould be appointed a Committee for the Government of *Hull*; and that the former two ſhould go down forthwith to take it upon them: That Sir *Matthew Boynton* ſhould be appointed Colonel of the Garriſon in that Town, and recommended to the General for a Commiſſion for that Purpoſe. Sir *Henry Vane*, jun. and *Peregrine Pelham*, Eſq; Members for *Hull*, with Sir *William Allanſon*, were alſo added;' to all which the Lords agreed, with the Addition of Sir *Philip Stapylton* and Sir *William Conſtable* to this Commiſſion.

In this Meſſage alſo the Commons again preſſed the Lords to conſent to the making of a new Great Seal, becauſe, they ſaid, the Kingdom was not able to ſubſiſt without it; but the Lords let them know, That they adhered, in this, to their former Reſolution; which, when the Commons underſtood, they reſolved to give Orders for making a new Great Seal themſelves, and appointed a Committee to ſee it done with all Speed: But they made no Uſe of it till the Lords gave their Conſent the 12th of *October* following. The Form of it was, a Repreſentation of the Houſe of Commons, the Members ſitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland* on the other.

The Commons order a new Great Seal to be made.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

July 5. The Commons having had Information of the ill Succeſs of the Lord *Fairfax* in the North, and that the Earl of *Newcaſtle* had entirely routed his Forces at *Atherton-Moor*, near *Bradford*, were in great Conſternation: And, this Day, at a Conference, the Commons communicated this bad News to the Lords; earneſtly preſſing them to nominate a Committee of their Houſe, to go forthwith into *Scotland*, and to deſire the *Scots* Nation to ſend Aid and Aſſiſtance into *England* againſt the Papiſts and others, now in Arms to deſtroy the Proteſtant Religion and the Liberty of this Kingdom. The Lords agreed to this, and ordered the Lord *Grey* of *Werk* to attend the Houſe the next Morning for that Purpoſe.

Lord *Fairfax* routed by the Earl of *Newcaſtle*;

Whereupon the Lords agree to invite the *Scots*.

Little elſe, of Moment, occurs in the *Journals*, till this Day, *July* 10, when we meet with an Ordinance of Indemnity for thoſe Gentlemen that ſecured Sir *John Hotham*, his Son, *&c.* which was read, and agreed to, in theſe Words:

An Indemnification of the Perſons concerned in ſecuring Sir *John Hotham* and his Son.

'WHereas *Thomas Raikes*, Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Matthew Boynton*, Knight and Baronet, Sir *William St. Quintin*, Bart. Sir *Richard Darley*, Sir *John Bourchier*, and Sir *William Allanſon*, Knights, *Lancelot Roper*, *Nicholas Denman*, *John Barnard*, and *William Popple*, Aldermen, *John Penroſe*, Gent. and *Robert Johnſon*, Clerk, did receive Information that there was a Deſign for the betraying the Town of *Hull*; which, in their Opinion, could not be prevented but by a ſpeedy ſeizing of the Block-Houſes, and other Places of Strength in the Town, and alſo of the Perſons of Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*: And whereas accordingly they, with others, ſeized on the ſaid Places of Strength, for the Preſervation of the ſaid Town, and alſo the Perſons of the ſaid Sir *John Hotham*, Sir *Edward Rhodes*, and Capt. *Hotham*, and the Treaſury, Plate, Trunks, Writings, and

'and other Things of the said Sir *John Hotham* and 'Capt. *Hotham*, to be in safe Custody till farther 'Directions from the Parliament: An. 19. Car. I. 1643 July.

'And whereas the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir '*Matthew Boynton*, and the rest of the Persons 'first above-named, did issue out their Warrants 'and Directions, commanding Captain *Scarth* to 'march from *Scarbrough* with his Soldiers, Arms, 'and Ammunition he had there, to *Beverley*, for 'the Defence of that Place, and of the Goods 'there of Consequence, to be preserved in *Beverley* 'till further Directions from the Parliament:

'And whereas they did issue out their Warrants 'and Directions to divers other Captains for to 'march with their Soldiers from *Hull* to *Beverley*, 'for the Defence of that Place:

'The Lords and Commons do declare, that it 'was an acceptable Service to the Kingdom and 'Parliament, in the said Mayor of *Hull*, Sir *Mat-* 'thew *Boynton*, and the rest of the Gentlemen 'above-named, and all that others have done here- 'in; and that the Lords and Commons will keep 'them, and all others that have assisted them there- 'in, indemnified and saved harmless.'

July 11. A Letter to the Speaker, from the Lord-General, was read to the House of Lords, desiring to have 500 Horse sent him, presently, to recruit his Army, and 200 Horse a Month provided for the same Purpose; as likewise a Magazine of Saddles and Horse-Arms. Another Letter of a later Date, from the General, was also read; which is inserted, at Length, in the *Journals*, and is as follows:

My Lord,

I Would now have given you the true Relation of the Skirmish on Sunday *last, between some of our Horse and the Enemy's, near* Buckingham; *but Sir* Philip Stapylton *and Col.* Goodwin *being then upon the Place, I refer the Relation thereof unto them.*

The Earl of *Essex*'s Letter, setting forth the distressed Condition of his Army.

Since

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

Since when, being informed that the King had sent more Forces to Buckingham, *to maintain that Place, bring those Parts into Contribution, and give us Battle there: Hereupon I advanced with the Army towards that Town; where the Enemy staid till the Army came within two Miles of them, and then made Haste away towards* Banbury; *notwithstanding they had persuaded the People, that they would not quit the Place till they had beat me out of the Country. I then, understanding that they were fled, held it not fit to go to the Town with my Army, but sent Col.* Middleton *with some Horse to clear the Town and Coast, which he did; and then advised where to quarter with most Conveniency to our Army, and most ready for the Enemy, the Queen's Forces being like to join with them very suddenly.*

That our Army might the better secure the Parliament and the City of London, *and the Counties adjacent, and be more safely supplied with Money from* London, *and lie most conveniently to join with the Forces with the Lord* Grey, *in* Northamptonshire, *I did march to* Great Brickhill, *as the most fit Place for all Purposes.*

The Enemy's chief Strength being in Horse, and this Army neither recruited with Horses, nor Arms, nor Saddles, it is impossible to keep the Country from being plundered; nor to fight with them, but when and where they list; we being forced, when we move to march with the whole Army, which can be but by slow Marches; so that the Country suffers much Wrong, and the Cries of the poor People are infinite.

If it were thought fit to send to his Majesty to have Peace, with the settling of Religion, the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, and bringing to just Trial those chief Delinquents that have brought all these Mischiefs to both Kingdoms; and as my Lord of Bristol [a] *spake in Parliament, how we may be secured to have these Things performed hereafter; or else, if his Majesty shall please to absent himself, there*

[a] The Earl of *Bristol*'s Speech for an Accommodation, here referred to, is at large in our Eleventh Volume, p. 52.

there may be a Day ſet to give a Period to all theſe unhappy Diſtractions by a Battle, (which, when and where, they ſhall chuſe who may be thought any way indifferent) I ſhall be ready to perform that Duty I owe to you; and the Propoſitions to be agreed upon, between his Majeſty and the Parliament, may be ſent to ſuch an indifferent Place, that both Armies may be drawn near the one to the other; ſo that, if Peace be not concluded, it might be ended with the Sword. No Officer of the Army to be of ſuch Committee, nor no Intercourſe to be between them. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

My Lord, I am

Brickhill Magna, July 9, 1643. Your Lordſhip's humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Both the Houſes agreed to ſupply the Lord-General, as he deſired; all the Troops then raiſed in the City of *London*, except thoſe for the immediate Defence of it, were ordered to march forthwith; and that there ſhould be a Courſe to ſupply him with Horſe, Arms, and Saddles. There was Neceſſity ſufficient for a general Reinforcement at this Time, the King's Troops being every where victorious; for, beſides the great Victory in the North, already mentioned, Sir *William Waller* was defeated in the Weſt of *England*, by the Lord *Wilmot*, Sir *Ralph Hopton*, *&c.* and his Army totally ruined. Prince *Rupert* had alſo taken *Briſtol*; ſo that the King's Affairs were now in the moſt flouriſhing Condition that they ever had been throughout the whole War. This ſome Lords were ſo ſenſible of, that a Motion was made for petitioning the King, before he had recalled his Proclamation, wherein he expreſſed this Parliament to be no free Parliament; and the Queſtion being put thereupon, it paſſed in the Affirmative. This Diſpoſition of the Lords towards an Accommodation was, probably, much forwarded by the King's publiſhing the following Declaration, addreſſed to all his loving Subjects,

The great Succeſs of the King's Army.

The Lords reſolve to petition for Peace.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

Subjects[a], the Day after he received Advice of the taking of *Briſtol*.

The King's Declaration, after his Victory in the North and Weſt, and the taking of *Briſtol*.

'AS the Grievances and Loſſes of no particular Perſons, ſince theſe miſerable bloody Diſtempers have diſquieted this poor Kingdom, can 'be compared to the Loſs and Damage we ourſelf 'have ſuſtained, there having been no Victory obtained but in the Blood of our own Subjects, nor 'no Rapine or Violence committed, but to the 'Impoveriſhment and Ruin of our own People; 'ſo a bleſſed and happy Peace cannot be ſo acceptable and welcome to any Man as to us. Almighty God, to whom all the Secrets of our 'Heart are open, who hath ſo often and ſo miraculouſly preſerved us, and to whoſe Power alone 'we muſt attribute the Goodneſs of our preſent 'Condition, how unhappy ſoever it is with reference to the Public Calamities, knows with what 'Unwillingneſs, with what Anguiſh of Soul, we 'ſubmitted ourſelf to the Neceſſity of taking up defenſive Arms. And the World knows with what 'Juſtice and Bounty we have repaired our Subjects, 'for all the Preſſures and Inconveniences they had 'borne, by ſuch excellent Laws as would for ever 'have prevented the like; and with what Earneſtneſs and Importunity we deſired to add any Thing 'for the Eſtabliſhment of the Religion, Laws, and 'Liberty of the Kingdom. How all theſe have 'been diſturbed, invaded, and almoſt deſtroyed, 'by Faction, Sedition, and Treaſon, by thoſe who 'have neither Reverence to God nor Affection to 'Men, but have ſacrificed both to their own Ends 'and Ambition, is now ſo evident, that we hope, 'as God hath wonderfully manifeſted his Care of 'us, and his Defence of his and our moſt juſt 'Cauſe, ſo he hath ſo far touched the Hearts of 'our

[a] Lord *Clarendon* informs us, 'That the Reaſon of the King's addreſſing this Declaration to the whole Kingdom, and not to the Parliament, was, leſt he might ſeem to retract the foregoing Proclamation, wherein he had declared the Proceedings of one or both Houſes to be void, by reaſon of the Members not enjoying their juſt Freedom and Liberty.

'our People, that their Eyes are at last opened to 'see how miserably they have been seduced, and to 'abhor those Persons whose Malice and Subtilty had 'seduced them to dishonour him, to rebel against us, 'and to bring much Misery and Calamity upon their 'native Country. An. 19. Car. I. 1643 July.

'We well remember the Protestation voluntarily made by us, in the Head of that small Army 'we were Master of in *September* last, to defend 'and maintain the true Reformed Protestant Religion: And if it should please God, by his Blessing upon that Army, to preserve us from this 'Rebellion, that we would maintain the just Privileges and Freedom of Parliament, and govern 'by the known Laws of the Land; for whose 'Defence, in Truth, that Army was only raised, 'and hath since been kept up. And there cannot 'be a more seasonable Time to renew that Protestation than now, when God hath vouchsafed us 'so many Victories and Successes, and hath rendered the Power of those, who seek to destroy us, less 'formidable than it hath been, (so that we shall 'probably not fall under the scandalous Imputation, 'which hath usually attended our Messages of Peace, 'that they proceed from the Weakness of our Power, 'not Love of our People) and when there is more 'Freedom in many Counties, for our good Subjects 'to receive true Information of their own and our 'Condition; the Knowledge whereof hath been, 'with equal Industry and Injustice, kept from them, 'as other Acts of Cruelty have been imposed upon 'them.

'We do therefore declare to all the World, in 'the Presence of Almighty God, to whom we must 'give a strict Account of all our Professions and 'Protestations, That we are so far from intending any Alteration of the Religion established, (as 'hath been often falsely, scandalously, and against 'the Conscience of the Contrivers themselves of 'that Rumour, suggested to our People) or from 'the least Thought of invading the Liberty and 'Property of the Subject, or violating the just Privileges

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'vileges of Parliament, that we call that God 'to witneſs, who hath covered our Head in the 'Day of Battle, that we deſire from our Soul, 'and ſhall always uſe our utmoſt Endeavour, 'to preſerve and advance the true Reformed Pro-'teſtant Religion, eſtabliſhed in the Church of '*England*, in which we were born, have faithfully 'lived, and, by the Grace of God, ſhall reſolutely 'die: That the Preſervation of the Liberty and 'Property of the Subject, in the due Obſervation 'of the known Laws of the Land, ſhall be equally 'our Care, as the Maintenance of our own Rights; 'we deſiring to govern only by thoſe good Laws, 'which, till they were oppreſſed by this odious 'Rebellion, preſerved this Nation happy. And 'we do acknowledge the juſt Privileges of Par-'liament to be an eſſential Part of thoſe Laws, 'and ſhall, therefore, moſt ſolemnly defend and 'obſerve them; ſo that, in Truth, if either Reli-'gion, Law, or Liberty, be precious to our People, 'they will, by their Submiſſion to us, join with 'us in the Defence of them, and thereby eſtabliſh 'that Peace, by which only they can flouriſh and 'be enjoyed.

'Whether theſe Men that be profeſſed Enemies 'to the eſtabliſhed Eccleſiaſtical Government; who 'reproach and perſecute the learned Orthodox Mi-'niſters of the Church, and into their Places put 'ignorant, ſeditious, and ſchiſmatical Preachers; 'who vilify the Book of Common Prayer, and im-'piouſly profane God's Worſhip with their ſcurrilous 'and ſeditious Demeanor, are like to advance that 'Religion: Whether thoſe Men, who boldly, and 'without the leaſt Shadow or Colour of Law, im-'poſe inſupportable Taxes and odious Exciſes upon 'their Fellow-Subjects, impriſon, torment, and 'murder them, are like to preſerve the Liberty and 'Property of the Subject; and whether thoſe Men, 'who ſeize and poſſeſs themſelves of our own un-'queſtionable Revenue, and our juſt Rights; have 'denied us our Negative Voice; have, by Force 'and Violence, awed and terrified the Members of

'both

'both Houſes; and, laſtly, have, as far as in them 'lies, diſſolved the preſent Parliament, by driving 'away and impriſoning the Members, and reſolving 'the whole Power thereof, and more, into a Com- 'mittee of a few Men, contrary to all Law, Cu- 'ſtom, or Precedent, are like to vindicate and up- 'hold the Privileges of Parliament, all the World 'may judge. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'We do therefore, once more, conjure our good 'Subjects, by their Memory of that excellent Peace 'and firm Happineſs with which it pleaſed God to 'reward their Duty and Loyalty in Time paſt; by 'their Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, which 'no Vow or Covenant, contrived and adminiſtred 'to and by themſelves, can cancel or evade; by 'whatſoever is dear and precious to them in this 'Life, or hoped or prayed for in the Life to come, 'that they will remember their Duty and conſider 'their Intereſt; and no longer ſuffer themſelves to 'be miſled, their Prince diſhonoured, and their 'Country waſted and undone, by the Malice and 'Cunning of thoſe State Impoſtors; who, under 'Pretence of Reformation, would introduce what- 'ſoever is monſtrous and unnatural both to Religion 'and Policy: But that they rather chuſe quietly to 'enjoy their Religion, Property, and Liberty, found- 'ed and provided for by the Wiſdom and Induſtry of 'former Times; and ſecured and enlarged by the 'Bleſſings upon the preſent Age, than to ſpend their 'Lives and Fortunes to purchaſe Confuſion, and to 'make themſelves liable to the moſt intolerable 'Kind of Slavery, that is, to be Slaves to their 'Fellow-Subjects; who, by their prodigious un- 'heard-of Acts of Oppreſſion and Tyranny, have 'given them ſufficient Evidence what they are to 'expect at their Hands.

'And let not our good People, who have been 'miſled, or, through Want of Underſtanding or 'Want of Courage, ſubmitted themſelves to un- 'warrantable and diſloyal Actions, be taught, by 'theſe Seducers, that their Safety now conſiſts in 'Deſpair; and that they can only ſecure them-

'ſelves

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'selves, for the Ills they have done, by a resolute 'and peremptory Disobedience. Revenge and 'Bloodthirstiness have never been imputed to us, 'even by those who have not left either our Government or Nature unexamined with the greatest 'Boldness and Malice. And all those who, since 'these Bloody Distractions, out of Conscience have 'returned from their evil Ways to us, have found 'that it was not so easy for them to repent as for 'us to forgive. And whosoever have been misled 'by those whose Hearts, from the Beginning, have 'designed all this Mischief, and shall redeem their 'past Crimes by their present Service and Loyalty, 'in the apprehending or opposing such who shall 'continue to bear Arms against us, and shall use 'their utmost Endeavours to reduce those Men to 'their due Obedience, and to restore this Kingdom to its wonted Peace, shall have Cause to 'magnify our Mercy, and to repent the Trespasses committed against so just and so gracious a 'Sovereign.

'Lastly, we desire all our good Subjects who 'have really assisted, or really wished us well, now 'God hath done such wonderful Things for us, 'vigorously to endeavour to put an End to all 'these Miseries, by bringing in Men, Money, 'Plate, Horses, or Arms, to our Aid; that so we, 'being not wanting to ourselves, may, with Confidence, expect the Continuance of God's Favour 'to restore us all to that blessed Harmony of Affections, which may establish a firm Peace; without the speedy obtaining of which, this poor Kingdom will be utterly undone, though not absolutely 'lost.'

Lord *Fairfax* appointed Governor of *Hull*.

July 12. At the Desire of the House of Commons, the Lord *Fairfax* was made Governor of *Hull*, instead of the Commissioners before named. [a]

Sir

[a] The Preamble to this Ordinance runs thus: 'The Lords and 'Commons assembled in Parliament, upon the assured Confidence and 'Trust which they have and do repose in the Wisdom, Valour, and 'Fidelity of the Right Hon. *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*, do ordain, 'declare, and appoint, &c.

Sir *John Hotham* and his Son, with other Priſoners concerned in the Deſign upon that Town, were now brought up to *London*; and, this Day, a Committee extraordinary was appointed by the Commons, to take their Examinations, and to do all other Acts that might tend to the Diſcovery of the whole Buſineſs, and all the Circumſtances of it. Ordered, alſo, That no Member of that Houſe, or any other Perſon, ſhould viſit Sir *John* or his Son, nor ſend any Meſſages to them, without Leave of the Houſe. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

The Lord *Grey* of *Werk* having a Poſt in the Parliament's Army, as Lieutenant-General under the Earl of *Eſſex*, his Lordſhip ſhewed very great Reluctancy to go into *Scotland*, notwithſtanding the Lords had joined the Earl of *Rutland* in the Commiſſion with him. He made many Excuſes to avoid this Embaſſy, as leaving his Charge, which, at this Time, the Armies being ſo near one another, would reflect upon his Honour: He deſired alſo that he might be excuſed, on account of an ill Diſpoſition of Body, which would not endure a Sea Voyage, the only Way the Parliament had now to ſend to the *Scots* with any Safety. But, probably, it might proceed from his Diſlike to go on ſuch an Errand as inviting a foreign Army to come and invade this Kingdom; which, ſhould the King prevail, might put him paſt Hopes of Pardon. Whatever it was, his Lordſhip, this Day, (*July* 17) making the ſame Excuſes to the Lords, he was ordered to withdraw; when that Houſe, taking into Conſideration the whole Progreſs of this Buſineſs, and that, upon his Submiſſion to their Pleaſure, they had appointed a peremptory Day for his going, and had alſo acquainted the Houſe of Commons therewith, the Lords therefore inſiſted on their Order, that he ſhould go; and the Earls of *Pembroke*, *Denbigh*, and *Bolingbroke*, were ſent out to acquaint him with it.

Soon after the ſaid Earls returned with this Anſwer, That the Lord *Grey* ſubmitted to go, if the Houſe

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July. House did command him; but desired them to present to their Lordships two Petitions:

1. That he might enjoy his Place of Command in the Army.

2. That when he had been in *Scotland* a while, and settled Affairs in some Forwardness, if he found his Health so ill that he could not stay there without Prejudice to himself and the Service, that, upon his humble Suit and Information thereof to the House, he might be permitted to return home.

Lord *Grey* of *Werk* committed to the Tower, &c. for refusing to go to invite the *Scots* Army.

But the Lords not thinking it fit to have any Conditions put upon them, ordered the Lord *Grey* to be called in again, and the Speaker to demand his positive Answer: He then said, He was not able to go on account of his Health. Hereupon, that House taking this for an absolute Denial of their Commands, and considering his former Answer, in order to vindicate the Honour of their House by some exemplary Punishment, resolved, That the Lord *Grey*, for his Disobedience, should forthwith be sent Prisoner to the Tower. And, the next Day, his Commission in the Army was also taken from him; tho', very soon after, he was released from his Imprisonment, without any Petition, but not restored to his Command in the Army.

July 19. The following Petition was presented to the Lords, from the Assembly of Divines sitting at *Westminster*:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS assembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of divers MINISTERS of CHRIST, in the Name of themselves and of sundry others,

Humbly sheweth,

Petition from the Assembly of Divines.

THAT your Petitioners, upon serious Consideration, and deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath lying on us, and hanging over our Heads and the whole Nation, and manifested particularly by the two late sad and unexpected Defeats of our Forces in the North and in

in the West, do apprehend it to be our Duty, as Watchmen for the Good of the Church and Kingdom, to present to your religious and prudent Consideration these ensuing Requests, in the Name of Jesus Christ, *your Lord and ours:* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

First, *That you would be pleased to command a public and extraordinary Day of Humiliation, this Week, throughout the Cities of* London, Westminster, *the Suburbs of both, and Places adjacent within the weekly Bills of Mortality, that every one may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and cry mightily unto God, for* Christ's *Sake, to remove his Wrath, and to heal the Land; with professed and renewed Resolutions of more full Performance of the late Covenant, for the Amendment of our Ways.*

Secondly, *That you would vouchsafe instantly to take it into your most serious Consideration, how you may most speedily set up* Christ *more gloriously in all his Ordinances within this Kingdom, and reform all Things amiss throughout the Land, wherein God is more specially and more immediately dishonoured: Among which we humbly lay before you these Particulars;*

1. *That the brutish Ignorance and palpable Darkness possessing the greatest Part of the People in all Places of the Kingdom, whereby they are utterly unfit to wait upon God in any holy Duty, (to the great Dishonour of the Gospel, and the everlasting Endangering of their poor Souls) may be remedied by a speedy and strict Charge to all Ministers, constantly to catechize all the Youth and ignorant People, they being commanded to be subject to it, and all Sorts to be present at it; and Information to be given of all Persons who shall withstand or neglect it.*

2. *That the grievous and heinous Pollution of the Lord's Supper, by those that are grosly ignorant and notoriously profane, may be henceforth, with all Christian Care and due Circumspection, prevented.*

3. *That the bold venting of corrupt Doctrines, directly contrary to the sacred Law of God, and religious Humiliation for Sin, which open a wide Door to all Libertinism and Disobedience to God and Man,*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

may be speedily suppressed every where, and that in such Manner as may give Hope that the Church may be no more infected with them.

4. *That the Profanation of any Part of the Lord's Day, and the Days of solemn Fasting, by buying, selling, working, sporting, travelling, or neglecting of God's Ordinances, may be remedied, by appointing special Officers in every Place, for the due Execution of all good Laws and Ordinances against the same.*

5. *That there may be a thorough and speedy Proceeding against blind Guides and scandalous Ministers, by whose Wickedness People either lack or loath the Ordinances of the Lord, and Thousands of Souls perish; and the Removal of the Ark from among us is, to the trembling of our Hearts, evidently threatened: And that your Wisdoms would find out some Way to admit into the Ministry such godly and hopeful Men as have prepared themselves and are willing thereunto; without which there will suddenly be such a Scarcity of able and faithful Ministers, that it will be to little Purpose to cast out such as are unable, idle, or scandalous.*

6. *That the Laws may be quickened against Swearing and Drunkenness, with which the Land is filled and defiled, and under which it mourneth.*

7. *That some severe Course may be taken against Fornication, Adultery, and Incest, which do greatly abound, especially of late, by reason of Impunity.*

8. *That all Monuments of Idolatry and Superstition, but more especially the whole Body and Practice of Popery, may be totally abolished.*

9. *That Justice may be executed on all Delinquents, according to your solemn and religious Vow and Protestation to that Purpose.*

10. *That all possible Means may be used for the speedy Relief and Release of our miserable and extremely distressed Brethren, who are Prisoners in* Oxford, York, *and elsewhere, whose heavy Sufferings cry loud in the Ears of our God; and it would lie very heavy upon the Kingdom, should they miscarry, suffering as they do for the Cause of God.*

That

That so God, who is now, by the Sword, avenging the Quarrel of his Covenant, beholding your Integrity and Zeal, may turn from the Fierceness of his Wrath, hear our Prayers, go forth with our Armies, perfect the Work of Reformation, forgive our Sins, and settle Truth and Peace throughout the Kingdom.

And the Petitioners shall ever pray, *&c.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

This Petition was signed by forty-seven of the Assembly; and, in Answer to it, the Lords appointed the next *Friday* for a solemn Day of Humiliation; and for the rest they would take the same into Consideration. The Order for the Fast was in these Words:

A Fast ordered on account of the Defeat of the Parliament's Army in the North and West.

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, out of the deep Sense of God's heavy Wrath now upon the Kingdom, and more particularly manifested by the late Discomfiture of the Forces both in the North and in the West, have, for themselves, resolved to set apart and keep, and do ordain and command, That *Friday* the 21st of this present *July*, 1643, be set apart and kept as a Day of public and extraordinary Humiliation, by Prayer and Fasting, throughout the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Suburbs, *&c.* that every Soul may bitterly bewail his own Sins, and the Sins of the whole Nation; and cry mightily to God, for *Christ*'s Sake, That he would be pleased to turn from us the Fierceness of his Wrath, and heal the Land.'

This Order was sent to the Lord Mayor, *&c.* with a strict Command to see the due Execution of it.

The same Day a Message from the Lords was sent down to the Commons, importing, That since, by the Earl of *Rutland*'s Indisposition of Health, he cannot go as their Commissioner into *Scotland* so speedily as the Business requires, and that the Lord *Grey* is imprisoned for Contempt, they would think

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

of another Lord to be sent in his Stead: But, lest the Affair should suffer by further Delay, the Lords desired that the Commons would send their Commissioners away presently; and the other should follow with all convenient Speed.

Commissioners appointed to go into *Scotland*.

About the same Time the Commons sent up Copies of credential Letters for their Commissioners, directed to the Lord-Chancellor of *Scotland* and the Council of State there, and another to the Earl of *Leven*, inviting him to take the Command of the Army which the *Scots* should send into *England*, as having been the *Scots* General against the Rebels in *Ireland:* Assuring him, That it would lay upon this State and them such an Obligation, as they should study to answer in a Manner proportionable, &c. Along with the former was sent, by the Commissioners, a Declaration of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, recommending their Commissioners to them; as also Mr. *Stephen Marshall* and Mr. *Philip Nye*, both Ministers of God's Word, and Men of approved Faithfulness and Abilities in their Functions. Also a Declaration of the Lords and Commons in *England* to the Kingdom and States of *Scotland:* Both which last, being printed at Length in *Rushworth*, are unnecessary here. We shall only subjoin the Parliament's particular Instructions to their Commissioners, as they stand in the *Lords' Journals*; these not being printed in the Collections.

INSTRUCTIONS, *agreed upon by the* LORDS *and* COMMONS *in* PARLIAMENT, *for* John *Earl of* Rutland, *Sir* William Armyn, *Bart. Sir* Henry Vane, *jun. Knight*, Thomas Hatcher *and* Henry Darley, *Esquires*, *appointed Commissioners to the Kingdom of* Scotland.

The Parliament's Instructions to them.

I. 'YOU shall forthwith repair to the Kingdom of *Scotland*, either to *Edinburgh* or 'other Parts, as you see Cause; and you shall make 'your

'your Addreſſes to the Parliament, or any deputed by 'them; to the Aſſembly of the States, or any Com- 'miſſioners appointed by them; the General Aſſem- 'bly of the Church, or the Commiſſioners of the Ge- 'neral Aſſembly; the Lords of the Secret Council, 'Commiſſioners for Conſervation of the Peace of the 'Kingdom, the Commiſſioners of Common Bur- 'dens, and ſuch others as ſhall have Power and Au- 'thority to treat with you, upon ſuch Matters as you 'have received or ſhall receive in Charge, and to 'negotiate in that Kingdom as Commiſſioners of 'and from the Parliament of *England*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

II. 'You ſhall take all fit Ways and Oppor- 'tunities to make known to the State and Nation 'of *Scotland* the great Miſeries, Calamities, and 'Dangers, brought upon this Church and Kingdom 'by the Faction of Papiſts and Prelates, and their 'Adherents; whereby we are diſabled, for the 'preſent, to make Payment of thoſe great Debts 'which are owing to them for the Remainder of the 'Brotherly-Aſſiſtance Money, and the Arrear of their 'Army in *Ireland*.

III. 'You ſhall take Care of ſtating and ſettling 'all Accounts, Debts, and Demands, betwixt the 'two Nations of *England* and *Scotland*; and, the 'ſame being reduced to a Certainty, you ſhall treat 'and compound for the Time and Manner of Sa- 'tisfaction for the ſaid Debts, in ſuch Maner as 'ſhall ſtand with Juſtice and the Conveniency of 'both Kingdoms.

IV. 'As touching the Remainder of the Brotherly- 'Aſſiſtance Money; it is conceived moſt juſt and 'reaſonable (becauſe the War upon the Subjects 'and People of *Scotland*, begun and proſecuted in 'the Years 1640 and 1641, was procured by the 'Faction of Papiſts, Prelates, and their Adherents, 'which was the Cauſe of the coming of the *Scots* 'into this Kingdom, and of the Engagement there- 'upon made for their Satisfaction) that ſufficient 'Lands of Papiſts, Prelates, and other Malignants 'as have adhered to them, ſhall, by the Direction

An. 19. Car. 1 1643. July.

'and Appointment of both Houſes of Parliament, 'be ſet forth, out of which Recompence ſhall 'be made for the Forbearance of that Money, 'until ſuch Time as Satisfaction ſhall be given 'for the Diſcharge of all the ſaid Debts, with 'the Intereſt and Conſideration for the Forbearance 'thereof.

V. 'As for the Arrears due to the *Scots* Army 'in *Ireland*; it being impoſſible for this State, 'by reaſon of the manifold Troubles and Burdens 'which lie upon it, to make preſent Payment, 'it is deſired, That our Brethren of *Scotland* think 'upon ſome other Way how we may give Satisfaction, either in the confiſcated Lands in *Ireland* 'by Way of Adventure, according to the Rates 'and Proportions at which they are to be delivered to the *Engliſh* Adventurers; or elſe by Inſtalment, at four equal Payments, within two 'Years after the Peace of this Kingdom ſhall be 'ſettled; or elſe in Proviſion in Victuals and Apparel, to be delivered at reaſonable Rates in '*Scotland*, or any other Place; or any other Way 'within the Power of the two Houſes: It being 'our earneſt Deſire to give our Brethren full Contentment herein, ſo far as God ſhall enable us 'thereunto.

VI. 'You ſhall, according to the precedent Articles, treat and conclude for the Diſcharge of 'both the Debts afore-mentioned; that is, the 'Remainder of the Brotherly-Aſſiſtance Money 'and the Arrear of the Army in *Ireland*, and ſuch 'further Payments as ſhall grow due, untill they 'ſhall be diſmiſſed, in any of theſe Ways as ſhall 'be agreeable to our Brethren: And you ſhall receive any further or other Propoſitions from them 'concerning the ſame; and ſuch Propoſitions certify to the Lords and Commons in Parliament, 'that ſo you may receive further Directions therein.

VII. 'You ſhall, with the like Plainneſs 'and Truth, make known to our Brethren of '*Scotland*, that we are, by theſe Troubles, made 'al-

'altogether unable to continue the Charge of the Army in *Ireland*; therefore, leſt it ſhould become 'too great a Burden to them in our Diſability 'of Payment, we deſire the ſaid Army may be 'diſmiſſed in ſome ſhort Time; only ſuch Gar- 'riſons to be kept on Foot, as our Brethren ſhall 'think fit to retain for the Guard of *Carrickfergus* 'and *Coleraine*, according to the Treaty in that 'Behalf. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

VIII. 'You ſhall mediate and conclude an 'Eſtabliſhment of the ſame Garriſons, both for 'the Number of Men (not exceeding 2000) and 'their Allowances, which the two Houſes will 'undertake to diſcharge accordingly in Money 'or Proviſions, at reaſonable Rates, to be agreed 'upon.

IX. 'You ſhall put our Brethren in Mind, 'That the Popiſh and Prelatical Faction, which 'begun with them in the Year 1640 and 1641, 'and intended to make Way for our Ruin by 'theirs, and ſo to have corrupted and altered Re- 'ligion in the whole Iſland, have not diminiſhed 'in any Part of their Malice towards them, or at 'all departed from their Deſign; but only varied 'in the Manner of their Proceeding; conceiving 'that they have an eaſy Way to deſtroy them, 'if they may firſt prevail over us: And thereupon 'you ſhall uſe your utmoſt Endeavour to perſuade 'and excite our Brethren to join with us in the 'Common Cauſe, not only of the two Kingdoms, 'but of all the Profeſſors of the Proteſtant Re- 'ligion; for the total and univerſal Suppreſſion 'whereof they may diſcern that the Pope and his 'Faction, in ſeveral Factions, are ſtrongly com- 'bined.

X. 'You ſhall deſire, therefore, That both Na- 'tions may be ſtraitly united and tied for our mu- 'tual Defence againſt the Papiſts and Prelatical 'Faction, and their Adherents, in both King- 'doms; and not lay down Arms till they ſhall 'be diſarmed, and ſubjected to the Authority and 'Juſtice

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'Juſtice of Parliament in both Kingdoms reſpectively: For the effecting whereof, we deſire our Brethren of *Scotland* to raiſe an Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horſe, or more, to be forthwith ſent againſt the Papiſts, Prelatical Faction, and Malignants; the ſame to be commanded by the Earl of *Leven*, or ſuch other General as ſhall be appointed by the States of *Scotland*, according to the Orders and Directions of both Houſes of Parliament; and to be paid, according to ſuch an Eſtabliſhment as ſhall be agreed on, out of ſuch Revenues of Papiſts, Malignants, and other Delinquents, as ſhall be aſſigned for that Purpoſe by the two Houſes of Parliament.

XI. 'You ſhall take Care that the City of *Carliſle* and the Town of *Berwick*, whenſoever they ſhall be ſecured from the Papiſts and Malignants, be delivered over unto the Hands of ſuch Perſons and Garriſons as ſhall be appointed by the two Houſes of Parliament to receive and defend the ſame.

XII. 'For the Charge in raiſing and arming thoſe Men; we ſhall give our Brethren Satisfaction as ſpeedily as may be; and if the Reaſon of the War require that thoſe Forces, or any Part thereof, be employed on this Side *Tees*, or that it ſhall be ſo deſired and directed by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, they are, in ſuch Caſe, to be ſubject to the Order and Command of his Excellency the Earl of *Eſſex*, or ſuch other as ſhall be appointed Lord-General by the two Houſes of Parliament.

XIII. 'You ſhall aſſure our Brethren of *Scotland*, That, if they ſhall be annoyed or endangered by any Force or Army, either from *England* or any other Place, the Lords and Commons of *England* will aſſiſt them with a proportionable Army of 10,000 Foot and 1000 Horſe, or more, to be ſent into *Scotland* for their Defence, under ſuch Order and Directions as ſhall be thought fit by the Parliament or State of *Scotland*; and if any

'any Invasion of the *Irish* Rebels, or other Ene- An. 19. Car. I.
'mies, shall happen during such Time as their 1643.
'Army shall be employed for the Defence of July.
'this Kingdom, you shall agree with them for
'a Guard of Ships to be maintained by us upon that
'Coast.

XIV. 'And, that the mutual Interest and Dan-
'gers of both Kingdoms may be defended and
'preserved by both, you shall, on the Behalf of
'the Lords and Commons of *England*, contract
'and agree with the Kingdom and States of *Scot-*
'*land*, that no Pacification, or Agreement for
'Peace, shall be concluded, by the two Houses
'of Parliament, without sufficient Caution and
'Provision for the Security, Peace, and Safety, of
'that Kingdom; the Indemnity of all Persons and
'States for and concerning the Aid and Assistance,
'which shall be given to this Parliament and King-
'dom, for the Suppression of the Popish and ill-af-
'fected Party among them; the safe and peaceable
'Return of their Forces sent hither, and the real
'Performance of all Articles agreed upon with
'them.

XV. 'You shall receive the Public Faith of
'that Kingdom, that neither their Entrance into,
'nor Continuance in, this Kingdom, in Arms,
'shall be made use of to the Prejudice of the Rights
'and Prerogatives of the Crown of *England*, nor
'of the Liberties and Privileges of the Subjects;
'but that all Matters concerning the same be de-
'termined by the two Houses of Parliament; and
'that as our Brethren shall be pleased to come in to
'help us, at our Request, so their Forces shall be
'always ready to depart this Kingdom whensoever
'they shall, by both Houses of Parliament, be there-
'unto desired.

XVI. 'You shall further consider, with our
'Brethren of *Scotland*, what other Articles or Pro-
'positions may be fit to be added and concluded;
'whereby the Assistance and Union betwixt the two
'Nations may be made more beneficial, and effec-
'tual

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'tual for the Security and Defence of Religion and 'Liberty in both Kingdoms: And you shall certify all such Propositions to the two Houses of 'Parliament, and thereupon proceed to a Conclu- 'sion, as you shall receive further Direction from 'them.

'You are, together with 10,000 Foot and 1000 'Horse, or more, desired of our Brethren of *Scot- 'land* for our Assistance, to consider, agree, and 'conclude with them concerning a fitting Train of 'Artillery to accompany the same.

'You are to represent to our Brethren of *Scot- 'land* the Desire of both Houses, that the Earl of '*Antrim* may be examined with reference to the 'Affairs of this Kingdom, upon such Interrogatories 'as shall be, by you, framed and propounded in 'that Behalf, or such as shall be hereafter appointed 'by both Houses; which Examinations you are 'to return unto the Houses with all convenient 'Speed.

'You are to prosecute the Instructions formerly 'given, by the two Houses, unto *Michael Welden* 'and *John Corbet*, Esquires, concerning the six 'Earls of *Scotland* voted Incendiaries by both 'Houses [a].

'And whereas, by Act of Parliament in both 'Kingdoms, concerning the Treaty of Peace be- 'tween the two Nations, two Commissions, the 'one for conserving of Peace, and the other for 'Trade, are directed and appointed; which Com- 'missions are passed and consented to by the two 'Houses of Parliament; you are therefore, accord- 'ing to the said Commissions, and in the Capa- 'city of Commissioners in that Behalf, to treat and 'advise of all such Matters as, by the said Act of 'Parliament, is appointed; and to carry with you 'authentic Copies of the same, and them to deliver 'to the Commissioners for conserving of Peace, as 'you shall see Cause.

'You

[a] The Earls of *Roxburgh*, *Morton*, *Annandale*, *Kinnoul*, *Cas- ..wath*, and *Lanerk*.

'You are to represent to the General Assembly of *Scotland*, or to the Commissioners appointed by them, the Care and Endeavours of both Houses for a perfect Reformation in this Church, and the happy Progress made by them therein; for the better accomplishing whereof they have called an Assembly of Godly and Learned Divines, who are now sitting; and that, by reason of the Prevalency of the Papists, Prelatical Faction, and other Malignant Enemies to this so-much-desired Reformation, now in Arms against the Parliament, these good Beginnings are like to receive Interruption, if they be not utterly disappointed: And therefore you are not only to desire Assistance of that Reverend and Godly Assembly, for the carrying on this Work with their Prayers, but also by such seasonable and effectual Means, as to them shall seem meet; and you are to co-operate with the States of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, for the effecting of the Desires of both Houses in the necessary Supplies and Aid now desired of our Brethren.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

'You are also, according to the Desires of both Houses, formerly expressed in their Instructions to *John Corbet*, Esq; and now in their Declaration to the General Assembly, to sollicit the speeding away of such and so many Reverend and Godly Divines as they shall make Choice of, to be Assistants in the Assembly called by the two Houses.'

July 22. A Letter to the Speaker of the House of Lords, from the Council of War, was read; the Occasion of it will be best known from its own Words:

Brickhill, July 25, 1643.

My Lord,

WE have, after divers Addresses to the Houses, with Patience expected Recruits, and Supplies of Men, Horses, Saddles, and Arms, to enable us to do the State that Service which we most heartily wish we could perform: And we have, in Modesty, for-

A Letter from the Council of War, in the Earl of *Essex*'s Army.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

forborne to press the Necessity of the Armies upon your Lordships, so often as the Condition thereof required, till now we are driven to that Exigent that we can be no longer silent; we must therefore, to discharge that Trust reposed in us, make known unto your Lordships, That the Army is much decayed very suddenly, partly by the Mortality and Sickness which hath befallen us, and which lieth still upon us; and partly for Want of Pay and Cloathing, our Soldiers being grown bare, and many of them almost naked; and the Running away of our Soldiers is not the least Occasion of our Weakness, who are encouraged to leave us, out of a Report of raising new Armies, wherein they hope they shall be entertained.

We hold it now fit to make public the particular Condition of the Army; not knowing whether it will be more pleasing to their Lordships to refer the Information thereof to such as shall be appointed, by your Lordships, to receive the particular Relation thereof from those who are herewith sent to give a full Satisfaction therein: But thus much we shall be bold to say, That if a constant Course be not held that the Soldiers may be duly paid and better cloathed, and the Recruits of Men, Horse, Saddles, and Arms, may likewise be provided, it will be impossible for us to answer your Expectations, or discharge the Duties of our Place; whereof we have thought fit to give your Lordships timely Notice, that we may not, hereafter, have it laid to our Charge that we have dealt unfaithfully in concealing that which, in the End, and that too soon, will be the Destruction and Overthrow of this Army, if speedy Course be not taken to supply the Wants, and prevent our further Weakness, occasioned chiefly by those Particulars mentioned; some whereof will rest in your Lordship's Power to provide against.

My Lord, it concerning our Honour and the Safety of the Kingdom, we must deal plainly and clearly with you, That if a speedy Care be not had, there will not, in a few Days, be left the Face

of

of an Army here amongſt us: All which we refer to your Lordſhip's moſt ſerious and ſpeedy Conſideration, and reſt An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

Your Lordſhip's

Humble Servants,

THOMAS GREY,	JA. HOLBORNE,
WILLIAM BROOKE,	LIONEL COPLEY,
JOHN MIDDLETON,	JOHN MERRICK,
HARRY BARCLAY,	PHIL. SKIPPON,
JOHN BURGOYN,	PHIL. STAPYLTON.
FRANCIS RUSSEL,	EDWARD ALDRICH,
THOMAS TYRRELL,	SAMUEL LUKE.

This Letter was ordered to be communicated to the Commons, at a Conference; after which both Houſes fell upon various Ways and Means to raiſe Money, of which they were then in great Want. They alſo agreed that a large Body of Horſe ſhould be raiſed; and this Day, *July* 25, a long Ordinance was read and agreed to for that Purpoſe. This Army was to be commanded by the Earl of *Mancheſter*, and was, as it is declared in the Ordinance, to prevent the great Miſchiefs done by the King's Horſe, his Army being ſaid to be vaſtly ſuperior in that Kind of Force.

The Parliament reſolve to raiſe another under the Earl of *Mancheſter*.

The reſt of the Tranſactions of this Month, any way relative to our Deſign, will be comprized in a very little Room.——Sir *John Conyers*, Lieutenant of the Tower, having aſked Leave of both Houſes to go into *Holland*, with his Lady, for two Months, it was agreed to; and the Lord Mayor and the two Sheriffs of *London* were appointed to execute that Office till the other's Return. Sir *William Waller* alſo, having loſt his own Army in the Weſt, was authorized to command all the Militia in and about *London*.

The Earl of *Portland* and the Lord *Conway*, having now laid as Priſoners ſeven Weeks, on the ſingle Teſtimony of Mr. *Waller* againſt them, were, by the Lords, admitted to Bail. The Earl of *Denbigh* and

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

and the Lord *Hunſdon* for the former, and the Earl of *Bedford* and Lord *Howard* of *Eſkrick* for the latter, in 1000*l.* each; to be forfeited to the King, if, after Notice, they did not appear before the Parliament in three Days Time.

July 31. To cloſe this Month, we ſhall give an authentic Proof of the Weakneſs the Parliament was reduced to at this Time, from their Lord-General *Eſſex*'s Propoſitions; which were delivered to the Earl of *Northumberland*, by ſome Officers of the Army, ſent on purpoſe to the Committee of Safety; and by the ſaid Earl again preſented to the Houſe of Lords, as a Matter deſerving the moſt ſerious Regard of both Houſes of Parliament. They bore this Title:

CONSIDERATIONS *to be offered to the Parliament, concerning the Weakneſs of the Army, and the* EXPEDIENTS *for Remedy thereof.*

The Earl of *Eſſex*'s Propoſals for reinforcing his Army.

'THE Number of Foot are 3000 marching Men, and at leaſt 3000 ſick, occaſioned by the Want of Pay, ill Cloathing, and all other Miſeries which attend an unpaid ſickly Army.

'The Number of the Horſe 2500, (3000 laſt Muſter) occaſioned by the Loſs of Horſes upon hard Duty and Service, and other Caſualties incident to Horſe in Service; Recruits of Horſe, though often deſired, not performed. Beſides, by reaſon of a new Army being raiſed, the Officers find themſelves neglected, the preſent Regiments much leſſened, liſting themſelves elſewhere for the new Army, expecting better Pay and Cloathing; and, upon their going hence, are entertained and protected: And great Diſcouragements and Scandals put upon his Excellency, the Officers, and Army, either through falſe Suggeſtions of ſome amongſt us, or the Miſunderſtanding of others; poiſoning the Affections of the People, which hinders Recruits and Contributions.

'As

'As Remedies for which Miſchiefs we offer theſe Things:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. July.

1. 'A ſpeedy Pay of Arrears, and a conſtant 'Pay ſettled for the future; which will draw on 'Recruits, and give Way to more ſtrict Diſci- 'pline: And that Cloaths may be provided accord- 'ing to 1000 for every Regiment: To which Pur- 'poſe an Ordinance for a Preſs may be immediately 'paſſed.

2. 'That 500 Horſe be ſent, and 200 provided, 'monthly, for Recruits.

3. 'That the Forces to be raiſed may not be 'put into a new Army untill the old Regiments be 'recruited: No Officer or Soldier to be entertained 'into any other Employment: And that ſevere 'Puniſhment be executed upon ſuch, and thoſe that 'entertain them.

4. 'That ſuch as ſhall be found guilty of any 'Scandals laid upon his Excellency, any of his 'Officers, or Army, may be ſeverely puniſhed; 'whereby the like Offences may be no more com- 'mitted: And a Declaration of both Houſes paſ- 'ſed, for the Vindication of his Excellency and 'them.

5. 'That full Power having been given to his 'Excellency, by an Ordinance of both Houſes, 'for the granting of all Commiſſions for the raiſing 'or commanding of any Forces, Towns, or Gar- 'riſons: It is conceived moſt requiſite, for the bet- 'ter ordering of the Army, that no Commiſſion 'be granted whatſoever, but from his Excellency; 'the Want of which breeds Diſobedience to his 'Excellency's Commands, to the Prejudice of the 'Kingdom.

6. 'That the Loſs of the Weſt is rumoured to be 'occaſioned by his Excellency. Deſired, it may be 'thoroughly examined what the Loſs was, and the 'Occaſion of it.'

ESSEX.

July 28, 1643.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

The Lords taking these Considerations into serious Debate, came to the following Resolutions:

1. 'That the Lord-General's Army shall be recruited, in the first Place, by all possible Means; and for the speedier expediting thereof, their Lordships think it fit that an Ordinance of both Houses be passed for pressing of Soldiers.

2. 'That a Declaration be published, to vindicate the Lord-General, his Commanders and Officers, from Scandals and Aspersions.

3. 'That a Declaration may be published, that no Commander, or Soldier, of the Lord-General's Army, shall be entertained in the City, or any other Place. If they be seen there they shall be punished.

4. 'That such Persons, that shall be employed in the Army under the Lord-General, shall be under his Command, and receive their Commissions from him.

5. 'That it be recommended to the House of Commons, to provide for the Paying the Arrears of the Army, and to recruit him with 200 Horses monthly.

6. 'That their Lordships hold it fit that the Rumour of losing the West be examined.

'Ordered, That these Considerations and Remedies, with the Sense of this House, shall be communicated to the House of Commons at a Conference, and their Concurrence herein desired.'

August 3. Many Alterations had been made, from Time to Time, in the Parliament's Ordinance for the General Weekly Assessment, as well as in that for sequestring Delinquents' Estates, *&c.* occasioned chiefly by a wrong Interpretation of these new Acts of Power, or the Partiality of the Collectors. To remedy which, the former Ordinance was now regulated, and put on a Footing to stand throughout *England* and *Wales*; and, this Day, being agreed to by both Houses, was ordered to be printed and published. This Ordinance, which is neither in *Rushworth*'s *Collections*, nor

nor *Husband's*, nor in any other that we have seen, we give from the *Lords' Journals*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

The Preamble runs thus;

An Ordinance for laying a Weekly Assessment, throughout *England* and *Wales*, for carrying on the War.

'THE Lords and Commons now assembled in 'Parliament, being fully satisfied, and resol- 'ved in their Consciences, that they have lawfully 'taken up Arms, and may and ought to continue 'the same for the necessary Defence of the true Re- 'formed Religion, of themselves and the Parliament, 'from Violence and Destruction, and of this King- 'dom from foreign Invasion, and for the bringing 'of notorious Offenders to condign Punishment; 'which are the only Causes for which they have 'raised, and do continue, an Army and Force, 'which cannot possibly be maintained, nor the 'Kingdom subsist, without the speedy raising of 'large and considerable Sums of Money, propor- 'tionable to the great Expences which now this 'Kingdom is at, for the supporting of the said Ar- 'my, and for the saving of the whole Kingdom, our 'Religion, Laws, and Liberties, from utter Ruin 'and Destruction: Which that it may be done with 'as much Ease and Indifferency to the good Subjects, 'as the Exigence of the Time will permit, the said 'Lords and Commons do ordain, *&c.*

The enacting Clauses, in which, for Brevity's Sake, we have left out the Words of Form, run thus:

'That, for the several Purposes aforesaid, the 'Weekly Sums of Money hereafter mentioned shall 'be levied upon all the Counties, Cities, Towns, 'Liberties, Places, and Persons, hereafter mentioned, 'according to the Proportions herein expressed, to 'be paid in weekly to the Collectors appointed for 'receiving thereof.

	£.	s.
Bedfordshire,	220	00
Berkshire,	550	00
Buckinghamshire,	420	00
Cambridgeshire,	375	00
Isle of *Ely*,	147	10

		L.	s.
An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.	*Cheshire*,	175	00
	City of *Chester* and County thereof,	62	00
	Cornwall,	625	00
	Cumberland,	37	10
	Derbyshire,	175	00
	Devonshire.	1800	00
	City of *Exeter* and County thereof,	50	10
	Dorsetshire,	705	00
	Durham,	62	10
	Essex,	1125	00
	Gloucestershire,	750	00
	City of *Gloucester* and County thereof,	62	10
	Hampshire, with the City of *Winchester*, *Southampton*, and the Isle of *Wight*,	750	00
	Herefordshire, and City of *Hereford*,	437	10
	Hertfordshire,	450	00
	Huntingdonshire,	220	00
	Kent, with the Cities there,	1250	00
	Lancashire,	500	00
	Leicestershire,	187	10
	Lincolnshire, with the City of *Lincoln*,	812	10
	Middlesex, and the City and Liberty of *Westminster*,	750	00
	Monmouthshire,	62	10
	Norfolk, with the City of *Norwich*,	1250	00
	Northumberland,	50	00
	Newcastle upon *Tyne*,	25	00
	Northamptonshire,	425	00
	Nottinghamshire,	187	10
	Oxfordshire,	400	00
	Rutlandshire,	62	10
	Salop,	375	00
	Somersetshire,	1050	00
	City of *Bristol*,	55	15
	Staffordshire,	212	10
	City of *Litchfield*,	45	00
	Suffolk,	1250	00
	Surrey, with the Borough of *Southwark*,	500	00
	Sussex,	625	00

War-

	£.	s.	An. 19. Car. I.
Warwickſhire,	562	10	1643.
Coventry City and County thereof,	37	10	Auguſt.
Weſtmoreland,	27	05	
Wiltſhire,	725	00	
Worceſterſhire,	150	00	
Worceſter City and County thereof,	16	13	
Yorkſhire,	1062	10	
York City and County thereof,	62	00	
Kingſton upon *Hull*,	25	00	

WALES.

Angleſey,	25	00
Brecknock,	50	10
Cardigan,	62	10
Carmarthen,	50	00
Carnarvan,	30	00
Denbigh,	25	00
Flint,	16	10
Glamorgan,	67	10
Merioneth,	12	10
Montgomery,	62	10
Pembroke,	50	00
Haverford-Weſt,	5	00
Radnor.	37	10

'Every Perſon of the Eſtate of a Baron or Baroneſs, and every Eſtate above, and every other 'Perſon born within *England*, *Wales*, or other 'the King's Dominions, as well Eccleſiaſtical as 'Temporal; and every Corporation, Fraternity, 'Guild, Myſtery, Brotherhood, and Commonalty, 'Corporate or not Corporate, ſhall pay towards 'the Weekly Sum ſo aſſeſſed upon each County, 'according as the ſame ſhall be tax'd upon the reſpective Town, Hamlet, Pariſh, or Place where 'ſuch Perſon is chargeable, his reſpective Proportion for whatſoever he hath to his own proper 'Uſe, as well in Coin as in Plate, Stock of Merchandize, or any Manner of Corn, Grain, 'Houſhold Stuff, and of all other Goods and 'Moveables, as well within this Realm as without, and of all ſuch Sums of Money as to him is

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'owing, whereof he trusts in his Conscience to be 'paid, except Money that he doth owe, and, in 'his Conscience, intends truly to pay; and except 'also the Apparel of every such Person, their Wives 'and Children, belonging to their own Bodies, 'saving Jewels, Gold, Silver, Stones, Pearl: And 'every Alien and Stranger, born out of the King's 'Obeysance, as well Denizens as others, inhabiting 'within this Realm; and also every Popish Recu-'sant, convict or not convict, shall pay a Propor-'tion double to those of the like Estates, being no 'Aliens or Recusants.

'Every Person born within the King's Obeysance, 'as well Ecclesiastical as Temporal; and every 'Corporation, Fraternity, *&c.* shall also, for every 'Estate which such Person, Corporation, Frater-'nity, *&c.* or any other to their Use, in Trust or 'otherwise, hath, in Fee-Simple, Fee-Tale, or 'Term of Life, Term of Years, by Executorship, 'Wardship, or by Copy of Court-Roll, in any 'Honours, Castles, Manors, Lands, Tenements, 'Rents, Services, Tythes, Obligations, Obven-'tions, Annuities, Offices of Profit, Fees, Cor-'rodies, or other yearly Profits or Hereditaments, 'as well within antient Demesne and other Places 'privileged, as elsewhere, shall pay towards the said 'Weekly Sums his Proportion thereof as charged 'upon each County as aforesaid, according to the 'true Intent and Meaning of this Ordinance. Ex-'cepted always from this Assessment, all the Goods, 'Chattels, and Ornaments belonging to any Church 'or Chapel for the Service of Almighty God; and 'except yearly Wages due to Servants.

'And the said several Sums, so charged upon the 'several Counties, Cities, *&c.* shall be rated before 'the tenth Day of *August*, 1643; and the said 'Weekly Payments are to continue for two Months '(accounting twenty-eight Days to the Month) next 'ensuing, from the said tenth Day of *August*, un-'less the King's Army shall be disbanded in the 'mean Time.'

Next

Next follow the Names of the Commiſſioners for executing this Ordinance in each County, &c. but theſe, being moſtly the ſame with thoſe appointed for the Sequeſtration of Delinquents' Eſtates, before given at large, we paſs over, and proceed with our Abſtract of the Ordinance.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

'The Commiſſioners of the ſeveral Counties and 'Places, or the greateſt Part of them, ſhall, with 'all convenient Speed, after Notice of this Ordi'nance, meet together in ſome convenient Place 'within their ſeveral Counties and Places, and may 'there agree to divide themſelves, for the Execution 'of the ſaid Service, into ſuch Hundreds, Places, 'and Diviſions within their reſpective Counties, *&c.* 'as to them ſhall ſeem expedient; and afterwards 'they, or any two of them reſpectively, ſhall 'direct their Warrants to ſuch Number of Per'ſons as they ſhall think fit, within their ſeveral 'Diviſions, to appear before them; and, upon 'their Appearance, the ſaid Commiſſioners, or any 'two of them, ſhall appoint ſuch Perſons as they 'think fit, within their reſpective Diviſions, who 'ſhall have Power to aſſeſs every Perſon, Corpo'ration, Fraternity, *&c.* according to the Weekly 'Rates and Proportions in this Ordinance men'tioned.

'And the reſpective Commiſſioners, or any two 'of them, ſhall have Power, within their reſpective 'Limits, to nominate Collectors for the Money ſo 'aſſeſſed, who ſhall pay the ſame to the Treaſurers 'of the Army, raiſed by the Parliament, for the 'Time being, at *Guildhall*, *London*; or at ſuch 'Place, or to ſuch Perſons, as the ſaid Commiſ'ſioners ſhall appoint: And if any Perſon, Corpo'ration, Fraternity, *&c.* ſhall refuſe to pay the 'Sums upon them aſſeſſed, or ſhall not pay the 'ſame, upon Demand, at the Place of his Abode, 'or where ſuch Aſſeſſment ſhall be made, it ſhall 'be lawful for the Collectors, or any two of them, 'to levy all Sums ſo aſſeſſed by way of Diſtreſs and

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

'Sale of their Goods, wherever the ſame ſhall be 'found; and to break open any Houſe, Cheſt, 'Trunk, Box, or any other Thing wherein ſuch 'Goods are: And if any Perſon, ſo diſtrained, ſhall 'make Reſiſtance, it ſhall be lawful for the ſaid 'Collectors, as they ſhall ſee Cauſe, to call to their 'Aſſiſtance any of the Train'd Bands, or Compa-'nies of Volunteers, or other Forces, within the 'County or Place where ſuch Reſiſtance ſhall be 'made, or any other Perſon dwelling in or near the 'Place; and the ſaid Train'd Bands, *&c.* are re-'quired to be aſſiſting to the ſaid Collectors at their 'Peril.

'Every Perſon ſhall be rated, in every County, 'for the Eſtate he hath, either in Lands, Tene-'ments, Hereditaments, Rents, Annuities, Fees, 'Offices, Goods, Cattle, or Chattels, in that County 'only; and if he has an Eſtate, either in Lands, 'Tenements, *&c.* in more Counties than one, then 'to be rated in each County according to ſuch his 'Eſtate.

'All Lands, Tenements, *&c.* of every Perſon, 'of what Degree ſoever, ſhall be rated towards 'raiſing of the ſaid Weekly Sum charged by this 'Ordinance; with this Proviſo, That if the Lands 'be ſet at, or lett near, the yearly Value thereof, 'in the Poſſeſſion of any Tenant for Life, Lives, 'Years, or at Will, ſuch Perſon, to whom the Rent 'thereof belongeth, to be ſolely chargeable there-'with; but if the ſame be lett at any Under-Value, 'then the Sum taxed to be apportioned between the 'Party to whom the Rent belongeth and the Te-'nant thereof, as the Taxers ſhall think meet; and 'if any of them ſhall do any Injury, the ſame to 'be rectified by the Commiſſioners, or any two of 'them, within their ſeveral Limits, according to 'their Diſcretion: And if any ſuch Tenant of 'Lands, *&c.* ſhall be charged with any Sum, con-'trary to the true Meaning of this Ordinance, it 'ſhall be lawful for ſuch Tenant to ſtop the ſame 'out of his Rent due for the ſame Lands, or to 'take his lawful Remedy againſt ſuch Perſon to

'whom

'whom the said Rent is due, (who ought, by the 'true Meaning of this Ordinance, to be charged 'therewith) by Action of Debt, wherein no Wa- 'ger of Law, Protection, or Essoign, shall be al- 'lowed. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'All Persons having any Debts or Sums of Mo- 'ney owing to them within this Realm, or any 'Debts, Goods, or Sums of Money beyond the 'Seas, out of his Majesty's Dominions, shall be 'charged for the same in the Place of his Residence 'at the Time of the Taxation.

'No Person having two Mansions to resort to, 'and calling himself Houshold Servant or Waiting 'Servant to the King's Majesty or other Persons, 'shall be excused from Payment to this Assessment: 'And if any Person, by Craft, happen to escape 'from the said Payment, according to the true 'Meaning of this Ordinance, and that proved before 'the said Commissioners, or any two of them, then 'every such Person shall be charged the treble Va- 'lue of so much as he should have been taxed at; 'and the same to be levied by Distress and Sale of 'his Goods: And if no Distress be found, then the 'said Collectors shall respectively have Power to 'inquire for any Money due, or to be due, to the 'Persons so assessed, for any Rents or Goods what- 'soever, and to compound for any of the said Rents, 'Goods, &c. with any Person by whom they are 'due; also to give a full Discharge for the Money 'by them so received upon Composition, or other- 'wise; which Discharge shall be valid to all Intents 'and Purposes.

'If any Person shall find himself over-rated, such 'Person, before Distress taken, may complain to the 'Commissioners within that Division; which Com- 'missioners, or any two of them, shall have Power 'to give Relief as they shall see Cause; and if any 'Person, so aggrieved, be such as have not formerly 'contributed to the Propositions, or not paid upon 'the Ordinance for assessing of such as have not 'contributed at all, or not contributed according to

'the

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

‘ the Proportion of their Eſtates, then the ſaid Parties, if they be not aſſeſſed above a proportionable ‘ Part as other Men of their Ability have paid upon ‘ the Propoſitions, or have paid upon the ſaid Ordinance, not exceeding the Twentieth Part, the ‘ Rates ſo aſſeſſed to ſtand without Appeal: Provided that no Perſon be aſſeſſed above the Sum of ‘ 10*l.* the Week.

‘ And, for the Encouragement of the Collectors, ‘ Three-pence in the Pound ſhall be allowed for ‘ every Sum paid to the Receivers appointed by ‘ this Ordinance; Two-pence whereof ſhall be allowed to the Collectors, and the Reſidue to ſuch ‘ other Perſons as ſhall be employed in the ſaid ‘ Service, according to the Diſcretion of the Commiſſioners.

‘ And that all the Monies aſſeſſed may be collected, the reſpective Aſſeſſors ſhall, within one ‘ Week after their reſpective Aſſeſſments made, return their ſeveral Aſſeſſments to the Commiſſioners ‘ for their reſpective Diviſions; who are hereby ‘ required, within ten Days after, to deliver a Copy ‘ thereof, ſubſcribed with their Hands, to the Collectors within their Diviſions; and alſo to ſend ‘ up another Copy to the Treaſurer of the Army ‘ raiſed by the Parliament, for the Time being, that ‘ the ſaid Treaſurer may know thereby what he is ‘ to receive of every Pariſh, *&c.* within the Realm; ‘ which Sums ſhall be paid to the ſaid Treaſurer at ‘ *Guildhall, London.*

‘ And if any Aſſeſſors or Collectors ſhall refuſe ‘ the ſaid Service, or be faulty therein, the Commiſſioners for the Diviſions where ſuch are, ſhall ‘ have Power to commit them to Priſon, or to ſet ‘ ſuch a Fine upon them as they ſhall think fit, not ‘ exceeding the Sum of 20*l.* upon the Aſſeſſor, or ‘ the Sum of 5*l.* upon the Collector, the ſame to ‘ be levied by Diſtreſs and Sale: And if any Perſon ‘ ſo aſſeſſed as aforeſaid, ſhall conceal his Goods, ‘ ſo that no Diſtreſs can be taken, or the Sum ſo ‘ aſſeſſed levied by any the Ways in this Ordinance

men-

'mentioned, then the Collectors shall certify the same; in case he be a Peer, unto the Lords in Parliament; and, if he be under that Degree, to the Committee of Lords and Commons appointed for the Advance of Monies; which Committee shall have Power to send for such Persons as Delinquents, and commit them Prisoners to such Place within this Kingdom, and for so long a Time, as the Committee for Examinations shall think fit. An. 19. Car. I. 1643 August.

'All the Assessors and Collectors, and all that shall assist them in the Premisses, shall be protected, by both Houses of Parliament, from all Damage that may come to them by this Service; and shall further receive such Allowances for their Charge and Obedience in the Execution of this Ordinance, as upon Certificate from the Commissioners, or any two of them, shall be thought fit by the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations.

'Lastly, Where no Commissioners are named in this Ordinance for any County, *&c.* such other Commissioners as are appointed by Parliament shall put this present Ordinance in Execution within any such County, *&c.*

'Provided that no Peer of this Realm shall, by virtue of this Ordinance, be rated for any of his Mansion-Houses, with the Appurtenances, in any Place whatsoever; but that the Assessors shall certify the same unto the House of Peers, that such Peers may be there rated for the same according to this Ordinance.

'And whereas, by this Ordinance, the Inhabitants of the City of *London* are not to be rated, in respect of the great Proportion laid upon them by the late Weekly Assessment for three Months, it is now ordered, That those Persons within the said City of *London*, which have not paid the said Assessment, formerly rated on them, shall, in case they pay not the same within twenty Days after the Date of this Ordinance, be rated, for the Space of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'of two Months, as other Counties by this Ordi-'nance are to be.'

August 4. The Lords received Letters from the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham*, dated *August* 1, (but they are not entered in their *Journals*) giving an Account of the ill State and Condition the Parliament's Forces were in, in those Parts of *Lincolnshire* where he commanded; desiring present Relief, both of Men and Money, else he could not defend them against the Earl of *Newcastle*'s Army. It was ordered to be communicated to the House of Commons.

The same Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee appointed to consider of Means for settling the present Distractions of the Kingdom, reported, That they had considered of a Petition to be presented to his Majesty, from both Houses, to that Purpose; which being read and, after Debate, agreed to, a Message was sent to the Lower House, to desire a Conference with them the next Morning.

August 5. The Lords took into further Consideration their Propositions for Peace, and ordered that their Speaker should introduce them to the Commons, at the Conference, with this Preface:

Gentlemen,

Preamble to the Lords' Propositions for Peace.

THE Lords believe it too visible to the Understanding of all Persons, that this Kingdom, with all these Blessings of Plenty and Abundance, the Fruits of our long and happy Peace, must be forthwith turned into that Depopulation and Famine which accompany a Civil War: And that these Hands and Hearts, that should support this Land, do now endanger it by unnatural Divisions: Which Considerations have moved the Lords to send Propositions again to his Majesty, in which they do desire your Concurrence; the Reasonableness and Justice of them being such, that if they be rejected, our Cause will thereby be

be ſtrengthened, and the Kingdom encouraged to preſerve themſelves in their juſt Rights. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

But though we are told the Conference was held this Day, yet the Report of it is not entered in the *Journals*; nor does it appear from thoſe Authorities what the Propoſitions of Peace were. Mr. *Whitlocke* paſſes over this whole Affair in Silence. Mr. *Rushworth*, indeed, gives us a Petition from the City of *London* againſt them, but nothing more. This Deficiency is very luckily ſupplied by Lord *Clarendon*, who has not only given us the Propoſitions themſelves, but alſo the Arguments urged in the Houſe of Commons for and againſt them. The Neglect of the other Contemporaries, in a Point of ſo great Importance, is a ſufficient Apology for our giving his Lordſhip's Account of this Matter, though he was not, nor could be, preſent at the Debate [a].

The Articles thereof.

The Particulars propoſed by the Lords were:

1. 'That both Armies might be preſently diſbanded, and his Majeſty be entreated to return to 'his Parliament, upon ſuch Security as ſhould give 'him Satisfaction.

2. 'That Religion might be ſettled with the Advice of a Synod of Divines, in ſuch a Manner as 'his Majeſty, with the Conſent of both Houſes of 'Parliament, ſhould appoint.

3. 'That the Militia, both by Sea and Land, 'might be ſettled by a Bill; and the Militia, 'Forts, and Ships of the Kingdom, put into ſuch 'Hands as the King ſhould appoint, with the 'Approbation of both Houſes of Parliament; and 'his Majeſty's Revenue to be abſolutely and wholly 'reſtored unto him, only deducting ſuch Part as had 'been of Neceſſity expended for the Maintenance of 'his Children, and not otherwiſe.

4. 'That all the Members of both Houſes, who had been expelled only for abſenting themſelves, or 'meer

[a] Hiſtory, Vol. III. 8vo. Edit. p. 318.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'meer Compliance with his Majesty, and no other 'Matter of Fact against them, might be restored to 'their Places.

5. 'That all Delinquents, from before the 10th 'Day of *January*, 1641, should be delivered up to 'the Justice of Parliament, and a General Pardon 'for all others on both Sides.

6. 'And lastly, That there might be an Act of 'Oblivion for all by-gone Deeds and Acts of Hosti-'lity.'

Debate thereon in the House of Commons;

'When this Conference was reported in the House of Commons, it begot a wonderful long and a hot Debate, which lasted till Ten o'Clock that Night, and continued a Day or two more; the violent Party (for there were yet many among them of more moderate Constitutions, who did, and ever had, heartily abhorred their Proceedings, tho', out of Fear, or Indisposition of Health, or not knowing else well what to do, they continued there) inveighed furiously against the Design itself of sending to the King at all, and therefore would not have the particular Propositions so much as considered: 'They had received much Prejudice by 'the last Treaty at *Oxford*, and therefore must un-'dergo more now their Condition was much lower; 'the King had since that, upon the Matter, de-'clared them to be no Parliament; for if they 'were not free, they could not be a Parliament; 'so that till that Point was vindicated, they could 'not treat in any safe Capacity, but would be look-'ed upon under the Notion of Rebels, as his Ma-'jesty had declared them. They had sent Mem-'bers into *Scotland* to require Assistance, which 'that Kingdom was preparing with all Brotherly 'Affection and Forwardness; and, after such a 'Discovery, to treat for Peace, without the Privity 'of the *Scots*, was to betray them, and to forfeit 'all Hopes hereafter of Relief from thence, what 'Necessities soever they might be reduced to. That 'the City of *London* had expressed all imaginable 'Readiness to raise Forces for Sir *William Waller*;

'and

'and the Counties near *London* were ready to riſe 'as one Man; whereby the Earl of *Eſſex* would 'be ſpeedily enabled to march, with a better Ar- 'my than ever he had, to give the King Battle, 'except this Diſcourſe of Peace did extinguiſh the 'Zeal that was then flaming in the Hearts of the 'People. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

'But notwithſtanding theſe Reaſons, and the Paſſion in the Delivery, the Terror of the King's Succeſſes ſuggeſted Anſwers enough: 'They had 'been puniſhed for breaking off the Treaty of *Ox-* '*ford*, when they might have had better Terms 'than now they could expect; and if they omit- 'ted this Opportunity, they ſhould fare much 'worſe; that they were not ſure of Aid from *Scot-* '*land*, neither was it almoſt poſſible it ſhould come 'Time enough to preſerve them from the Ruin at 'Hand: And for the City of *London*, though the 'common and meaner Sort of People, who might 'promiſe themſelves Advantage by it, deſired the 'Continuance of the Diſtractions, yet it was evi- 'dent the moſt ſubſtantial and rich Men deſired 'Peace, by their Refuſal to ſupply Money for the 'carrying on the War; and if they ſhould judge 'of the common People by their Forwardneſs to 'engage their own Perſons, they had Reaſon to 'believe they had no Mind to the War neither; for 'their General was forced to retire even under 'their own Walls, for Want of Men to recruit 'his Army. However, the ſending reaſonable Pro- 'poſitions to the King, would either procure a 'Peace, and ſo they ſhould have no more Need of 'an Army; or, being refuſed, would raiſe more 'Men and Money than all their Ordinances with- 'out it.' Theſe Reaſons and Arguments prevail- ed; and, after the Debate had laſted till Ten of the Clock at Night, it was reſolved upon the Que- ſtion, and carried by Twenty-nine Voices [b], 'That 'they

[b] This Circumſtance is confirmed by the *Commons' Journals*; wherein we find the Numbers for taking the Lords Propoſitions into Conſideration were Ninety-four. Againſt it, Sixty-five. The Tellers for the Queſtion, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Evelyn*; againſt it, Mr. *Martin* and Mr. *Strode*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'they should insist upon the Propositions, and send 'them to his Majesty.'

Which being by them, in some Measure, approved of,

Lord *Clarendon* proceeds to remark, 'That, without Doubt, if they had then sent, (as, if the Power had been in the two Houses of Parliament, they had done) a firm Peace had immediately ensued: For besides that, if a Treaty and Cessation had been in that Conjuncture enter'd upon, no extravagant Demand would have been pressed, only a Security for those who had been faulty, which the King would gladly have granted, and most religiously observed; the fourth Proposition, and Consent to restore all Members to their Places in Parliament, would have prevented the kindling any more Fire in those Houses. But this was too well known to be suffered to pass; and, therefore, the next Day, being *Sunday*, the seditious Preachers filled all the Pulpits with Alarms of Ruin and Destruction to the City, if a Peace were now offered to the King; and printed Papers were scattered through the Streets, and fixed upon Gates, Posts, and the most public Places in the City and Suburbs, requiring all Persons well-affected to rise as one Man, and to come to the House of Commons next Morning, for that 20,000 *Irish* Rebels were landed; which Information was likewise given that Day in many Pulpits by their Preachers; and, in other Papers likewise set up, it was declared, That the Malignant Party had over-voted the Good, and, if not prevented, there would be a Peace.'—Thus far the Noble Historian.

This Apprehension of a Peace so alarmed the Leading Men in the City of *London*, that the Lord Mayor (*Pennington*) who had been excepted by Name in the King's Offer of a General Pardon, call'd a Common Council at the *Guildhall* the same Evening, though on a *Sunday*; where a Petition against any Accommodation, and a Draught of an Ordinance for vigorously prosecuting the War, was agreed on to be presented to the House of Commons next Morning (*August* 7): For tho' these

theſe Propoſitions for Peace took their Riſe in the Houſe of Lords, the Citizens did not offer any Petition to that Houſe againſt them. Inſtead thereof we find that, the Lords being met, they were informed that a great Concourſe of People were gathered about their Houſe, occaſioned by ſeveral Papers printed and diſperſed all over the City the Day before, inviting the People to come down in an unlawful Manner to *Weſtminſter:* On which they agreed to have a Conference with the Other Houſe, to let them know, That their Lordſhips did account this Manner of coming down a great Breach of Privilege, and that they did adjourn their Houſe till the next Morning; and that, if the Concourſe of People ſtill continued, they would adjourn themſelves to a further Time. Likewiſe to deſire the Commons to join with them, to find out who printed and diſperſed thoſe Papers, and who were the Authors of them, that they might be brought to condign Puniſhment.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

A great Tumult is raiſed in both Houſes,

In the Midſt of this Tumult came down alſo a ſelect Body of Aldermen and Common Council to *Weſtminſter*, with the Petition before-mentioned; and the Commons being informed they were at the Door, they were called in; when Alderman *Atkins*, one of the Sheriffs, in the Name of all the reſt, preſented the following Petition:

And the City of *London* petition the Commons againſt any Accommodation;

To the Honourable the Knights, Citizens, and Burgeſſes, of the Commons Houſe, in Parliament aſſembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of *London*, in Common Council aſſembled,

Sheweth,

THAT your Petitioners having heard that ſuch Propoſitions and Offers have been lately ſent, from the Houſe of Peers, to this Honourable Houſe, which, (as we greatly fear) if yielded unto, would be deſtructive to our Religion, Laws, and Liberties; and finding

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August. *finding already, by Experience, that the Spirits of all the well-affected Party, in the City and Counties adjacent, that are willing to assist the Parliament both in Person and Purse, are much dejected thereat; and the Brotherly Assistance from* Scotland, *as well as the Raising and Maintaining of Forces ourselves, thereby likely to be retarded; all which the Petitioners refer to your serious Consideration; and, considering our present sad Condition, lies upon us in a special Manner, through the incensed Patience of the Almighty, by Delay and Want of Execution of Justice upon Traitors and Delinquents; and, having an Opportunity yet afforded us to speak, our Desires are,*

That you would be pleased to persist in your former Resolutions, whereupon the People have so much depended, and wherein you have so deeply engaged yourselves, (though you should perish in the Work) that Justice may be done upon Offenders and Delinquents. And that, since we are as willing as ever to expose what we are, and have, for the crowning of so good a Cause, you will be pleased, by a speedy passing the Ordinance hereunto annexed, or one to this Effect, to put us in a probable Way for our and your Defence, wherein your Petitioners will, by the Blessing of God, never be wanting; but shall ever pray, *&c.*

Who thereupon reject the Lords' Propositions for Peace.

The Commons, after having read the Petition and Ordinance, first returned the Citizens hearty Thanks for their great Expressions of Care for the Safety of the Commonwealth, *&c.* Next ordered their Committee, formerly appointed to meet with the City's concerning the Militia, to receive such Propositions as shall be offered them, for the Safety of the City and Peace of the Kingdom: To prepare a Draught of an Ordinance upon them, and present it to the House. They then proceeded to take into Consideration the Propositions for Peace sent from the Lords; and, after a very long Debate, the House divided on this Question, Whether they should take those Pro-

Propoſitions into a more particular Conſideration? The Yeas went out, Mr. *Holles* and Sir *John Holland*, Tellers for the Yeas, and Sir *Robert Harley* with Sir *Thomas Barrington*, for and with the Noes; who brought in the Number of 81 of the former, and 79 of the latter. This near Diviſion occaſioned a ſtricter Scrutiny; for the Houſe, not being ſatisfied with the Report of the Tellers, divided again, when the Number of the Yeas that went forth were 81, as before, but the Number of the Noes that ſat amounted now to 88. A very odd Circumſtance, unleſs we may ſuppoſe that nine Members came into the Houſe at that Interval!

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

Thus all Hope of an Accommodation, between King and Parliament, was ſtopped by the Commons; for another Queſtion ariſing at the ſame Time, Whether that Houſe would concur with the Lords in their Propoſitions, or not? it paſſed in the Negative without any Diviſion [a]. But the Commons, to ſoften the Harſhneſs of this Vote to the Lords, appointed a Committee to prepare Reaſons to be offered to them, why they diſſented from them; and particularly to deſire their Lordſhips, at the next Conference, *not to deſert the Defence of the Kingdom at this Time*; *for the Commons would do their utmoſt in the Defence of the Lords, as much as for themſelves.* They alſo reſolved to recommend it to the Lord Mayor of *London*, to take ſome Courſe to prevent all Tumults; who accordingly iſſued an Order, prohibiting, on the utmoſt Penalties the Law could inflict, the making of any unlawful Aſſemblies, or printing any Papers, *&c.* for that Purpoſe.

Two Days after this, (*Auguſt* 9) as a Counterpoiſe to the foregoing Petition for continuing the War, another was preſented to the Commons for

[a] Lord *Clarendon* ſays, The People about the Doors behaved ſo imperiouſly, as to tell the Members of both Houſes, as they paſſed by them, 'That if they had not a good Anſwer, they would be there the 'next Day with double the Number.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Peace. This was from the Women; the Men, as Lord *Clarendon* remarks, being deterred from any Attempt of this Sort by the late Execution of Mr. *Tomkins* and Mr. *Chaloner*, and the Severities which followed the Discovery of Mr. *Waller*'s Plot.—— This remarkable Petition runs thus:

To the Honourable the HOUSE of COMMONS in Parliament assembled,

The HUMBLE PETITION of many CIVILLY-DISPOSED WOMEN, inhabiting in the Cities of *London*, *Westminster*, the Suburbs, and Parts adjacent,

Sheweth,

A Petition from the Women of *London*, &c. for Peace.

THAT your poor Petitioners, though of the weaker Sex, do too sensibly perceive the ensuing Desolation of this Kingdom, unless, by some timely Means, your Honours provide for the speedy Recovery thereof. Your Honours are the Physicians that can, by God's special and miraculous Blessing, (which we humbly implore) restore this languishing Nation, and our bleeding Sister the Kingdom of Ireland, *which hath now almost breathed her last Gasp.*

We need not dictate to your Eagle-eyed Judgments the Way; our only Desire is, That God's Glory in the true Reformed Protestant Religion may be preserved; the just Prerogatives and Privileges of King and Parliament maintained; the true Liberties and Properties of the Subject, according to the known Laws of the Land, restored; and all honourable Ways and Means for a speedy Peace endeavoured.

May it therefore please your Honours, that some speedy Course may be taken for the Settlement of the true Reformed Protestant Religion for the Glory of God, and the Renovation of Trade for the Benefit of the Subject, they being the Soul and Body of the Kingdom.

And your Petitioners, with many Millions of afflicted Souls, groaning under the Burden of these Times of Distress, shall (as bound) pray, *&c.*

We

We have before taken Notice of a Petition from the Female Sex at the Beginning of the Troubles, and Mr. *Pymme*'s Speech to them at that Time [b]: But this Gentleman ſeems now to have been greatly out of the Ladies Favour, by what follows in Mr. *Ruſhworth*'s Account of this Matter: He tells us, 'That this Petition was brought up by 2 or 3000 Women, generally of the meaneſt Sort, (whom Lord *Clarendon* calls a great Multitude of the Wives of ſubſtantial Citizens) with white Silk Ribbons in their Hats; and was, by ſome of their Number, preſented to the Houſe of Commons, who received and read the ſame; and ſent out Sir *John Hippeſley* and two or three Members more to return them an Anſwer, 'That the Houſe were no 'way Enemies to Peace, and that they did not 'doubt, in a ſhort Time, to anſwer the Ends of 'their Petition; and deſired them to return to their 'Habitations [c].' But the Women, not ſatisfied, remained thereabouts, and, by Noon, were encreaſed to 5000 at the leaſt; and ſome Men of the Rabble, in Women's Cloaths, mixed themſelves amongſt them, and inſtigated them to go up to the Commons' Door, and cry, *Peace, Peace*; which they did accordingly, thruſting to the Door of the Houſe at the Upper Stairs-Head. The Trained Band adviſed them to come down, and firſt pulled them; and afterwards, to fright them, ſhot Powder: But they cried out, *Nothing but Powder*; and ſome of them in the Yard having Brick Bats, threw them a-pace at the Trained Band, who then ſhot Bullets. Yet the Women, not daunted, cried out the louder at the Door of the Houſe of Commons, *Give us thoſe Traitors that are againſt* Peace, *that we may tear them to Pieces: Give us that Dog* Pymme, *&c.*'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. Auguſt.

A a 2 Upon

[b] In our Tenth Volume, p. 271, *et ſeq.*

[c] The Petition itſelf is not entered in the *Journals*: But thoſe Authorities mention the Preſentment and Reading of it; and that Sir *Robert Harley*, Sir *John Corbet*, Sir *John Hippeſley*, Mr. *Buller*, Mr. *Noble*, and Sir *Edward Bainton*, were appointed to give the Petitioners an Anſwer; which was to the above Effect.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Upon the whole, it appears to have been with ſome Difficulty, and not without ſome Bloodſhed alſo, that this Mob of Female Petitioners was ſilenced and diſperſed.

Ordinance for preſſing of Soldiers.

Auguſt 10. The Commons ſent up an Ordinance for preſſing Soldiers, throughout the Kingdom; to which the Lords agreed. It had this remarkable Preamble:

'Foraſmuch as the true Proteſtant Religion, the 'Laws and Liberties of the Subject and the Parliament, are in Danger to be ſubverted; Idolatry 'and Tyranny like to be introduced by Force and 'Power of ſeveral Armies, raiſed by Pretence of 'the King's Authority, conſiſting of Papiſts and 'other dangerous and ill-affected Perſons of this 'Kingdom, *Iriſh* Rebels, Popiſh Soldiers, and 'others of foreign Dominions and Nations, not be'ing under the King's Obeyſance, for the Ruin and 'Deſtruction of this Kingdom, unleſs the ſame be 'prevented by a conſiderable Power of Forces, to be 'ſuddenly raiſed by both Houſes of Parliament, be'ing, with God's Bleſſing and Aſſiſtance, the moſt 'probable Way to preſerve the Kingdom, our Re'ligion and Liberty.

'Be it therefore ordained, *&c.*'

Auguſt 16. A Paſſage which happened, as this Day, in the Houſe of Commons, is expunged in their *Journals*, as appears in the Margin, by an Order made *January* 6, 1645; by which Means this Affair is rendered ſo dark and obſcure, that nothing can be made of it in that Authority. We are obliged to Mr. *Whitlocke* for an Explanation, who tells us, 'That one Mr. *Saltmarſh*, a Miniſter, had publiſhed a Book, in which were theſe bold Poſitions:

1. 'That all Means ſhould be uſed to keep the King and his People from a ſudden Union.

2. 'To cheriſh the War, under the Notion of Popery, as the ſureſt Means to engage the People.

3. 'If

3. 'If the King would not grant their Demands, then to rout him out and the Royal Line, and to collate the Crown upon somebody else.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'This strange Doctrine gave Offence, says our Author, to sober Men; and *Saltmarsh* was sent for and examined, before the Commons, about it; when some Exceptions being taken against it, Mr. *Henry Martin* said, *That he saw no Reason to condemn Mr.* Saltmarsh; *and that it was better one Family should be destroyed than many.* Sir *Nevile Poole* moved, That Mr. *Martin* should explain, *What one Family he meant*; who boldly answered, *The King and his Children.* Upon this some Members urged the Height and Danger of these Words, and taxed him with his lewd Life; and, many speaking very sharply against him, he was committed to the Tower: But, shortly after, released, and re-admitted to his Seat in Parliament [c].' Mr. *Martin* committed to the Tower for reviling the King and Royal Family.

The rest of the Affairs in both Houses, for several Days, turned chiefly on Ways and Means to raise more Money and Men, in order to recruit and pay their Armies; the Lord-General *Essex* complaining again very heavily for Want of both. He likewise added, That his Army was much visited with Sickness; and that though he was ready to march, yet he did not care to adventure the Commonwealth of *England* by a Battle, in so weak a Condition, *&c.* Upon which Advice the Parliament thought fit to dispatch a Committee of both Houses to him, on the nineteenth of this Month, to learn particularly his Wants, that they might be speedily redressed. This Committee returning, reported, That they had been with the General, and they had brought him to agree to the following Propositions: The Earl of *Essex* requires further Supplies.

First, 'That his Excellency intends to begin his March in three Days Time; and that about

[c] Upon his Petition to the House, presented the second of *September* following, he was ordered to be forthwith discharged, without paying any Fees for his Imprisonment. *Commons' Journals.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'Twelve o'Clock, on that Day, he promiſes to 'draw his Army up to their Rendezvous on *Houn-*'*ſlow-Heath*; whither he deſires the Parliament to 'ſend Commiſſioners to be preſent and view the 'Troops.

'*Next*, He deſired the City would ſend to him what 'Strength they could poſſibly ſpare. as had been pro-'poſed to him by the Parliament. He approved of the 'Motion that a Committee of both Houſes might 'conſtantly attend the Army.

'And, *laſtly*, The General expected ſuch Supplies 'of Money as might enable him to proceed upon his 'March.'

Auguſt 21. The Queen of *Bohemia* had hitherto lived under an unhappy Planet; and, though the Daughter of one King, Wife to another, and Siſter to a third, was now reduced almoſt to beg her Bread of the Parliament; for, this Day, a ſupplicating Letter from her, directed to the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords, was read in theſe Words:

My Lord,

The Queen of *Bohemia*'s ſecond Letter, deſiring ſome Allowance from Parliament.

SINCE my laſt to you, whereby I craved the Aſſiſtance of the moſt Honourable Houſe of Peers (whereof you are Speaker) towards the Relief of my preſent Neceſſities, I daily find my Burden growing heavier the longer their Help is deferred; which maketh me trouble you once again by this Bearer, Cromwell my Servant, whom I ſend expreſly over about this Buſineſs; deſiring you to give him ſuch Credit and Acceſs as my Occaſions may therein require. Hereby I entreat you to repreſent my earneſt Requeſt to the moſt Honourable Houſe, if they would be pleaſed to grant me their favourable Concurrence, in this Time of my Need; whereby I may be freed both from my preſſing Wants, and from the Miſchiefs which thereupon enſue. I have no Cauſe to doubt but that the Lords, underſtanding the Extremity of my Caſe, will take an honourable Senſe thereof; and haſten, on their Parts, the Means

Means of my Supply; whereof I beſeech you to aſ- An. 19. Car. I.
ſure them all that I ſhall be ever ſenſible, and re- 1643.
main Auguſt.

Your moſt affectionate Friend,

Haghe, June 29, 1643

ELIZABETH.

The Lords ordered, That this Letter be communicated to the Commons, and to deſire them to conſider how the Queen might be ſupplied with the Allowance formerly given her from this Kingdom, as ſoon as they could find Means to do it. But very little was done in this Buſineſs.

Many Ordinances now croud the *Journals* of the Lords, all concerning Men and Money to ſupport this unnatural War; but none of them of Conſequence enough for this Hiſtory. The King, at this Time, as has been ſaid, was every where victorious, and his own Army ſo ſtrong, that the Earl of *Eſſex* durſt not cope with him. In this Situation, the King and his Counſellors are greatly blamed, by Hiſtorians, for not marching directly for *London*, where he muſt have either taken the Place, or forced the Earl to a Battle; either of which would, in all Probability, have ended the War: For, at this Time, ſays *Whitlocke*, 'The Parliament had no conſiderable Body of an Army together, and their Party in ſome Diviſions; but, by the Time of the King's March and Stay at *Glouceſter*, they had recruited their Army, provided Money, and pieced up their Diſcontents amongſt themſelves [d].' But ſuch was the Unhappineſs of the Prince's Fate, that, after the Surrender of *Briſtol* to his Forces, he turned aſide; and, in Perſon, with his whole Army, laid Siege to *Glou-* The Siege of *Glouceſter*.
ceſter. This was on the 10th of *Auguſt*, and the Place holding out reſolutely, it took the King much more Time than he thought of, and proved fruitleſs in the Event.

Mr.

[d] *Memorials*, p. 69. Col 2.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

Mr. *Rushworth* hath left us a Journal of this famous Siege; and other Historians, of these Times, are very particular in their Accounts of it. To them, therefore, we refer, and shall only take Notice, that the Parliament thought it a Place of such Importance, as occasioned both Houses to make an Ordinance, on the 23d of this Month, to authorize the Committee for the Militia of the City of *London*, to order six Regiments of Foot, consisting of 8000 Men, and 1500 Horse, to march immediately for its Relief.

August 27. An Ordinance for removing superstitious Images, Crucifixes, Altars of Stone, *&c.* passed the Lords, which had been formerly sent up by the Other House: It ran in these Words, and with which we shall conclude the Affairs of this Month.

Ordinance for removing Images, Altars, *&c.* out of Churches.

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament, 'taking into their serious Consideration how 'well pleasing it is to God, and conduceable 'to the blessed Reformation in his Worship, so 'much desired by both Houses of Parliament, 'that all the Monuments of Superstition or Idolatry should be removed and demolished, do ordain, That in all and every the Churches and 'Chapels, as well Cathedral and Collegiate as 'other Churches and Chapels, and other usual 'Places of public Prayer, authorized by Law within this Realm of *England* and Dominion of *Wales*, 'all Altars and Tables of Stone shall, before the 'first Day of *November*, 1643, be utterly taken 'away and demolished: And also all Communion-'Tables removed from the East End of every such 'Church, Chapel, or Place of public Prayer, and 'Chancel of the same; and shall be placed in some 'other fit and convenient Place or Places of the 'Body of the said Church, Chapel, or other such 'Place of public Prayer, or of the Body of the 'Chancel of every such Church, Chapel, or other 'such Place of public Prayer: And that all Rails

'what-

'whatſoever, which have been erected near to, An 19. Car. I.
'before, or about any Altar or Communion-Ta- 1643.
'ble in any of the ſaid Churches or Chapels, or August.
'other ſuch Place of public Prayer as aforeſaid,
'ſhall, before the ſaid Day, be likewiſe taken
'away; and the Chancel Ground of every ſuch
'Church or Chapel, or other Place of public
'Prayer which hath been, within twenty Years
'laſt paſt, raiſed for any Altar or Communion-
'Table to ſtand upon, ſhall, before the ſaid Day,
'be laid down, and levelled as the ſame was be-
'fore the ſaid twenty Years laſt paſt: And that
'all Tapers, Candleſticks, and Baſons, ſhall, be-
'fore the ſaid Day, be removed and taken away
'from the Communion-Table in every ſuch Church,
'Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer; and
'neither the ſame, nor any ſuch like, ſhall be uſed
'about the ſame at any Time after the ſaid Day:
'And that all Crucifixes, Croſſes, and all Images
'and Pictures of any one or more Perſons of the
'Trinity, or of the Virgin *Mary*; and all other
'Images and Pictures of Saints, or ſuperſtitious
'Inſcriptions in, or upon, all and every the ſaid
'Churches or Chapels, or other Places of public
'Prayer, Church-Yards, or other Places to any
'the ſaid Churches and Chapels, or other Places
'of public Prayer, belonging, or in any other open
'Place, ſhall, before the ſaid firſt Day of *November*,
'be taken away and defaced; and none of the like
'hereafter permitted in any ſuch Church or Chapel,
'or other Places as aforeſaid.

'And be it further ordained, That all and every
'ſuch Removal of the ſaid Altars, Tables of Stone,
'Communion-Tables, Tapers, Candleſticks, and
'Baſons, Crucifixes and Croſſes, Images and Pic-
'tures as aforeſaid, taking away of the ſaid Rails,
'levelling the ſaid Grounds, ſhall be done and
'performed; and the Walls, Windows, Grounds,
'and other Places which ſhall be broken, impair-
'ed, or altered by any the Means aforeſaid, ſhall
'be made up and repaired in good and ſufficient
'Manner, in all and every of the ſaid Pariſh Churches

'or

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. August.

'or Chapels, or usual Places of public Prayer 'belonging to any Parish, by the Church-Warden 'or Church-Wardens of every such Parish for the 'Time being respectively; and in any Cathedral 'or Collegiate Church or Chapel, by the Dean 'or Sub-Dean, or other chief Officer of every such 'Church or Chapel for the Time being; and in 'the Universities, by the several Heads and Go-'vernors of every College or Hall respectively; and 'in the several Inns of Court, by the Benchers 'and Readers of every of the same respectively, 'at the Cost and Charges of all and every such Per-'son or Persons, Body Politic or Corporate, or 'Parishioners of every Parish respectively, to whom 'the Charge of the Repair of any such Church, 'Chapel, Chancel, or Place of public Prayer, doth 'or shall belong.

'And in case Default be made in any of the Pre-'mises, by any of the Person or Persons thereunto 'appointed by this Ordinance, from and after the 'said first Day of *November*, 1643, that then every 'such Person of Persons, so making Default, shall, 'for every such Neglect or Default by the Space of 'twenty Days, forfeit and lose forty Shillings to the 'Use of the Poor of the said Parish wherein such 'Default shall be made; or if it be out of any Pa-'rish, then to the Use of the Poor of such Parish 'whose Church is, or shall be, nearest to the Church 'or Chapel, or other Place of public Prayer, where 'such Default shall be made; and if Default shall 'be made after the first Day of *December*, 1643, then 'any one Justice of the Peace of the County, City, 'or Town, where such Default shall be made, up-'on Information thereof to him to be given, shall 'cause or procure the Premises to be performed, ac-'cording to the Tenor of this Ordinance, at the 'Cost and Charges of such Person or Persons, Bo-'dies Politic or Corporate, or Inhabitants in every 'Parish, who are appointed by this Ordinance to 'bear the same.

'Provided that this Ordinance, or any thing 'therein contained, shall not extend to any Image,

'Pic-

'Picture, or Coat of Arms in Glass, Stone, or otherwise, in any Church, Chapel, Church-Yard, or Place of public Prayer as aforesaid, set up or graven only for a Monument of any King, Prince, or Nobleman, or other dead Person, which hath not been commonly reputed or taken for a Saint: But that all such Images, Pictures, and Coats of Arms, may stand and continue in like Manner and Form, as if this Ordinance had never been made [d].'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Military Orders of various Kinds continue to be made by both Houses, at the Beginning of the Month of *September*; nor is there any Thing else, material enough for our Purpose, till the seventh of this Month: When Sir *John Hotham* was brought to the Bar of the House of Commons, by Order, before he took his Trial; and being acquainted by the Speaker, That he had Liberty to speak to the House if he desired it, he said, He had some Petitions to present to them; which was, That his Lady might come up with her Coach and Horses, Children, Servants, and Evidences; and some Goods and Plate he had left, for their Maintenance. He desired also, that he might continue where he was till his Trial: He protested his own Innocency, and did not doubt, when he knew his Charge, but to make it appear as clear as the Sun. Being demanded, Whether he knew of any Members of that House, or of the Lords, that had conveyed any Treasure beyond Seas? He answered, He knew of none, if he were to die that Instant. And being again asked, Whether he knew that Mr. *Pymme* had conveyed any Treasure in like Manner? With some Astonishment he asked, If that Question was asked him in Earnest? Protested he knew nothing of it, and that he had never reported any such Thing.

Sir *John Hotham* and his Son examined by the Commons.

Then the Examination taken by the Committee, concerning the Correspondence he held with Lord *Digby*,

[d] This Proviso seems to have been founded upon the Statute of 3 and 4 *Edward* VI. *Cap.* 12. *for defacing of Images*; which see in our Third Volume, p. 252.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Digby, was read to him. And, being demanded by the Speaker, Whether it was true or not which he had there expreſſed? He anſwered, It was true; only in that concerning Sir *Hugh Cholmley*, and *Keyes*, his Son's Servant, were ſome Miſtakes: For when *Keyes* came to him at *Hull*, he, wondering to ſee him, ſaid, *How the Devil cameſt thou hither?—How couldſt thou come through the Queen's Army?* and that was all he ſaid to him. Further, he ſaid, the Lord *Digby* did ſend a Declaration to him, to publiſh to the World his Reaſons for his turning to his Allegiance to the King; but he tore it in Pieces, and told him, That he could not ſerve the King, till he had ſent juſt Propoſitions to the Parliament. And being preſſed by the Committee to anſwer to ſome farther Queſtions about Lord *Digby*, he ſaid, He was not bound to accuſe himſelf [e]; made no farther Anſwer, and confeſſed that he did refuſe to ſign this Examination. After this the Commons proceeded to expell Sir *John* their Houſe, and to commit him cloſe Priſoner to the Tower.

Sept. 8. The Son of this unfortunate Father was likewiſe brought to the ſame Bar, the Serjeant ſtanding with his Mace within it, when the Speaker told him, If he had any Thing to ſay the Houſe would hear him. Upon which he made a long Narration of the whole Carriage of Affairs, from the firſt Time he took Poſſeſſion of *Hull*, to that of his Commitment; acknowledging he had committed many Errors and Offences, but nothing to betray the Truſt repoſed in him by the Parliament. Being aſked, as his Father had been before, If he could tell what Monies, Treaſure, or other Goods, the Lord *Say*, Mr. *Pymme*, or any other Member of either Houſe, had tranſported beyond Sea? He

[e] Lord *Clarendon* gives a very particular Narrative of what paſſed between Lord *Digby* and Sir *John Hotham*, in relation to a Propoſal made by the former for the Surrender of *Hull* to the King, when he was taken Priſoner in Diſguiſe, on board the Ship *Providence*. *Clarendon*, Vol. II. p. 705.

We took ſome Notice of this Matter in our Eleventh Volume, p. 356: But the Whole is too long for our Purpoſe.

He answered, He knew of none, nor ever heard of any that knew any such Thing.—Notwithstanding this the Commons expelled Captain *Hotham*, and remanded him to the same Custody he was before; but ordered that a Warrant should be made to bring up both their Ladies, Children, Servants, *&c.* as his Father had desired.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

They are expelled the House and recommitted to Prison.

In the Course of these Examinations, the Reader may observe that Mr. *Pymme* is mentioned, along with others, as charged with some indirect Practices. To do Justice to the Memory of that great Man, on the same Day Sir *Edward Bainton*, a Member of the House of Commons, was sent for, charged with saying, That the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pymme* had betrayed the West and North. And being demanded, Whether he had spoke those Words charged upon him? Answered, He did not speak them as they were there laid down. Being then demanded, What he had spoken to that Purpose? Answered, That he had learned, since he had sat here, that he ought not to speak any Thing here that reflected to the Prejudice of another Member; and therefore desired to be excused, unless he were enjoined and commanded. Whereupon he was enjoined to speak the whole Truth: And then he said, That he did not say that Mr. *Pymme* had betrayed the West, but that he had betrayed his County; which he did, by being a Means of detaining him in Prison, who only was able to maintain and preserve that County, till the said County was quite lost, notwithstanding many Orders made for his bringing up [f]: As for betraying the North, he knew nothing more of that than he had heard in the House, which sounded bad enough, *viz.* That the Offer of the Lord *Savile* and Sir *William*

A Charge against Mr. *Pymme* for indirect Practices.

[f] This Passage runs thus in the *Commons' Journals*:——Probably *Wiltshire* is intended, where Sir *Edward Bainton* was a Deputy-Lieutenant of the Militia; and had been so active in the Parliament's Service as to be particularly mentioned in the King's Declaration, on Occasion of the Parliament's Ordinances for laying an Assessment; which we have already given in this Volume, p. 65.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

liam Savile, to deliver up, to the Parliament's Forces, *York* and that whole County, if they might not be prejudiced in their Perſons and Eſtates, was prevented. Adding, That he had heard it ſaid and affirmed, with ſolemn and deep Oaths and Proteſtations, That the Lord *Cottington* had treated with his Majeſty for the Pardon of the Lord *Say* and Mr. *Pymme*; and that if they had had the Preferments they expected, we had not been brought to the Condition we now are in. Being demanded from whom he heard this, anſwered, It was from the Lord *Grandiſon*'s Brother, Lieutenant-Colonel *Brett*, and Serjeant-Major *Juques*, all Officers in the King's Army, and Priſoners with him at *Glouceſter*.

Which the Commons vote to be falſe and ſcandalous.

Mr. *Pymme*, in Anſwer to this Charge, proteſted ſolemnly, That he never had Intercourſe with the Lord *Cottington*, by one Means or other, ſince the Difference between the King and Parliament: That he never received but two Meſſages from him ſince this Parliament began; the one was by Sir *Arthur Ingram*, long before he died; the other by Sir *Benjamin Rudyard*.——Upon the whole, the Commons voted the Charge laid upon Mr. *Pymme* by Sir *Edward Bainton*, to be falſe and ſcandalous; and that the ſaid Sir *Edward* ſhould be forthwith ſent to the Tower, there to remain a Priſoner during the Pleaſure of the Houſe. But, ſoon after, the Queſtion being put, Whether Sir *Edward Bainton* ſhould be now called to the Bar, and from thence ſent to the Tower, the Houſe divided into 20 Yeas and 40 Noes; ſo it paſſed in the Negative.——Howſoever this laſt Charge againſt Mr. *Pymme* may be true or falſe, Mr. *Whitlocke* has inſinuated, in his Account of the Beginning of theſe Troubles, 'That the Earl of *Strafford*'s Proſecution might have been ſtopped, and the King's Enemies have become his Friends, if ſome particular Perſons had been gratified in their Expectations and Deſires; amongſt whom he names Mr. *Pymme* to have been deſigned for Chancellor of the Exchequer.

quer [g]. But it is very ſtrange that neither this Memorialiſt, nor Mr. *Ruſhworth*, nor even Lord *Clarendon* himſelf, make any Mention of this Accuſation. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Sept. 9. The Reader muſt remember, that, on the famous Affair of Ship-Money, moſt of the Judges who had given the King their Opinions for the Legality of it, were committed, ſome to the Tower, others elſewhere. Amongſt theſe, Sir *Robert Berkeley*, one of the Juſtices of the King's-Bench, had been long a Priſoner in the Tower, and his Trial put off *de Die in Diem*, for many Months together, 'till this Day; when it came on peremptorily before the Houſe of Lords; a Committee of the Commons being at the Bar to manage the Evidence againſt him, concerning ſo much of the Charge as reſpected Ship-Money only, and the Opinions of the Judges thereupon. The Proceedings againſt Judge *Berkeley* for his Opinion, in relation to Ship-Money, revived.

Then, by the Direction of the Houſe of Lords, the Gentleman-Uſher of the Black-Rod brought Mr. Juſtice *Berkeley* to the Bar; where, after he had kneeled as a Delinquent, and being commanded by the Speaker to ſtand up, the Committee proceeded in the Charge: But firſt acquainted the Lords, That whereas the Commons had impeached Mr. Juſtice *Berkeley*, and brought up divers Articles againſt him, they intended to proceed only upon the Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth, which concerned Ship-Money [h].

Then the Lords commanded the ſaid Articles to be read, *viz.*

IV. That the ſaid Sir *Robert Berkeley*, then being 'one of the Juſtices of the Court of King's Bench, 'and having taken an Oath for the due Adminiſtra-'tion of Juſtice, according to the Laws of this Realm,

[g] *Memorials*, p. 39.

[h] In the Proceedings of *July* 6, 1641, we took Notice of Articles of Impeachment being exhibited againſt Sir *Robert Berkeley* and other Judges. Theſe we paſſed over with a Reference to *Ruſhworth*, *Nalſon*, and the State Trials: But the Proceedings, and Sentence in Conſequence of this Impeachment, are omitted in all thoſe Collections.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'Realm, to his Majesty's liege People, did, on the 'last Day of *November*, 1635, subscribe an Opinion, '*in hæc Verba:*

I am of Opinion that, where the Benefit doth more particularly redound to the Good of the Ports, or marine Parts, as in the Case of Piracy or Depredations upon the Seas, there the Charge hath been, and may be, lawfully imposed upon them according to Precedents of former Times: So where the Safety and Good of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, of which his Majesty is the only Judge, there the Charge of the Defence ought to be borne by all the Realm in general. This I hold agreeable both to Law and Reason.

V. 'That the said Sir *Robert Berkeley*, being one 'of the Justices of the Court of King's-Bench, and 'duly sworn as aforesaid, did, in *February* 1636, 'subscribe an extrajudicial Opinion in an Answer 'to Questions in a Letter from his Majesty; which 'was to this Effect:

CHARLES *R.*

'WHEN the Good and Safety of the King-'dom in general is concerned, and the 'whole Kingdom in Danger, whether may not 'the King, by Writ under the Great Seal of *Eng-'land*, command all the Subjects of this Kingdom, 'at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Num-'ber of Ships with Men, Victuals, and Ammu-'nition, and for such Time as he shall think fit, 'for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom 'from such Danger and Peril; and, by Law, com-'pell the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refrac-'toriness; and whether, in such Case, is not the 'King the sole Judge both of the Danger, and how, 'and when, the same is to be prevented and avoid-'ed?'

May it please your Most Excellent Majesty,

WE have, according to your Majesty's Command, severally, every Man by himself, and all of us together, taken into serious Consideration the Case and Que-

Question signed by your Majesty, and inclosed in your Royal Letter; and are of Opinion, That when the Good and Safety of the Kingdom in general is concerned, and the whole Kingdom in Danger, your Majesty may, by Writ under the Great Seal of England, *command all the Subjects of this your Kingdom, at their Charge, to provide and furnish such Number of Ships, with Men, Victuals, and Munition, and for such Time as your Majesty shall think fit, for the Defence and Safeguard of the Kingdom from such Danger and Peril; and that, by Law, your Majesty may compell the doing thereof in case of Refusal or Refractorinesse: And we are also of Opinion, That, in such Case, your Majesty is the sole Judge both of the Danger, and when and how the same is to be prevented and avoided.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

JOHN BRAMSTON, JOHN FINCH, HUM. DAVENPORT, RICHARD HUTTON, GEORGE CROOKE, GEORGE VERNON, FRANCIS CRAWLEY, JOHN DENHAM, WILLIAM JONES, THOMAS TREVOR, ROBERT BERKELEY, RICHARD WESTON.

VI. 'That the said *Robert Berkeley*, then being 'one of the Justices of the Court of King's Bench, 'and duly sworn as aforesaid, did [on the 10th of '*February*, 13° *Car.* 1637] deliver his Opinion in 'the Exchequer-Chamber against *John Hampden*, 'Esq; in the Case of Ship-Money, That he the 'said *John Hampden*, upon the Matter and Sub-'stance of the Case, was chargeable with the Mo-'ney then in Question: A Copy of which Pro-'ceedings and Judgment the Commons, in this 'present Parliament, have delivered to your Lord-'ships.'

Then Mr. *Maynard*, one of the Committee, desired that Mr. Justice *Berkeley* might have this Question put to him, Whether he did give his Opinion, and subscribe the said Opinion?

Mr. Justice *Berkeley* desired Leave of the House, that he might have Liberty first to make a Protesta-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

tion before he ſpeaks any Thing of the Matter. The Lords gave him Leave to do it; and then he ſaid, He cannot but take Notice of the ſupreme and unqueſtionable Votes of both Houſes of Parliament concerning the Judgment againſt Ship-Money, to which Votes he humbly ſubmits; and againſt which he will not ſpeak one Syllable.

Then he confeſſed that about *Hilary* Term, 11° *Caroli*, the Lord Chief Juſtice *Finch* came to his Chamber at *Serjeants-Inn*, and told him he had a Caſe to deliver to him from the King, and he was to deliver his Opinion in it. He confeſſed he read and conſidered of it, and he did ſubſcribe to the Opinion now read, and he ſubſcribed to it as his Opinion, according as he then thought the Law to be.

Next he was aſked, Whether the reſt of the Judges did not ſubſcribe the ſame Opinion as it is charged?

He anſwered, That on the ſixth of *February* the Lord Chief Juſtice *Brampſton* ſent to all the Judges to meet at *Serjeants-Inn*; and there acquainted them, that he had received a Letter from the King and a Caſe incloſed, which he was to communicate as from him, and that his Majeſty required them to ſubſcribe their Opinions; that the ſaid Caſe and Letter was read, being the very ſame as in the Charge; and that, upon Conſideration, it was carried by the Major Part; and all the Judges ſubſcrib'd the ſame as their Opinion.

Then being aſked, Whether he delivered his Opinion, in the Judgment, in Mr. *Hampden*'s Caſe, as 'tis charged in the Impeachment, which was for levying of Money? He confeſſed, That, by Mr. *Hampden*'s Plea of Demurrer, he conceived that Mr. *Hampden* had confeſſed the Neceſſity that *Salus Reipublicæ periclitabatur*: And he gave Judgment therein as he conceived then the Law to be; but that he is now enlightened by the Votes of both Houſes of Parliament ſince made; and that he did not do any Thing out of Malice, but out of Error of Opinion.

Mr.

Mr. *Maynard* and the reſt of the Committee concluded with a ſhort Reply, by Way of Aggravation, That the Judgment was for Money, though the Opinion was not: That the Judgment in Mr. *Hampden*'s Caſe was extrajudicial, and the Judges had no Cognizance of it; but they ought to have refuſed any Judgment in it: That being ſo great a Concernment to the Commonwealth, it was a Crime done to the whole Commonwealth, contrary to the Liberty of the Subject, deſtructive to the Privileges of Parliament, and to the Petition of Right, and the Laws of this Kingdom. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

The Committee added, That this Judgment was contrary to his Oath as a Judge, being ſworn to do equal Right, and to give Counſel between the King and the Subject, according to Law, as 18 *Edward* III. *Parliament-Roll:* That this Crime was more than an Error of Judgment, though Judges have been queſtioned and judged in Parliament not only for falſe Judgment, but alſo for Error of Opinion.

And concluded with a Deſire, That the Matter of Fact being confeſſed, their Lordſhips would pleaſe to take the whole into Conſideration, and inflict ſuch exemplary Puniſhment as their Lordſhips, in their great Wiſdom, ſhould think fit.

Sept. 12. The Lords proceeded to Sentence againſt Sir *Robert Berkeley*; and having previouſly found him guilty of the Charge in the three foregoing Articles againſt him, that High Court did award and adjudge,

I. *That the ſaid Sir* Robert Berkeley, *Knt. ſhall be fined in the Sum of* 20,000 l. *to be paid in at* Guildhall, London, *to be diſpoſed of by the Authority of both Houſes of Parliament, for the Safety of the Kingdom. And if it ſhall not be paid and ſatisfied within ſix Weeks next after the Date of this Judgment, other Courſe ſhall be taken for levying the ſame.* The Lords pronounce Sentence againſt him.

II. *That he be hereby diſcharged from being a Judge in the Court of King's Bench; made incapable*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

of any Honour, or to hold any Place or Office in the State or Commonwealth for the future.

III. *That he shall be imprisoned in the Tower of* London, *during the Pleasure of this House* [a].

At this Time it was that the *Scots* sent over Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Kirk of *Scotland*, with some Propositions to be presented to the *English* Parliament. These Commissioners were some Noblemen and others, called Ruling Elders, with Ministers, &c. who delivered their Credentials to a Committee of both Houses appointed for that Purpose. There had been a Declaration of Parliament, sent some Time before into *Scotland*, concerning Religious Matters, to which these Commissioners brought the following Answer:

The ANSWER *of the General Assembly of the Church of* Scotland, *to the* DECLARATION *of the Honourable Houses of Parliament in* England.

The Commissioners from the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* propose their Solemn League and Covenant to the Parliament of *England*.

'THE General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland*, having received a Declaration from the Honourable Houses of the Parliament of *England*, by their Commissioners now residing here, hath thought good to make known unto the Lords and Commons in Parliament, That all the Members of this Assembly, and others well-affected here, do, with most Thankfulness, take special Notice of the Expressions which they have been pleased to make in the forementioned Declaration; not only concerning their Approbation of the Desires and Endeavours of the General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* for the Reformation of the Church of *England*, and the Union of both Churches in Religion and Church Government; but also concerning the Resolution of both Houses fully to concur with them in those pious

[a] Lord *Clarendon* observes, That there were only ten Peers present at the passing of this Sentence: And that Sir *Robert Berkeley* was abated one Half of the Fine, and had his Liberty, upon present Payment of the other to the Persons appointed by the Parliament to receive it.—This last Circumstance is confirmed by Mr. *Whitlocke*, as before observed in our Tenth Volume, p. 12.

'pious Intentions. With the ſame Thankfulneſs and 'due Reverence they acknowledge the high Re- 'ſpects expreſſed towards them by both Houſes, in 'directing unto them their Commiſſioners aſſiſted 'by two Reverend Divines; and in deſiring ſome of 'the Godly and Learned of this Church to be ſent 'unto the Aſſembly ſitting there.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 September.

'The Aſſembly doth bleſs the Lord, who hath 'not only inſpired the Houſes of Parliament with 'Deſires and Reſolutions of the Reformation of Re- 'ligion, but hath advanced, by ſeveral Steps and 'Degrees, that bleſſed Work; by which, as they 'ſhall moſt approve themſelves to the Reformed 'Churches and to their Brethren abroad, ſo ſhall 'they moſt powerfully draw down from Heaven the 'Bleſſing of Proſperity and Peace upon *England*. And 'as it is the earneſt Wiſh of their Brethren here, 'that the true State and Ground of the preſent Dif- 'ferences and Controverſies in *England* may be more 'and more cleared concerning Religion; and that 'both Houſes may inceſſantly proſecute that good 'Work firſt and above all other Matters, *giving no 'Sleep nor Slumber to their Eye-lids, untill they find 'out a Place for the Lord, an Habitation for the 'mighty God of* Jacob, whoſe Favour alone can 'make their Mountain ſtrong, and whoſe Preſence, 'in his own Ordinances, ſhall be their Glory in the 'Midſt of them: So it is our Confidence that the 'begun Reformation is of God, and not of Man; 'that it ſhall increaſe, and not decreaſe, thro' his 'Help, to whom nothing is too hard; who can 'make Mountains Valleys, crooked Things ſtreight, 'and rough Ways ſmooth; and ſhall lead along, 'and make perfect, this moſt wonderful Work, 'which ſhall be remembered to his Glory, in the 'Church, throughout all Generations.

'And leſt, through any Defect upon the General 'Aſſembly's Part, the Work of Reformation, which 'hitherto, to the great Grief of all the Godly, hath 'moved ſo ſlowly, ſhould be any more retarded or 'interrrupted, they have, according to the renewed

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'Desires of both Houſes of Parliament, and their 'own former Promiſes, nominated and elected Mr. '*Alexander Henderſon*, Mr. *Robert Douglas*, Mr. '*Samuel Rutherford*, Mr. *Robert Bailey*, and Mr. '*George Gilleſpie*, Miniſters of God's Word; *John* 'Earl of *Caſſels*, *John* Lord *Maitland*, Sir *Archi-* '*bald Johnſton* of *Warriſton*, Ruling Elders, (all 'of them Men much approved here) with Commiſ- 'ſion and Power to them, or any three of them, 'whereof two ſhall be Miniſters, to repair unto the 'Aſſembly of Divines, and others of the Church of '*England*, now ſitting at *Weſtminſter*, to propound, 'conſult, treat, and conclude with them, and with 'any Commiſſioners deputed by the Houſes of Par- 'liament, if it ſhall ſeem good to the Honourable 'Houſes, in their Wiſdom, to depute any for that 'End, in all ſuch Things as may conduce to the ut- 'ter Extirpation of Popery, Prelacy, Hereſy, Schiſm, 'Superſtition, and Idolatry; and for the ſettling of 'the ſo-much-deſired Union of this whole Iſland in 'one Form of Church-Government, one Confeſſion 'of Faith, one Common Catechiſm, and one Direc- 'tory for the Worſhip of God, according to the In- 'ſtructions which they have received, or ſhall re- 'ceive, from the Commiſſioners of the General Aſ- 'ſembly appointed to meet at *Edinburgh*, from Time 'to Time, with the Aſſembly's Power to that End. 'And as the General Aſſembly doth moſt gladly 'and affectionately receive, and fully truſt, the 'Commiſſioners and Divines ſent hither; ſo do they 'hereby commend the aforenamed Commiſſioners 'not only to the like Affection and Truſt of the 'Aſſembly there, but alſo to the Favour and Pro- 'tection of both Houſes of Parliament.

'And for the further Satisfaction and Encourage- 'ment of their Brethren of *England*, the whole Aſ- 'ſembly, in their own Name, and in the Name of 'all the particular Churches in this Kingdom whom 'they repreſent, do hereby declare, That, from 'their Zeal to the Glory of God and Propagation 'of the Goſpel, from their Affection to the Hap-

'pineſs

'pineſs of their Native King and of the Kingdom of *England*, and from the Senſe of their own Intereſt in the common Dangers of Religion, Peace, and Liberty, they are moſt willing and ready to be united and aſſociated with their Brethren in a nearer League and Solemn Covenant, for the Maintenance of the truly Reformed Proteſtant Religion, againſt Popery and Prelacy, and againſt all Popiſh and Prelatical Corruptions in Doctrine, Diſcipline, Worſhip, or Church-Government; and for the ſettling and holding faſt of Unity and Uniformity of Religion, betwixt the Churches of this Iſland and with the beſt Reformed Churches beyond the Sea; which Union and Covenant ſhall, by God's Aſſiſtance, be ſeconded by your co-operating with their Brethren in the Uſe of the beſt and moſt effectual Means that may ſerve for ſo good Ends: For the more ſpeedy effecting whereof, to the Comfort and Enlargement of their diſtreſſed Brethren, whoſe Hope deferred might make their Hearts to faint, the whole Aſſembly, with great Unanimity of Judgment, and Expreſſions of much Affection, have approved, for their Part, ſuch a Draught and Form of a mutual League and Covenant betwixt the Kingdoms, as was the Reſult of the joint Debates and Conſultations of the Commiſſioners from both Houſes of Parliament, aſſiſted by the two Reverend Divines and the Commiſſioners deputed from the Convention of the Eſtates of this Kingdom, and from the General Aſſembly; expecting and wiſhing the like Approbation thereof by the Right Honourable the Lords and Commons in Parliament, and by the Reverend Aſſembly there, that thereafter it may be ſolemnly ſworn and ſubſcribed by both Kingdoms; as the ſureſt and ſtricteſt Obligation to make both ſtand and fall together, in the Cauſe of Religion and Liberty.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'And as the States of this Kingdom have often profeſſed, in their former Declarations, the Integrity of their Intentions againſt the common Ene-

'mies

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'mies of Religion and Liberty in both Kingdoms, 'and their great Affections to their Brethren of '*England*, by reaſon of ſo many and ſo near Re- 'lations; ſo doubtleſs, in this Time of Need, they 'will not fail to give real Proof of what before they 'profeſſed: *A Friend loveth at all Times, and a 'Brother is born for Adverſity.* Neither ſhall the 'Aſſembly, nor their Commiſſioners, be wanting 'in exhorting all others to their Duty, or in con- 'curring, ſo far as belongeth to their Place and 'Vocation, with the States now convened, in any 'lawful and poſſible Courſe which may moſt con- 'duce to the Good of Religion and Reformation, 'the Honour and Happineſs of the King's Majeſty, 'the Deliverance of their Brethren of *England* from 'their preſent calamitous Condition, and to the 'perpetuating a firm and happy Peace betwixt the 'Kingdoms.'

Both Houſes ordered this Anſwer to be ſent to the Aſſembly of Divines at *Weſtminſter*.

An Order againſt plundering the King's Palaces.

Sept. 13. Information being given to the Lords, That ſome Rooms in *Somerſet-Houſe* were broke open, and ſome Goods taken away, an Order was made to protect that and the reſt of the King's Palaces, as *Whitehall*, *St. James's*, *Greenwich-Houſe*, *Richmond-Houſe*, *Hampton-Court*, *Oatlands*, *Theobalds*, *Wimbleton-Houſe*, with all other Houſes whatſoever, of the King's, Queen's, or the Prince's. Theſe were not to be ſearched or meddled with, but in the Preſence of one Lord and two Members of the Houſe of Commons; nor any Thing removed or carried out of them, without ſpecial Order from both Houſes of Parliament.——How widely different is this from an Ordinance of the Commons, after the King's Death, for the Sale and Diſpoſal of the rich Furniture of theſe Palaces, and the Pictures and Statues in them [b]? Theſe laſt would have been, Now, ineſtimable.

Sept.

[b] A Catalogue of theſe, with the Prices they ſold for, (communicated by the late *John Anſtis*, Eſq; Garter King at Arms) will appear in their proper Order of Time.

Sept. 15. Sir *William Waller* having represented to Parliament that he wanted a ſtrong Reinforcement to guard the City, the Commons made an Order for impreſſing 5000 Men, out of ſeveral Counties, for that Purpoſe; in which the very Watermen on the *Thames* were included; alledging, 'That, in Time of common Danger and Neceſſity, the Intereſt of private Perſons ought to give Way to the Public.' To which the Lords agreed.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Another for impreſſing Men to augment the City Guard.

The ſame Day a Letter frrom the Earl of *Eſſex*, and another from Colonel *Maſſey*, relating the Condition of the Army, and of the City of *Glouceſter*, directed to the Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, were read. Neither of theſe Letters are entered in their *Journals*, or in *Ruſhworth*; and only that from the Earl is in thoſe of the Lords, as follows:

SIR,

I Will not trouble you with the Particulars of our March, you ſhall, God willing, hear that more at large hereafter. You may be certified only hereby, that the firſt Time the Enemy appeared before us, was at Aynhoe on the Hill, *with a very great Body of Horſe, which Colonel* Middleton *faced more than the whole Day with but two Regiments, and ſkirmiſhed very often with them. The Enemy faced us afterwards, at* Stow on the Wold, *without engaging themſelves more than by ſmall Skirmiſhes.*

The Earl of *Eſſex*'s Account of his raiſing the Siege of *Glouceſter*.

Upon Tueſday, *in the Evening, the King's Forces, ſeeing us approach, raiſed their Siege from before* Glouceſter, *whither it pleaſed God we came very ſeaſonably; for the Governor had not above two or three Barrels of Powder left; yet had he managed his Buſineſs with ſo much Judgment and Courage, that the Enemy, not knowing of ſuch Want, had but ſmall Hopes of attaining their Deſires. We now ſtay here only for the relieving of* Glouceſter *with Victual*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Victual and other Provisions, of which there is an extraordinary Scarcity.

That which I must press you earnestly with at this Time is, first, *That there be a sudden Provision of eight or ten thousand Pounds to be sent to that Garrison, without which there will be an Impossibility of maintaining it this Winter; the Discontent of the inferior Officers and common Soldiers being very great, for Want of their Pay and Arrear; they, at this Time, justly expecting rather Reward for their good Service, than Want of what is due.*

The second, *That the thousand Foot, which the Parliament is already engaged, by Promise, to send, may speedily march hither; without which they will not be able to fetch any Provisions from the Country; but the Enemy will be Master to the very Gates.*

The third, *That Sir* William Waller *may be speedily sent down into these Parts, which is the only Means to preserve those Friends you have here; for my own Army is in such extreme Necessity for Want of Pay, being now in an Enemy's Country, and at this Time within four or five Miles of the King's Army, where no Provisions can be had but for ready Money; and so little Hopes I have of a Supply from you, that, unless we can presently fight, we must be immediately necessitated to draw into some other Place which may be nearer to Supplies, and have a more free Intercourse with* London.

Your assured Friend,

Tewkesbury, Sept. 10, 1643. ESSEX.

After reading this Letter, and that from Colonel *Massey*, the Commons passed the following Votes:

1. 'That Colonel *Massey* shall have 1000 *l.* bestowed upon him, as a Reward and an Acknowledgement of his Service, whereof 500 *l.* to be paid in present; and that it be recommended especially

cially to the Committee for Advance of Monies, to take Care that the reſt of the 1000 *l.* be paid with all convenient Speed; and that the Lord-General be deſired to prefer him to ſome Place of Honour and Profit. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

2. 'That the Arrears of the Garriſon of *Glouceſter* ſhall be forthwith paid, upon Account made; and that the Money in Mr. *Stephens*'s Hands ſhall be made 4000 *l.* and that the Officers and Soldiers of that Garriſon ſhall have a Month's Pay beſtowed upon them, as a Reward of their Service; and the Committee for Advance of Money are to provide theſe Sums with all Speed.

3. 'That it be referred to the Committee of Safety to take Order for the ſending of the thouſand Men, the Troops of Horſe, the Piſtols and other Proviſions, as deſired by Col. *Maſſey*'s Letter.

4. 'That a public Thankſgiving be held, on the next Lord's Day, in all the Churches of *London* and *Weſtminſter* and the Pariſhes within the Bills of Mortality; and that the Lord Mayor of *London*, and the Juſtices of the Peace for *Weſtminſter*, do give Directions accordingly. A Thankſgiving Day appointed on that Occaſion;

5. 'That a Letter be ſent by both Houſes to the Lord-General, acknowledging the great Service he has done, in the conducting of his Army in the difficult March to the Relief of *Glouceſter*; and to give him Thanks for the ſame; another to Colonel *Maſſey*; and a third to the Mayor and Townſmen of *Glouceſter*, to the ſame Purpoſe; alſo a Reward of 20 *l.* was voted to the Meſſenger of this important News.' And a Vote of Thanks, *&c.* to the Officers, Mayor, and Townſmen.

To all which, the next Day, the Lords gave their Concurrence.

Thus ended the Siege of *Glouceſter*, the moſt unfortunate Step the King could have taken; for, after it, his Affairs went backwards, in every Motion, till they ended in his own Ruin.

Sept. 18. This Day the famous Inſtrument, called *The Solemn League and Covenant*, was debated

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

bated in the Houſe of Lords. It was brought up out of *Scotland* by the Commiſſioners ſent laſt to the General Aſſembly of Divines, at *Weſtminſter*, and preſented to the *Engliſh* Parliament for their Approbation, and was carried through both Houſes with ſmall Oppoſition. The Lords, particularly, ordered a Committee of their Houſe to join with one of the Commons, and conſult with the *Scots* Commiſſioners about the Manner of taking of it in both Kingdoms. The Form of this Teſt runs thus [c]:

The *Scots* Solemn League and Covenant agreed to by the *Engliſh* Parliament.

'WE Noblemen, Barons, Knights, Gentlemen, Citizens, Burgeſſes, Miniſters of the Goſpel, and Commons of all Sorts, in the Kingdoms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, by the Providence of God living under one King, and being of one Reformed Religion, having before our Eyes the Glory of God, and the Advancement of the Kingdom of our Lord and Saviour *Jeſus Chriſt*, the Honour and Happineſs of the King's Majeſty and his Poſterity, and the true public Liberty, Safety, and Peace of the Kingdoms, wherein every one's private Condition is included; and calling to Mind the treacherous and bloody Plots, Conſpiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies of God, againſt the true Religion, and Profeſſors thereof, in all Places, eſpecially in theſe Three Kingdoms, ever ſince the Reformation of Religion, and how much their

[c] From the original Edition, publiſhed by *Edward Husbands*, *September* 22, 1643. In the Title Page it is called *A Solemn League and Covenant, for Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happineſs of the King, and the Peace and Safety of the three Kingdoms of* England, Scotland, *and* Ireland.

After which follow theſe Texts of Scripture, which the Commons ordered to be printed in the Title.

Jer. l. 5. *Come let us join ourſelves to the Lord in a perpetual Covenant that ſhall not be forgotten.*

Prov. xxv. 5. *Take away the Wicked from before the King, and his Throne ſhall be eſtabliſhed in Righteouſneſs.*

2 Chron. xv. 15. *And all* Judah *rejoiced at the Oath, for they had ſworn with all their Heart, and ſought him with their whole Deſire, and he was found of them; and the Lord gave them Reſt round about.*

'their Rage, Power, and Presumption, are of late, An. 19. Car. I.
'and at this Time, increased and exercised; where- 1643.
'of the deplorable Estate of the Church and September.
'Kingdom of *Ireland*, the distressed Estate of the
'Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dan-
'gerous Estate of the Church and Kingdom of
'*Scotland*, are at present public Testimonies; we
'have now at last, (after other Means of Suppli-
'cation, Remonstrance, Protestations, and Suffer-
'ings) for the Preservation of ourselves and our
'Religion from utter Ruin and Destruction, ac-
'cording to the commendable Practice of these
'Kingdoms in former Times, and the Example
'of God's People in other Nations, after mature
'Deliberation, resolved and determined to enter in-
'to a mutual and solemn League and Covenant;
'wherein we all subscribe, and each one of us for
'himself, with our Hands lifted up to the most High
'God, do swear,

1. 'That we shall sincerely, really, and con-
'stantly, through the Grace of God, endeavour,
'in our several Places and Callings, the Preserva-
'tion of the Reformed Religion in the Church of
'*Scotland*, in Doctrine, Worship, Discipline, and
'Government, according to the Word of God,
'and the Example of the best Reformed Churches;
'and we shall endeavour to bring the Churches of
'God, in the Three Kingdoms, to the nearest Con-
'junction and Uniformity in Religion, Confession
'of Faith, Form of Church-Government, Direc-
'tory for Worship and Catechizing; that we, and
'our Posterity after us, may, as Brethren, live in
'Faith and Love, and the Lord may delight to dwell
'in the Midst of us.

2. 'That we shall in like Manner, without
'Respect of Persons, endeavour the Extirpation of
'Popery, Prelacy, (that is, Church-Government by
'Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Com-
'missaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters, Arch-
'deacons, and all other Ecclesiastical Officers, de-
'pending on that Hierarchy) Superstition, Heresy,
'Schism, Profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found

'to

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'to be contrary to ſound Doctrine and the Power of 'Godlineſs; leſt we partake in other Men's Sins, 'and thereby be in Danger to receive of their 'Plagues; and that the Lord may be one, and his 'Name one, in the Three Kingdoms.

3. 'We ſhall, with the ſame Sincerity, Reality, 'and Conſtancy, in our ſeveral Vocations, endea-'vour, with our Eſtates and Lives, mutually to 'preſerve the Rights and Privileges of the Parlia-'ments, and the Liberties of the Kingdoms; and 'to preſerve and defend the King's Majeſty's Perſon 'and Authority, in the Preſervation and Defence 'of the true Religion and Liberties of the King-'doms, that the World may bear Witneſs with our 'Conſciences of our Loyalty, and that we have no 'Thoughts or Intentions to diminiſh his Majeſty's 'juſt Power and Greatneſs.

4. 'We ſhall alſo, with all Faithfulneſs, en-'deavour the Diſcovery of all ſuch as have been, 'or ſhall be, Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil In-'ſtruments, by hindering the Reformation of Re-'ligion, dividing the King from his People, or one 'of the Kingdoms from another, or making any 'Faction or Parties amongſt the People, contrary to 'this League and Covenant, that they may be 'brought to public Trial, and receive condign Pu-'niſhment, as the Degree of their Offences ſhall 'require or deſerve, or the Supreme Judicatories of 'both Kingdoms reſpectively, or others having 'Power from them for that Effect, ſhall Judge con-'venient.

5. 'And whereas the Happineſs of a bleſſed Peace 'between theſe Kingdoms, denied in former Times 'to our Progenitors, is, by the good Providence of 'God, granted unto us, and hath been lately con-'cluded and ſettled by both Parliaments, we ſhall 'each one of us, according to our Places and In-'tereſts, endeavour that they may remain conjoined 'in a firm Peace and Union to all Poſterity; and 'that Juſtice may be done upon the wilful Oppo-'ſers thereof, in Manner expreſſed in the precedent 'Article.

6. 'We

6. 'We ſhall alſo, according to our Places and 'Callings, in this common Cauſe of Religion, Liberty, and Peace of the Kingdoms, aſſiſt and defend all thoſe that enter into this League and Covenant, in the maintaining and purſuing thereof; and ſhall not ſuffer ourſelves, directly or indirectly, by whatſoever Combination, Perſuaſion, or Terror, to be divided and withdrawn from this bleſſed Union and Conjunction, whether to make Defection to the contrary Part, or to give ourſelves to a deteſtable Indifferency or Neutrality in this Cauſe which ſo much concerneth the Glory of God, the Good of the Kingdoms, and Honour of the King; but ſhall, all the Days of our Lives, zealouſly and conſtantly continue therein, againſt all Oppoſition, and promote the ſame, according to our Power, againſt all Lets and Impediments whatſoever; and what we are not able ourſelves to ſuppreſs or overcome we ſhall reveal and make known, that it may be timely prevented or removed: All which we ſhall do as in the Sight of God. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'And becauſe theſe Kingdoms are guilty of many Sins and Provocations againſt God and his Son *Jeſus Chriſt*, as is too manifeſt by our preſent Diſtreſſes and Dangers, the Fruits thereof, we profeſs and declare, before God and the World, our unfeigned Deſire to be humbled for our own Sins, and for the Sins of theſe Kingdoms; eſpecially, that we have not, as we ought, valued the ineſtimable Benefit of the Goſpel; that we have not laboured for the Purity and Power thereof; and that we have not endeavoured to receive *Chriſt* in our Hearts, nor to walk worthy of him in our Lives, which are the Cauſes of other Sins and Tranſgreſſions, ſo much abounding amongſt us; and our true and unfeigned Purpoſe, Deſire, and Endeavour for ourſelves, and all others under our Power and Charge, both in Public and Private, in all Duties we owe to God and Man, to amend our Lives, and each one to go before another in the Example of a real Reformation, that the Lord

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'Lord may turn away his Wrath and heavy Indignation, and eſtabliſh theſe Churches and Kingdoms in Truth and Peace. And this Covenant we make in the Preſence of Almighty God, the Searcher of all Hearts, with a true Intention to perform the ſame, as we ſhall anſwer at that great Day when the Secrets of all Hearts ſhall be diſcloſed; moſt humbly beſeeching the Lord to ſtrengthen us by his Holy Spirit for this End, and to bleſs our Deſires and Proceedings with ſuch Succeſs, as may bring Deliverance and Safety to his People, and Encouragement to the Chriſtian Churches groaning under, or in Danger of, the Yoke of Anti-Chriſtian Tyranny, to join in the ſame, or like Aſſociation and Covenant, to the Glory of God, the Enlargement of the Kingdom of *Jeſus Chriſt*, and the Peace and Tranquillity of all Chriſtian Kingdoms and Commonwealths.'

The Commons deſire the Aſſembly of Divines' Opinion, in Point of Conſcience.

Before this Covenant was wholly agreed to by both Houſes, the Commons having referred it, as a Caſe of Conſcience, to the Aſſembly of Divines at *Weſtminſter* for their Opinion of the Matter; theſe Godly and Learned Miniſters of the Goſpel of Peace appeared before the Houſe, and expreſſed themſelves as follows:

'That they had, after a particular Seeking of God for his ſpecial Direction in this Buſineſs, fully debated and conſidered of it, in all its ſeveral Particulars: That they did approve of the ſaid Covenant, and judged it lawful, in Point of Conſcience, to be taken: That they did humbly adviſe that the following Explications ſhould be ſubjoined to the Covenant, *viz.*

1. 'By the Clauſe in the firſt Article of the Covenant, *According to the Word of God*, they underſtood, *So far as we do, or ſhall, in our Conſciences, conceive the ſame to be according to the Will of God.*

2. '*By Prelacy*, in the ſecond Article, they underſtood, *Church-Government by Archbiſhops, Biſhops, their Chancellors, Commiſſaries, Deans, Deans and Chapters,*

Chapters, Archdeacons and other Ecclesiastical Officers, depending upon the Hierarchy. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'The Prolocutor made a pious Speech after the Delivery of these Opinions; in which he desired that, in the taking of this Covenant, the People might be thoroughly informed of the Grounds, Reasons, and Consequences of it, being a Matter of so vast Importance: Concluding with the Prayers of the Assembly, *That God would be pleased to return in Mercy to his People, and pitch his Tents over, and about, them.*'

Matters being thus settled *in Foro Conscientiæ*, this new Oath went smoothly down: It was first taken by all the Lords and Commons then in Town; all the Officers in their Army were strictly enjoined to do the same; and afterwards it was ordered to be taken throughout the Kingdom.

Sept. 23. This Day a Conference was held between the two Houses, at which the Commons presented to the Lords a Letter of Advice they had received from the Earl of *Essex*'s Secretary, dated from *Reading* the Day before. This Letter was to inform the Parliament of a Battle between the two Armies; but it is not entered in the *Journals*. It was fought on the 20th of *September*, near *Newbury*, in *Berkshire*, and is related at large by *Clarendon*, *Rushworth*, *&c.* Here both Sides again claimed the Victory, as in the first Battle at *Edge-Hill*. The Parliament, particularly, made themselves sure of it, and ordered a Committee of both Houses to send to their Lord-General and the Army forthwith, to let them know what great Value and Esteem the Houses had for his Excellency's Conduct, and the great Service done by them all, with the Blessing of God; to acquaint him also, that they were using all Endeavours to supply the Army, and sending additional Forces, in order to take this Opportunity for the prosecuting and perfecting of the Work. They also sent a Committee into the City, to inform them of this great Victory, and the Advantages that The Battle of *Newbury*,

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

might be hoped for from it: To urge the Citizens to send a Reinforcement of Men, with a Supply of Money and Provisions; and to use all Diligence to hinder any such from being sent to the King's Army: Likewise to order a Day of Thanksgiving within *London* and *Westminster*, and the Liberties thereof, for the great Success of their Lord-General.

For which the Parliament order a Day of Thanksgiving.

The Manner of taking the Covenant by both Houses.

Sept. 25. This Day having been appointed by Parliament for their taking the Solemn League and Covenant, both Houses, with the Assembly of Divines and *Scots* Commissioners, met at St. *Margaret*'s, *Westminster*, for that Purpose. It appears, by the *Commons' Journals*, that an Order was made by them for printing a Narrative of the whole Proceedings and Manner of taking this Covenant, together with the Prayers, Exhortations, and Psalms used upon that Occasion. But as this Piece, published by Authority, never yet fell into our Hands, we shall content ourselves with giving Mr. *Whitlocke*'s and Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of the Ceremonial.

The former tells us [b], 'That Mr. *White*, one of the Assembly, prayed an Hour to prepare them for taking the Covenant: Then Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, made some Observations touching the Covenant, shewing the Warrant of it from Scripture, the Examples of it since the Creation, and the Benefit of it to the Church. Mr. *Henderson*, one of the *Scots* Commissioners, concluded in a Declaration of what the *Scots* had done, and the Good they had received, by such Covenants; and then he shewed the Prevalency of ill Counsels about the King, and the Resolutions of the States of *Scotland* to assist the Parliament of *England*. Next Mr. *Nye*, in the Pulpit, read the Covenant, and all present held up their Hands, in Testimony of their Assent to it. The Divines of the Assembly, and the *Scots* Commissioners, subscribed it; and then Dr. *Gouge*, in the Pulpit, prayed for a Blessing upon it. Afterwards the Members of Parliament, in their respective

[b] *Memorials*, p. 70.

tive Houſes, ſubſcribed their Names in a Parchment Roll, where the Covenant was written.'—Thus far Mr. *Whitlocke*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

Lord *Clarendon*'s Account of this Matter runs thus [c]: 'The Lords and Commons, and their Aſſembly of Divines, met together at the Church, with great Solemnity, to take the Covenant, on the 25th Day of *September*; a double Holiday, by the Earl of *Eſſex*'s Return to *London*, and this religious Exerciſe.

'There two or three of their Divines went up into the Pulpit ſucceſſively, not to preach, but to pray; others, according to their ſeveral Gifts, to make Orations upon the Work of the Day. They were by them told, 'That this Oath was ſuch, 'and, in the Matter and Conſequence of it, of ſuch 'Concernment, as it was truly worthy of them, 'yea of thoſe Kingdoms, yea of all the Kingdoms 'of the World: That it could be no other but the 'Reſult and Anſwer of ſuch Prayers and Tears, of 'ſuch Sincerity and Sufferings, that Three Kingdoms ſhould be thus born, or rather new-born, in 'a Day: That they were entering upon a Work of 'the greateſt Moment and Concernment to themſelves, and to their Poſterities after them, that 'ever was undertaken by any of them, or any of 'their Fore-fathers before them: That it was a 'Duty of the firſt Commandment, and therefore of 'the higheſt and nobleſt Order and Rank of Duties; 'therefore muſt come forth, attended with choiceſt 'Graces, Fear, Humility, and in the greateſt Simplicity and Plainneſs of Spirit, and Reſpect of thoſe 'with whom they covenanted: That it was to advance the Kingdom of *Chriſt* here upon Earth, 'and make *Jeruſalem* once more the Praiſe of the 'whole Earth, notwithſtanding all the Contradictions of Men.'

'As ſoon as this Solemnity was over, Mr. *Henderſon*, one of the Eccleſiaſtical Commiſſioners from *Scotland*, magnified what they had done, and aſſured

[c] Hiſtory, Vol. III. p. 372, 376.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

them 'of great Succeſs after it, by the Experience 'of that Nation, who, from their Union in the firſt 'Covenant, found nothing hard they propoſed to 'themſelves; and told them, that were that Cove-'nant now painted upon the Wall within the Pope's 'Palace, it would doubtleſs put him into *Belſhaz-'zar*'s quaking Condition;' with many ſuch high Expreſſions, as can hardly be conceived without the View of the Records and Regiſtry that is kept of them.

Several Lords then in Town, the Earl of *Northumberland* for one, did not appear at this Ceremony; many Members of the Commons were alſo abſent, and ſent their Excuſes, next Day, for ill Health, or otherwiſe; but took it afterwards [d].

Ordinance for ſequeſtring the Revenue of the whole Royal Family.

Sept. 26. An Ordinance was agreed to by both Houſes for an abſolute Sequeſtration of the King's Revenue, with thoſe of the Queen and Prince of *Wales*, and ſeizing them for the Uſe of the Parliament, to be printed and publiſhed all over the Kingdom.

Sept. 28. The Earl of *Eſſex*, being come up to Town, was complimented by the Speakers of both Houſes on his late Victory; and this Day he preſented to the Lords ſeveral Colours taken, at the late Battle at *Newbury*, from the King's Army; one of which had the Picture of the Houſe of Lords, with two Heads upon each End of it, and this Motto, UT EXTRA SIC INTUS. Another was a Cavalier in Purſuit of a Roundhead; the Word of the Roundhead, QUARTER; the Cavalier's, QUI SEQUITUR VINCIT.

A Ceſſation of Arms with the *Iriſh* Rebels agreed to by the King.

About this Time the Parliament being alarmed with the News of a Ceſſation of Arms with the Rebels in *Ireland*, agreed to by the Council of State in that Kingdom, ſeveral Votes were paſſed, and a Declaration framed againſt it. The whole of this Proceeding, with the Articles of Ceſſation which

[d] Their Names (being in Number 228) are all ſet down in *Ruſhworth*'s *Collections*, p. 480, and in *Huſbands*'s, p. 426.

which were agreed on, may be seen in *Rushworth*; but we shall content ourselves with the Form of the Declaration only, since it seems to sum up all that can be said about this Matter. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

A DECLARATION *of the* LORDS *and* COMMONS, *assembled in Parliament, against the intended* CESSATION, *or* TREATY, *with the* Irish *Rebels.*

'AS it is evident to all the World, that this late horrid Rebellion of the Papists in *Ireland*, did, without any Colour or Pretext of Provocation, professedly and boldly aim at the Destruction of the Protestant Religion, the Rejecting of the Laws of *England*, and the Extirpation of the *British* Inhabitants out of that Kingdom: So it is no less manifest, that this Parliament of *England* (to whom his Majesty hath left the managing of the War against those Rebels) hath taken the Troubles of *Ireland* to Heart, with that Resentment and Compassion as may evidence their Zeal to Religion, their Love to their distressed Countrymen, and Brethren there, in these Times, when the like Jesuitical Practices have cast *England* into woful Distractions and an unnatural War; notwithstanding which the reducing of *Ireland* hath still been a chief Part of the Care of this Parliament: And God hath been pleased to bless our Endeavours with such Success, as that those furious, blood-thirsty Papists have been stopped in the Career of their Cruelty; some Part of the Protestant Blood, which at first was spilt like Water upon the Ground, hath been revenged; their Massacres, Burning, and Famishings, have, by a Divine Retaliation, been repaid into their Bosom; and the Protestant Party hath been erected to that Condition of Strength and Hope, that their Enemies are constrained (distrusting their Forces) to have Recourse to their Craft and Policies; and therefore, by their subtle Agents at Court, and their active Instruments elsewhere, have been endeavouring now, of a long Time, The Parliament's Declaration against it.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'to make our Armies in *Ireland* disaffected to the 'Parliament; what by Occasion of their Wants 'not so readily supplied as their Need required, 'what by amusing them with these unhappy Differences fallen in here between King and People; 'labouring, by these Means, to divide those Forces 'into Factions, to the End the main Work they 'have in Hand might be neglected; which is the 'prosecuting of the War against the Rebels, so 'far brought low in some Parts of *Ireland*, that 'if they can be deprived of the Benefit of this Harvest, they are not likely to see the next Summer.

'Now the Rebels finding, that notwithstanding 'the Distractions here occasioning the Slowness and 'Scarceness of Supplies, yet they themselves are in 'a far worse Condition, being in Want of most 'Things necessary, not only for the maintaining of 'a War, but even of Life; (the Judgment of God 'being remarkable upon them in this, that as their 'bloody and treacherous Religion made them inhumanly cruel in shedding the Protestants' Blood; 'so now the Famine, amongst many of them, hath 'made them unnaturally, and Cannibal-like, eat 'and feed one upon another) therefore, that they 'may have Time to expect from their Friends 'abroad new Supplies both of Victuals and Ammunition, and may, without Molestation, reap the 'Fruit of this Harvest, they have laboured a Treaty 'for a Cessation; which Project of theirs doth no 'less aim at the Overthrow of the Remainder of the 'Protestants in that Kingdom, than their treacherous taking of Arms at first did intend the Destruction of them all; for their Cessation and Hostility, their War and Peace, are alike to be 'esteemed of; and with those, that neither in Peace 'nor War keep any Faith, it is best to be in perpetual Defiance: Therefore the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, according to their 'continued Care of that Kingdom of *Ireland*, do, 'in a special Manner, take into their Consideration 'the Condition thereof, upon this Occasion of an intended

'intended Ceſſation; and ſo much the rather, be- An. 19. Car. I.
'cauſe it is feared that the Proteſtant Forces, thro' 1643.
'Want of Proviſions for their Armies, may at laſt, September.
'if not relieved, be perſuaded to admit of this
'Courſe, in Hope thereby to procure ſome Means
'for their Subſiſting; as alſo becauſe there is too
'much Ground to ſuſpect that, if this Ceſſation
'ſhould be agreed unto, they might have Oppor-
'tunity to join with the Popiſh Party here for their
'greater Strengthening; and though it were to
'have no Influence upon this Kingdom, yet the
'evil Conſequences of it are ſo many and perni-
'cious to *Ireland*, that this Parliament would be-
'tray the Truſt repoſed in them, if they did not
'declare againſt this Ceſſation, and uſe all Means
'in Time to make it prove abortive: And therefore
'they deſire it may be obſerved and taken Notice
'of,

'*Firſt*, From whence the Counſel and Deſign of
'this Ceſſation ariſeth, even from the Rebels and
'Papiſts themſelves for their own Preſervation; for
'ſoon after they had miſſed of their Intent, to make
'themſelves abſolute Maſters of that Kingdom of
'*Ireland* by their treacherous Surprizes; and ſee-
'ing that this Kingdom did, with moſt Chriſtian
'and generous Reſolutions, undertake the Charges
'of the War for the Relief and Recovery of *Ireland*,
'Propoſitions were brought over from the Rebels
'by the Lords *Dillon* and *Taafe*, at which Time
'they were intercepted and reſtrained by Order of
'the Houſe of Commons. After that they had the
'Boldneſs, even while their Hands were ſtill im-
'brued in the Proteſtants' Blood, to petition his
'Majeſty that their Demands might be heard; and,
'for this Purpoſe, they obtained a Commiſſion to
'be ſent over into *Ireland* to divers Perſons of Qua-
'lity (whereof ſome were Papiſts) to hear, receive,
'and tranſmit to his Majeſty their Demands, which
'was done accordingly; and one Mr. *Burke*, a
'notorious pragmatick *Iriſh* Papiſt, was the chief
'Sollicitor in this Buſineſs. After this, the juſt
'revenging God giving daily Succeſs to Handfuls

'of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'of the Proteſtants' Forces againſt their great Numbers; ſo that, by a wonderful Bleſſing from Heaven, they were in moſt Parts put to the worſt; then did they begin to ſet on Foot an Overture for a Ceſſation of Arms; concerning which, what Going and Coming hath been between the Court and the Rebels is very well known; and what Meetings and Treaties have been held about it in *Ireland*, by Warrant of his Majeſty's ample Commiſſion ſent to that Effect; and what Reception and Countenance moſt pragmatick Papiſts negotiating the Buſineſs, have found at Court; and that thoſe of the State in *Dublin*, who had ſo much Religion and Honeſty as to diſſuade the Ceſſation, were firſt diſcountenanced, and at laſt put out of their Places and reſtrained to Priſon, as Sir *William Parſons*, one of the Lords Juſtices there; Sir *John Temple*, Maſter of the Rolls; Sir *Adam Loftus*, Vice-Treaſurer of *Ireland*, and Treaſurer at War; and Sir *Robert Meredith*, one alſo of the Council-Table.

'*Secondly*, The Lords and Commons deſire it may be obſerved, That, during all theſe Paſſages and Negotiations, the Houſes of Parliament were never acquainted by the States of *Ireland* with this Treaty of a Ceſſation, much leſs was their Advice or Counſel demanded; notwithſtanding that the Care and Managing of the War was devolved on them, both by Act of Paliament, and by his Majeſty's Commiſſion under the Great Seal, *To adviſe, order, and diſpoſe of all Things concerning the Government and Defence of that Kingdom.* But the Wants of the Army were often repreſented and complained of; whereby, with much Craft, a Ground was preparing for the Pretext wherewith now they would cover the Counſels of this Ceſſation, as if nothing had drawn it on, but the extreme Wants of their Armies; whereas it is evident, that the Reports of ſuch a Treaty have been, in a great Part, the Cauſe of their Wants; for thereby the Adventurers were diſheartned, Contributions were ſtopped, and by

'the

'the Admittance to Court of the Negotiators of this Ceſſation, their wicked Counſels have had that Influence, as to procure the intercepting of much Proviſions which were ſent for *Ireland*; ſo that Ships going for *Ireland* with Victuals, and others coming from thence with Commodities to exchange for Victuals, have been taken, not only by *Dunkirkers*, having his Majeſty's Warrant, but alſo by *Engliſh* Ships, commanded by Sir *John Pennington*, under his Majeſty. And moreover, the Parliament's Meſſengers, ſent into ſeveral Counties with the Ordinance of *January* laſt for Loans and Contributions, have been taken and impriſoned; their Money taken from them, and not one Penny, either Loan or Contribution, hath been ſuffered to be ſent in for *Ireland*, from thoſe Counties which were under the Power of the King's Army; while in the mean Time the Houſes of Parliament, by their Ordinances, Declarations, and Sollicitations to the City of *London*, and the Counties free from the Terror of the King's Forces, were ſtill procuring no contemptible Aid and Relief for the Diſtreſſes of *Ireland*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'*Thirdly*, As the Lords and Commons have Reaſon to declare againſt this Plot and Deſign of a Ceſſation of Arms, as being treated and carried on without their Advice; ſo alſo becauſe of the great Prejudice which will thereby redound to the Proteſtant Religion, and the Encouragement and Advancement which it will give to the Practice of Popery; when theſe Rebellious Papiſts ſhall, by this Agreement, continue and ſet up, with more Freedom, their Idolatrous Worſhip, their Popiſh Superſtitions, and Romiſh Abominations, in all the Places of their Command; to the Diſhonouring of God, the Grieving of all true Proteſtant Hearts, the Diſpenſing with the Laws of the Crown of *England*, and to the Provoking of the Wrath of a jealous God; as if both Kingdoms had not ſmarted enough already for this Sin of too much conniving at, and tolerating of, Anti-Chriſtian

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'tian Idolatry, under Pretext of civil Contracts and 'politic Agreements.

'*Fourthly*, In the fourth Place, they desire it 'may be observed, that this Cessation will prove 'dishonourable to the public Faith of this King-'dom; it will elude and make null the Acts and 'Ordinances of Parliament, made for the forfeit-'ing of the Rebels' Land; at the passing of which 'Acts, it was represented, that such a Course would 'drive the Rebels to Despair; and it proves so, but 'otherways than was meant; for, despairing of their 'Force and Courage, they go about to overcome 'us with their Craft.

'*Lastly*, What shall become of the many poor 'exiled Protestants, turned out of their Estates by 'this Rebellion, who must now continue begging 'their Bread, while the Rebels shall enjoy their 'Lands and Houses? And who shall secure the 'rest of the Protestants, that either by their own 'Courage, Industry, and great Charges, have kept 'their Possessions, or by the Success of our Armies 'have been restored? Can there be any Assurance 'gotten from a perfidious Enemy, of a Cessation 'from Treachery and Breach of Agreement, when 'they shall see a fit Time and Opportunity? These 'and many other Considerations being well weigh-'ed, it will appear evidently that this Design 'of a Cessation is a deep Plot laid by the Rebels, 'and really invented for their own Safety, and false-'ly pretended to be for the Benefit of our Ar-'mies.

'And whereas the Lords and Commons have 'no certain Information that the Treaty is con-'cluded, but are informed by several Letters that 'all the Protestants, as well Inhabitants as Sol-'diers in that Kingdom, are resolved to withstand 'that Proceeding; and to adventure on the greatest 'Extremities, rather than have any Sort of Peace 'with that Generation, who have so cruelly, in 'Time of Peace, murdered many Thousands of 'our Countrymen, and laboured to extirpate the 'Protestant Religion from amongst them: So they

do

'do believe, that these Rumours of a Cessation were first contrived by the Enemies of our Religion and Peace; and, by their Practices, the Treaty was carried on with much Subtilty and Solliciation; thereby to stop the sending of Supplies from thence to our Armies, and for the cooling of the Affections of those who have already shewed their Zeal to the Weal of *Ireland*. And therefore the only Means to defeat this their Policy, and prevent the Evils intended by it, is to settle a Course whereby the Armies of *Ireland* may be at least fenced against Hunger and Cold: For which Purpose it is desired, That all those who are well-affected to the Protestant Religion, either in that or this Kingdom, and all those who, by their Adventures already made, have embarked their particular Interests with the Public of that Kingdom, and do desire a good Return of their Engagements, would join their Endeavours for obviating of that Necessity, which may be made a strong Argument to inforce a destructive Cessation of Arms; and that they would not, through too much Suspicion and Jealousy of it, forbear the providing of Supplies, and so occasion that Inconvenience which they ought by all Means to prevent; for by so doing they will lose all their former Pains and Charges; and the withholding of Provisions now will gain Credit to that Calumny laid against this Kingdom, of neglecting the Armies of *Ireland*; and, by the continuing of Supplies, these Forces will be encouraged to continue the War, and so crown both their Work and ours. And, lastly, the Rebels seeing Assistance against them still flowing from hence, must needs be out of Hope of prosecuting, or concluding, this their Design. The Cry of much Protestant Blood, the great Indigency of many ruined Families, the Danger of our Religion almost exiled out of that Kingdom, calls for this last Act of Piety, Charity, Justice, and Policy from us; which being resolved on, Letters are to be dispatched to the several Parts of

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'that

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. September.

'that Kingdom, to encourage the Commanders and 'Soldiers upon the aforesaid Reasons and Assurances, 'that they may not hearken to such an unjust and 'deceitful Counsel; and as, by their prosecuting of 'the War, through God's Blessing, they have suc-'cessfully resisted the Rebels' Cruelty; so they may, 'upon this Occasion, beware they be not over-'reached by their Craft.

'All which the Lords and Commons do earnest-'ly desire may be seriously taken to Heart by all 'the Kingdom; and that from those other Encou-'ragements, mentioned at large in the Ordinance 'of the fourteenth of *July* last [a], and such as now 'are offered, a Course may be taken, whereby such 'a constant weekly Contribution may be settled, as 'will supply to the Armies in *Ireland* the meer Ne-'cessities of Nature; which may be more punctual-'ly and seasonably transmitted unto the several Parts 'of that Kingdom, according to their respective 'Wants, that so the Benefit and Honour of so pious 'a Work happily begun, and successfully hitherto 'carried on, may not be lost when so little remains 'to be done; and that the saving of a Kingdom, the 're-establishing of so many Protestant Churches, 'the repossessing of so many Thousand Christians 'into their Estates, may not be deserted and let fall 'to the Ground, for a little more Pains and Cost.'

The rest of this Month was employed, by the Parliament, in soliciting Loans of Money from the City of *London*, for the Payment of their Army. And the *Scots* having sent Word that they were ready to come into *England*, Propositions were ordered to be offered to the City, for the speedy raising of 50,000 *l.* to enable them to begin their March.

October

[a] By this Ordinance (which is at large in *Husbands*'s *Collections*, p. 233) the Adventurers of *Ireland* were intitled to a double Proportion of Lands of what was given by the Act passed for that Purpose, in the Beginning of this Parliament.

October. There is nothing material entered in the *Journals* of either House till the eighth of this Month, when a remarkable Affair came on before the Lords. The *French* King had sent over an Ambassador Extraordinary, in order to compose the Differences between the Parliament and, so near a Relation to him as, the King of *England*. The Houses being informed that this Ambassador came in an amicable Way, or, as the *Journals* express it, with good Affections, ordered a Deputation of Lords and Commons to go down to *Gravesend*, to welcome him on his Arrival, and wait upon him to his Lodgings at *Somerset-House*, which was fitted up for that Purpose.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

An Ambassador comes from *France*, as a Mediator between the King and Parliament.

Soon after this Ambassador's Arrival, Mr. *Walter Montague*, who followed him out of *France*, in his Retinue, was arrested at *Rochester*; and, by the Commons, committed Prisoner to the Tower [b]. A Motion was also made, That the Letters which he had brought over with him, sealed with the Arms of *France*, and directed to both their Majesties of *England*, should be opened: But that passed in the Negative. On the Imprisonment of this Gentleman, the Ambassador addressed the following Memorial to the House of Lords. It was originally in *French*, and was translated on purpose to be read in that House, and entered in their *Journals*; but it is so lamely done there, as scarcely to be made any Sense of; and we are obliged to the *Journals* of the Commons for the Original, of which we have attempted the following Translation [c].

'MY Lord the Prince of *Harcourt*, Peer of *France*, and Master of the Horse to the Most Christian King, Ambassador Extraordinary to

His Remonstrance to the Lords, on account of the arresting Mr. *Montague* in his Retinue.

[b] This Mr. *Montague* and Sir *Kenelm Digby* had been employed, by the Queen, to solicit Contributions, from the *English* Catholics, towards supporting the War against the *Scots* in 1639.——This Affair we took some Notice of in our Ninth Volume, p. 214, and 242.

[c] The Original runs thus in the *Commons' Journals*:

*Monseigneur le Prince d'*Harcourt, *Pair et Grand Escuyer de* France, *Ambassadeur Extraordinaire vers le Roy de la* Grande Bretagne, *ayant*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'to the King of *Great-Britain*, being informed that 'Mr. *Walter Montague* left *Paris* since his Excel-'lency, and came over into *England*, from the 'Queen, disguised amongst the Retinue of Mon-'sieur *De Gressy*, hath been arrested at *Rochester*; 'and tho' he was charged with the Care of her Ma-'jesty's Letters, for their Majesties of *Great-Britain*, 'was committed, nevertheless, Prisoner to the Tower 'of *London:* His Excellency declares to the Houses 'of Parliament, that he knew nothing of his Person, 'nor of his Disguise, neither did Monsieur *De Gressy*; 'but, for the Respect and Consideration of her Ma-'jesty's Letters, which make it appear that the 'said Mr. *Montague* had the Honour to belong to 'her, and she avoweth him, the said Ambassa-'dor demandeth, in the Name of her Majesty, 'and intreats them, in his own, that Mr. *Mon-'tague* may be put into his Hands, with all the 'Letters he was Bearer of, to avoid the Conse-'quences that the just Complaint of such a Deten-'tion may produce.'

After this is entered, what is, in the *Lords' Journals*, called the Sense of that House, on the reading this Paper, *viz.*

'That this *Walter Montague*, being a Rene-gado, and a Man banished the Kingdom, for the Mischief he did here, for him to be demanded of the two Houses of Parliament, in so high a Manner as this, by an Ambassador that pretends he comes

ayant appris que M. de Montague *party de* Paris *depuis luy, pour venir en* Angleterre *de la Part de la Reine, se seroit jetté desguisé dans la Suitte de Monsieur de* Gressy *sans en estre conneu: Qu'a* Rochester *il auroit esté arresté; et bien que trouvé chargé de Lettres de la Reine pour leurs Majestez de la* Grande Bretagne, *il auroit, neantmoins, esté conduict Prisonnier en la Tour de* Londres: *Monseigneur declare à Messieurs du Parlement, qu' il n'a eu aucune Connoissance de sa Personne, ny de son Desguisement, non plus que le dit Sieur de* Gressy; *mais, pour le Respect et Consideration des Lettres de la Reine, qui font voir que le dit Sieur de* Montague *a l'Honneur d'estre à elle, et d'en estre advoué, il demande de la Part de sa Majesté, et les prie de la Sienne, qu' ils luy remettent le dit Sieur de* Montague *entre les Mains, ensemble les Lettres dont il estoit Porteur, à fin d'eviter les Consequences, qui pourroient arriver de la juste Plainte d'une telle Detention.*

comes to endeavour to procure Peace; and giving himself so high a Title, and treating the two Houses of Parliament so low, is a Thing of so extraordinary a Nature, that, though the Houses desire to maintain a good Correspondency with *France*, yet this Kingdom needs not fear any ill Consequence that may follow upon this Business; but hope that God will bless them and protect them, as he hath hitherto done.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

It was also ordered to have a Conference with the Other House, on the Subject of this Paper, and the Lord-General *Essex* to deliver the Sense of this House to the Commons concerning it. The Lord-General hereupon acquainted the Lords, that it was reported the *French* Ambassador, lately come, had brought many Attendants along with him, several of whom were conceived to be Officers and Commanders; and that, if they should go to the King with him, it was likely they would not return. And it being probable that, before the Ambassador goes, he would apply to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct, he desired to know what he should do in this Case. Whereupon the House ordered, That, when the Ambassador sends to his Lordship for a Safe-Conduct for himself and Followers to go to the King, his Lordship shall desire to see a List of all those he intends to take with him.

Oct. 9. At a Conference between the two Houses, it was agreed that the Answer to the *French* Ambassador's Message should be drawn up by a Committee; which being done, it was reported, read, and agreed to, and was in these Words:

'THE Lords and Commons in Parliament have considered of the Message in Writing, delivered to the Earl of *Pembroke*, and by him presented unto them, from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambassador Extraordinary from the *French* King; by which he complains that Mr. *Walter Mon-* The Parliament justify their Conduct therein.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'*Montague*, sent hither, unknown to him, by the 'Queen Regent of *France*, with Letters unto the 'King and Queen; and, under a Disguise, ha-'ving put himself into the Company of Mons. *De* '*Gressy*, had been arrested at *Rochester*, and car-'ried Prisoner to the Tower; and the said Ambas-'sador therein desires, in regard it appears by these 'Letters, that the said Mr. *Montague* belongs un-'to the Queen Regent, that both he and the Let-'ters may be delivered to him: To this they re-'turn for Answer, That they are most sorry they 'must deny him any Part of his Request: That 'the Letters shall be restored, according to his 'Desire; but for Mr. *Montague*, a Person here-'tofore questioned for Disservices to this State; and 'so dangerous, that, in the Beginning of this Par-'liament, they made it their humble Suit unto the 'King, that he might be banished the Court; and 'afterwards being, upon his own Offer and of his 'Friends, permitted to retire himself out of the 'Kingdom; that he should now return, and in 'such a concealed Manner; which, if nothing 'else, were Cause enough for his Apprehension, 'and to render him incapable of the Patronage of 'that great Queen: This is a Crime of so high 'and bold a Nature, as the Houses of Parliament 'cannot pass by, neither in Justice for what is al-'ready done; nor in Prudence, to secure the 'State, for the Time to come, from the Practices 'and Machinations of so turbulent and disaffected 'a Spirit: Nor can it be any just Offence unto 'her Majesty of *France*, whom they highly honour 'and esteem, as a good and glorious Queen; nor 'any Disobligation to the Ambassador the Prince '*D'Harcourt*, whom likewise they desire to treat 'with all Demonstrations of Civility and Respect; 'if, according to the Laws of all Nations, the 'Law of this Kingdom be put in Execution against 'one who is a Native, a Subject, a Delinquent; 'who was in the Nature of a banished Man, and 'returns in a disguised Habit (so disavowing him-'self, not to be avowed by any); a dangerous Per-

'son

'son, that formerly did, and in all Likelihood will again, practiſe againſt the State; and whom they have Cauſe to believe, by the Manner of his Coming, to be now come for that very Purpoſe: These Things conſidered by the Lord Ambaſſador, and by him repreſented to the Queen, will, they doubt not, give her Majeſty ample Satisfaction, and clear and ſatisfy the Proceedings of the Parliament to her princely Wiſdom; which they paſſionately deſire, as in this, ſo in all Things elſe, not out of Fear of any ill Conſequence by the contrary, but as knowing the Juſtice of their Ways muſt needs meet with the Approbation of ſo wiſe a Queen; as it will alſo draw down the Bleſſing of God Almighty, which, alone, carries them above the Conſideration of all earthly Power.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

A Petition from the Univerſity of *Cambridge* was, this Day, preſented to the Houſe of Lords, to this Effect:

To the Right Honourable the LORDS and COMMONS aſſembled in Parliament,

The HUMBLE PETITION of the Univerſity of *Cambridge*

Humbly ſheweth,

Petition from the Univerſity of *Cambridge* againſt being ſequeſtred.

THAT upon the Signification of his Majeſty's Willingneſs graciouſly to accept of what Supplies the Colleges of Cambridge *could make to his preſent Neceſſities, there was ſent to his Majeſty, by ſome of our Body, a Quantity of Plate and Money, out of certain Colleges in this Univerſity; the Intent of thoſe who ſent it being not at all to foment any War, which was not at that Time begun* [a]; *yet ſo it is, that certain Men, upon Pretence of ſome Authority committed to them by both Houſes of Parliament, have begun to ſequeſter the Libraries and*

a Alluding, moſt likely, to Mr. *Cromwell*'s having prevented the Univerſity's Plate, to the Value of 20,000 *l.* from being carried to the King.——In our Eleventh Volume, p. 388.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

and other Goods of some Masters of Colleges, so that there will be no Means of Subsistence left to any of the Members of the said Colleges, though never so innocent.

May it please your Honours, in tender Compassion to the sad Condition of the poor University, to grant unto us a Freedom from this Sequestration; and that the Fact of some few particular Men, which was, also, by them meant only as an Acknowledgment of their Duty to his Majesty, to whom some of them are obliged as to their Royal Founder, and others as his sworn Chaplains, may not redound to the depriving of the Members of the several Colleges of all Possibility to continue in this University.

And your Petitioners shall ever pray, *&c.*

RA. EXON [b], *Vice-Chancellor.*

The Lords ordered that this Petition should be communicated to the House of Commons, at a Conference, that some Course might be taken for their Relief; but we hear no more of it in either House.

A Misunderstanding between the Parliament's two Generals, *Essex* and *Waller*, reconciled.

The Earl of *Essex* and Sir *William Waller*, the two Generals for the Parliament, had long differed in their respective Commands; and it was now run so high, that, this Day, the Earl made it his Request to both Houses, that he might have Leave to resign his Commission, and go beyond the Sea, in regard that the Commission granted to Sir *William Waller* was inconsistent with his own; and in respect to the many Discouragements he had received since his being General. The Lords, conceiving this to be a Business which concerned the present Safety of the whole Kingdom, resolved to have a Conference with the Commons about it; and

[b] Dr. *Ralph Brownrigge*, nominated to the Bishoprick of *Exeter* by the King, upon the Translation of Bishop *Hall* to *Norwich*.—— See Vol. X. p. 146.

and to declare, that the Senſe of this Houſe is, That the Commiſſion to Sir *William Waller* be delivered up, being inconſiſtent with that to the Lord-General from both Houſes; whereby it was voted, That all Commiſſions ſhould be granted by the Lord-General, and be under his Command, being neceſſary for the preſent Affairs and the Safety of the Kingdom. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

The Houſe of Commons was before-hand apprized of this Matter, and, at the ſame Time, ſent a Meſſage to the Lords, to let them know, That Sir *William Waller* had offered to give up his laſt Commiſſion; and that they were of Opinion the beſt Way to diſcover the Conveniency or Inconveniency of it, was, to appoint a Committee to go to the Lord-General, with Power to conſider of, and adviſe with his Excellency what Courſe was fitteſt for ſettling this Buſineſs the moſt for the Safety of the Kingdom. A Committee of both Houſes was immediately appointed to wait upon the Lord-General on this Affair, each Houſe, though late, reſolving to ſit till their Return; after which the Lords received the following Votes from the Commons:

'The Lords and Commons do declare, That, by virtue of their laſt Commiſſion, Sir *William Waller* is under the Command of the Lord-General, and is bound to obey him, notwithſtanding any Thing in his Commiſſion: And Sir *William Waller*, being preſent at this Debate, did declare, That he ever had been, and is, willing and ready to obey his Excellency the Lord-General's Commands. And

'Whereas, by the Words of the laſt Commiſſion to Sir *William Waller*, it is mentioned, That he was to receive his Inſtructions from both Houſes of Parliament, it is this Day ordered, by the Lords and Commons, That Sir *William Waller* ſhall, from Time to Time, receive and obſerve ſuch Inſtructions as the Lord-General ſhall give him.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

The Lords having agreed to these Votes, the Controversy between the two Generals ended, which otherwise might have proved of very ill Consequence to the Parliament's Cause.

Oct. 11. A Report was made to the Lords of a Conference held the Day before, between the two Houses, of a Matter which had lain long dormant, the Lords having absolutely refused to come into it; which was the making a new Great Seal. This Affair will be best explained by the Words of the *Lords' Journals, viz.*

The Commons' farther Reasons for desiring the Lords' Concurrence in making a new Great Seal

'That the House of Commons, divers Months since, presented to their Lordships several Votes concerning the Great Seal, wherein they desired their Lordships' Concurrence: And since, because of the Absence of the Great Seal, which should attend the Parliament, new Mischiefs have sprung up; and what causes a Necessity to have the Great Seal more at this Time than ever, is in respect of the Use which hath been made of the Great Seal, at *Oxford*, against the Parliament and their Proceedings.

1. 'Considering the clandestine Going-away of the Lord-Keeper, who is a sworn Officer, with the Great Seal from the Parliament; and as soon as he came to *Oxford* it was taken from him, and put into another Hand; as appeareth by the Lord-Keeper's own Letter, when Writs were sent to him to be sealed, he returned for Answer, That the Seal was not in his Hands, but Mr. *Porter*'s.

2. 'There hath, by virtue of the Great Seal's being at *Oxford*, Commissions for raising Armies against the Parliament, issued out; Commissions to new Sheriffs, and an extraordinary Power put into their Hands; Commissions of Array; Proclamations to proclaim his Majesty's good Subjects to be Traitors; Commissions of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, to proceed against those that have held with the Parliament; and, one, *instar omnium*, the Commission to one Mr. *Tomkins* and others, for Destruction of the Parliament, City, and Kingdom; also a Proclamation

tion lately come forth, for seizing the Estates of all Parliament-Men, and any that adhere to the Parliament. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

3. 'That the Great Seal is now put into the Hands of Sir *George Ratcliffe*, a Person impeached of High Treason by the Parliament; whereas the Great Seal should be in the Hands of a sworn Officer, and none else.

'Besides these Considerations, the absolute Necessity of preserving the Government of the Kingdom, and of the Ministration of the Justice thereof, enforces the Parliament to provide a new Great Seal to attend the Parliament according to the Law; for there is now a general Stop and Denial of Justice, none being permitted to have the Use of the Great Seal at *Oxford*; whereby the Dissolution of this present Parliament is in great Danger, for new Writs of Election have been denied to supply the House of Commons with Members in the room of those that are void by Defection, Apostacy, and Death; therefore it is absolutely necessary to have a Great Seal to attend the Parliament, for the Preservation and Continuance of it.

'Also the ordinary Proceedings at the Law are obstructed, whereby the Subject should be relieved; as no Writs of Error can be granted for Reversal of erroneous Judgments; nor original Writs of Assize, which are *festina Remedia*; Writs to supply Churches within six Months, which admits no Delay; no Fines or Recoveries; Writs of *Habeas Corpus*, or Dower, Judges, Commissions; and many other Writs as are for the speedy Relief and Benefit of the Subject, cannot be had, by reason the Great Seal is at *Oxford*.

'All these considered, the House of Commons desire their Lordships' Concurrence in the Votes for making of a new Great Seal to attend the Parliament, for the Dispatch of the Business of the Kingdom.

The Lords taking into serious Consideration the Necessity of preserving the Government of this

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October. Kingdom, his Majesty's Authority in Parliament, and the Being thereof, and the Preservation of the Administration of the Justice of this Kingdom; and perceiving, by these Mischiefs, how absolutely necessary it is to have the Great Seal attending the Parliament, for the Reasons aforesaid, after a mature Debate, this Question was put, Whether a Great Seal of *England* shall be forthwith made to attend the Parliament for Dispatch of the Affairs of the Parliament and the Kingdom? it passed affirmatively. And accordingly

The Lords give their Consent thereto. The next Day the Lords sent a Message to the Commons, to acquaint them with their Concurrence in the Vote for making a new Great Seal of *England*.

We took Notice, in the Proceedings of *July* last, that the Lords having refused their Consent to the Vote of the Commons for making a new Great Seal, the latter gave Orders for making one; the Form of which was a Representation of the House of Commons, the Members sitting, on one Side; and the Arms of *England* and *Ireland* on the other. But the Lords having now given their Consent, another Great Seal was ordered to be made in the very same Form and Manner as the King's.

Oct. 16. A Letter from the Earl of *Manchester*, another of the Parliament's Generals, was read in the House of Lords, which contained an Account of a Victory he had obtained against the King's Forces in *Lincolnshire*, the Circumstances of which were as follow:

My Lords,

Letter from the Earl of *Manchester*, at *Horncastle*. *I Hold it my Duty to give your Lordships an Account of the Advantage that God hath been pleased to give unto those Forces, whereof you have been pleased to honour me with the Command. Upon* Wednesday *last, being the* 12*th of* October, *I drew up the whole Body of Horse and Foot before the Castle of* Bolingbroke; *having had, the Night be-*

before, thro' some Neglect of the Yorkshire *Horse who kept the Out-Guards, some of our Horse put to run great Hazard; yet they behaved themselves very well, and got off with the Loss of only one Colour. After I was drawn into a Body, Word was brought unto me that the Enemy was advancing towards me with eighty Troops of Horse: Upon this Intelligence, I thought it my Duty not to quit the Place where I was, unless it was by marching to meet them, which I did; and when my Horse were drawn into as good Order as we could put them, and the Enemy was drawn very near to them, the Foot and Artillery marched up as fast as they could after the Horse, but came not so near as to give any Help; only they did dishearten the Enemy much, by the Confession of the Prisoners which we took, and made them charge the Horse sooner and more confusedly than otherwise they would have done.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

I must give the Horse under my Command their due Praise, that they charged very gallantly. Col. Cromwell *charged in the Van with my Regiment and his own, and behaved himself with Resolution and Honour; Sir* Thomas Fairfax *(who is a Person that exceeds any Expressions as a Commendation of his Resolution and Valour) was to second the first Body of Horse that charged, and he performed what he was commanded with Readiness and Success. I may truly say, that after the second Charge, our Men had little else to do but to pursue a flying Enemy; which they did for many Miles. What Loss truly the Enemy had punctually, I cannot yet speak; only this I can say, divers Men of Quality lay dead upon the Place, and divers that rode away fell dead from off their Horses in the Town some Miles off from the Place where we fought; I have sent 800 Prisoners to* Boston. *There were killed upon the Place about 300 as near as we can guess; and every Day the Horse-Guards are bringing in Prisoners, whom they find scattered about the Country.*

I am now intending to march forwards towards Gainsbrough, *and shall do my best to make a Diversion*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

version for the Relief of Hull, *if I can in respect of the Time of the Year.*

I shall now beseech your Lordships, that the Glory and the Honour of this Defeat may be ascribed unto God; for truly it is only due unto him.

My Lords, I should have been abler to have done Service, if the Number of Foot and Horse out of the several Counties had been made good unto me; but I shall not neglect my Duty, and shall beg this Favour from your Lordships, that you would esteem me worthy of your good Opinion, as

Your Lordships

Horncastle, October 12, 1643.

Most humble Servant,

MANCHESTER.

P. S. *I cannot hear there were killed on our Side above twenty, and hurt about sixty.*

The Manner of presenting the Lord Mayor Elect of *London* to the House of Lords.

After the reading of this Letter, a new Lord Mayor of *London* was presented to the House of Lords for their Approbation. As this was the second Time any such Ceremony had been performed there, it will not be improper to give the whole of it from their *Journal*; observing, at the same Time, that it shews what a perfect Harmony and good Understanding there was between the Parliament and City of *London*.

Sir *John Woolaston*, Knight, Lord Mayor Elect of the City of *London*, was presented to this House by the Recorder of *London*, and most of the Aldermen and Sheriffs of the said City; and the Recorder made a Speech to this House, shewing, That, according to their Charter and Custom of the said City, the Lord Mayor Elect was presented to be approved by the Lord Keeper, in Right of his Majesty; but, in the Absence of the Lord-Keeper, they humbly desire that their Lordships would please to give their Approbation of him, and order that he may be sworn at the accu-

accuſtomed Day by ſome of the Barons of the Exche- An. 19. Car. I.
quer, they alſo made Expreſſion of the Faithfulneſs 1643.
and Readineſs of the City to protect the Parliament October.
with their Lives and Fortunes.

Hereupon the Houſe commanded their Speaker to declare,

'The Lords do conceive, that, in the Abſence of his Majeſty, his Great Council of Peers is the moſt proper Power for the City of *London* and your Lordſhip to addreſs yourſelves unto, for an Approbation of that Choice the City hath made of you for their Lord Mayor; whoſe Duty and Loyalty to the King and Kingdom hath well appeared already concerning the ſaid City; and my Lords are very well pleaſed that the City of *London* hath made Choice of your Lordſhip to govern the ſaid City, eſpecially in theſe Times of Trouble and Danger; recommending, in his Majeſty's Abſence, unto you, that your Care may be great to prevent all Tumults and Diſorders that may grow in the ſaid City, and to ſuppreſs all Factions that may appear there to their Diſquiet, or the Danger of this Kingdom.

'And it is alſo ordered by the Lords in Parliament, upon the preſenting the Lord Mayor Elect of *London*, this Day, to the Houſe, That the Barons of the Exchequer that are, or ſhall be, in or near *London*, ſhall be perſonally preſent on the thirtieth of this inſtant *October*, in the Exchequer-Court, although the Term ſhould be then adjourned; and then adminiſter unto the ſaid Lord Mayor Elect the uſual Oath that hath formerly been adminiſtered to his Predeceſſors, the Lord Mayors of the ſaid City of *London*.

'And becauſe of the Expreſſions of the Recorder [d], of the great Affection of the City to this Houſe, their Lordſhips thought fit to appoint a Committee to draw up a ſpecial Return of Thanks for the ſame; and the Houſe appointed the Earl of *Sarum*, Lord Viſcount *Say* and *Sele*, and

[d] *John Glynne*, Eſq; ſo appointed by Parliament on the Removal of Sir *Thomas Gardiner* for his Adherence to the King.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October. and the Lord *Wharton*, to draw up the ſame, who reported the Draught thereof to this Houſe, which was approved of; and the Lord Mayor Elect, Mr. Recorder, and the Aldermen and Sheriffs were called in, and the Speaker ſignified unto them,

'That my Lords have thought fit to call you 'in again to let you know, that they cannot but, 'with many Thanks, take Notice of the Expreſ- 'ſions of Mr. Recorder, in the Name of the whole 'City, of the Readineſs thereof to live no longer, 'than with a Deſire to live to declare their Affec- 'tions to this Houſe and the Parliament; which 'their Lordſhips make no Doubt of, they having 'obſerved ſo many real Expreſſions, in theſe dan- 'gerous Times, of their Faithfulneſs and Aſſiſt- 'ance for the Safety of the Parliament and the 'Kingdom, that they ſuit fully with their Expreſ- 'ſion now to this Houſe; and have been ſuch and ſo 'eminent, as no Time or Story can parallel: And 'as the Lords do acknowledge this with much Con- 'tentment, ſo they do again aſſure you that their 'Sitting here and conſtant Care ſhall be, as to en- 'deavour and procure the Safety of Religion, the 'Parliament, and Kingdom in general; ſo, in par- 'ticular and in eſpecial Manner, the Safety, Pro- 'ſperity, Honour, and Advancement of your ſo well- 'deſerving and renowned City.'

The *Scots* Army, being now ready to enter this Kingdom, only ſtaid for the ſtipulated Sums, which had been agreed upon at *Edinburgh*, ſome Time before, by Commiſſioners on both Sides appointed for that Purpoſe. To this End the Commons ſent up an Ordinance this Day, to the Lords, which they had framed, to haſten their March; which was readily agreed to by the latter. The Title thereof runs thus: *An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament aſſembled, for the Repayment of all ſuch Sums of Money as are, or ſhall be, lent by any Perſon or Perſons, for the ſpeedy bring-*

ing

ing of our Brethren of Scotland *into this Realm, for our Aſſiſtance in this preſent War.* The Whole of it is too long and tedious to be recited: But the Preamble, declaring the Reaſons of Parliament for ſo extraordinary a Step, is too remarkable to be omitted. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

An Ordinance for raiſing of Money for bringing the *Scots* Army into *England*,

'THE the Lords and Commons aſſembled in 'Parliament, taking into their ſerious Con- 'ſideration the treacherous and bloody Plots, Con- 'ſpiracies, Attempts, and Practices of the Enemies 'of God againſt the true Religion and Profeſſors 'thereof in all Places, eſpecially in the Kingdoms 'of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, ever ſince 'the Reformation of Religion; and how much 'their Rage, Power, and Preſumption are of late, 'and at this Time, increaſed and exerciſed, where- 'of the deplorable Eſtate of the Church and King- 'dom of *Ireland*, the diſtempered Eſtate of this 'Church and Kingdom of *England*, and the dan- 'gerous Eſtate of the Church and Kingdom of '*Scotland*, are preſent and public Teſtimonies; 'and finding that their Supplications, Remonſtran- 'ces, Proteſtations, and Treaties, have nothing 'at all prevailed; but that the adverſe Party doth 'ſtill endeavour the Deſtruction of our Religion, 'Laws, and Liberties, by Force and open Vio- 'lence; and finding that the ſaid Popiſh and Jeſuit- 'ed Councils and Practices, which have brought 'the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland* into 'the lamentable Condition under which they now 'groan, to have, in the Intentions of the Authors 'and Contrivers of them, extended likewiſe into the 'Kingdom of *Scotland:* In this common Diſtrac- 'tion and Danger of all the Three Kingdoms, as an 'effectual Means of their Preſervation, they have 'thought it neceſſary that all the Well-affected to 'the true Proteſtant Religion and juſt Liberties of 'the Subjects in the Three Kingdoms, ſhould en- 'ter into a nearer Union and Aſſociation for the 'mutual Defence of each other; and, in purſuance 'thereof, a Solemn League and Covenant, for

'Re-

An. 19 Car. I. 1643. October.

‘ Reformation and Defence of Religion, the Honour and Happineſs of the King, and the Peace ‘ and Safety of the Three Kingdoms, hath been ‘ agreed upon by the two Kingdoms of *England* ‘ and *Scotland*; which hath been already taken ‘ and ſubſcribed by the Members of both Houſes ‘ of the Parliament of *England*, the Members of ‘ the Aſſembly of Divines, and the Commiſſioners ‘ of the Aſſembly of the Church of *Scotland*; is ‘ now taking in the Cities of *London* and *Weſtmin-* ‘*ſter*; and is to be taken in all other Parts of this ‘ Kingdom, in the Kingdom of *Scotland*, and in the ‘ Realm of *Ireland*:

‘ And whereas each Perſon that hath taken, or ‘ ſhall take, the ſaid Covenant, is bound, accord- ‘ ing to his Place and Calling, in this common ‘ Cauſe of Religion, Liberty, and Peace of the ‘ Kingdoms, to aſſiſt and defend all thoſe that enter ‘ into the ſame, in the executing and purſuing there- ‘ of:

‘ And that it cannot be expected that the Con- ‘ trivers and Authors of our preſent Troubles will, ‘ thereby, be any whit moved to deſiſt from their ‘ wicked Enterprizes, but rather that their Malice ‘ will be the more increaſed; therefore, for the ‘ better reſiſting thereof, and the ſpeedier ſettling of ‘ a bleſſed Peace, there are likewiſe certain Articles ‘ agreed upon by the two Houſes of Parliament ‘ and the Kingdom of *Scotland*, whereby, amongſt ‘ other Things, our Brethren of the Kingdom of ‘ *Scotland*, for our Aſſiſtance in this preſent War, ‘ are ſpeedily to ſend an Army of 21,000 Horſe and ‘ Foot, and a Train of Artillery ſuitable, into this ‘ Kingdom:

‘ And whereas the Charge of levying, arming, ‘ and bringing thoſe Forces together furniſhed, as ‘ likewiſe the fitting the Train of Artillery, will ‘ neceſſarily require great Sums of Money, which ‘ our Brethren of *Scotland*, by reaſon of the many ‘ Charges that have lain upon them of late by their ‘ *Iriſh* Army and late Wars, are not able, at the ‘ preſent, to raiſe within that Kingdom; and ſo

‘ much

'much the rather, by reaſon that the Brotherly- An. 19. Car. I.
'Aſſiſtance Money is not yet paid unto them, we 1643.
'are, by theſe Articles, preſently to pay unto them October.
'the Sum of 100,000 *l.* by way of Advance, to-
'wards the Monthly Payments to be made to their
'Army, after ſuch Time as they ſhall make their
'firſt Entrance into this Kingdom; and by theſe
'Articles our Brethren of *Scotland*, to manifeſt their
'Willingneſs, to their utmoſt Ability, to be help-
'ful to the Kingdom in this common Cauſe, have
'agreed to give the Public Faith of the Kingdom
'of *Scotland*, to be jointly made Uſe of with the
'Public Faith of the Kingdom of *England*, for the
'preſent taking up of 200,000 *l. Sterling*, in the
'Kingdom of *England* or elſewhere, for ſpeedy Pay-
'ment of the 100,000 *l. Sterling* as aforeſaid, and
'towards ſatisfying, in good Proportion, the Ar-
'rears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*:

'Be it ordained, *&c.*

Some Time after this, the *Scots* finding that the Money from *England* did not come ſo ſoon as was expected, they ſent a Remonſtrance over, alledging, 'That they ſaw plainly, by the Ceſ-
'ſation of Arms in *Ireland*, that the Proteſtant Re-
'ligion was to be routed out there, and the whole
'Force of the Rebels turned againſt the *Scots* Ar-
'my in that Kingdom; which made the *Scots*
'take the Covenant unanimouſly; and they were
'reſolved, their Eyes being now opened, to join
'with their Brethren of *England* in Defence and
'Preſervation of Religion againſt the common Ene-
'my.

'That they had named all their Officers and liſt-
'ed all their Soldiers; their Artillery and Ammu-
'nition was at *Leith*, and they were making Pro-
'viſions of Victual, as far as they were able. But
'they confeſſed, nay they ſaid they were not aſha-
'med to confeſs, their Want of Money; therefore
'they deſired to have a ſpeedy Supply, whereby
'they might be able to keep their Army together
'when it was in a Body. And whenever they

'ſhould

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

'should have proper Notice, from Parliament, of 'the Agreements, they would be ready to march 'to their Rendezvous in forty-eight Hours Time. 'Lastly, they desired that the Towns, stipulated 'for, might be taken into Consideration.'

Who publish a Proclamation, in the King's Name, for recruiting their Army.

It is necessary to be remembered in this Place, That, about the Middle of *August*, the Estates of *Scotland* had published a [c] Proclamation in the King's Name, requiring all Persons, from sixteen to sixty, to appear in Arms, in Support and Defence of the Solemn League and Covenant. This the King was so highly incensed at, that, on the 16th of *September*, he wrote a Letter to the Council, setting forth, 'That he had, with great Amazement, seen a Pa-'per, most impudently published without his Pri-'vity or Authority, tending to cast the beloved 'People of his Native Kingdom into the like bloody 'Combustions and rebellious Violation of their Re-'ligion and Allegiance, as those already in *England*: 'Forbidding all Obedience to the said Proclama-'tion, and all other Papers published in his Name, 'which should not immediately be warranted by 'himself: And commanding this his Letter to be 'published, and also recorded in the Books of the 'Privy Council there.'——What Regard was paid to this will appear under the Proceedings of the next Month.

Proceedings against Baron *Trevor*, in the Case of Ship-Money.

October 18. Sir *Thomas Trevor*, Knight, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, who had been concerned in the Business of Ship-Money, and impeached by the House of Commons for the same, delivered in his Answer, this Day, to the Charge: Likewise a Petition to the Lords, acknowledging, That his Opinion and Judgment, in that Case, was given according to his Conscience, without any Corruption or sinister End whatsoever; which he then conceived to be, also, according to Law: But since the Parliament had declared it to be contrary to the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, he acknowledged

[c] This Proclamation at large, and the King's Letter, are in *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 482.

ledged his Error of Judgment therein, and is moſt heartily ſorry for the ſame; humbly ſubmitting it, and whatſoever elſe he is charged withall by the ſaid Impeachment, to their Lordſhips' Judgment and favourable Conſideration. It was ordered that this ſhould be communicated to the Houſe of Commons, and to acquaint them, that the Lords would give Judgment againſt Baron *Trevor* the next Morning. Accordingly, An. 19. Car. I. 1643. October.

Oct. 19. The Lords being in their Robes, and the Commons, with their Speaker, come up, and demanding Judgment as uſual, the Speaker of the Houſe of Lords pronounced the following Sentence:

I. *That the ſaid Sir* Thomas Trevor *ſhall be fined in the Sum of* 6000 l. *to be forthwith paid and diſpoſed of for the Service of the Kingdom* [b]. His Sentence.

II. *That he ſhall be impriſoned in the Tower of* London *during the Pleaſure of this Houſe.*

But, upon another Petition from the Baron, he was releaſed from his Impriſonment the next Day, and continued to act in his Place.

The Judges being thus humbled, the Commons revived their Proſecution of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, with ſo much Vigour as, afterwards, to bring him to the Block.——Preparatory to this,

Oct. 23. The Lords read the Articles of Impeachment, for High Treaſon, againſt him, which had been ſent up by the Commons two Days before; and ordered that the Archbiſhop ſhould have a Copy of the Articles ſent him, and a proper Time aſſigned him to put in his Anſwer. Abp. *Laud's* Trial.

Nothing more occurs, worth our Notice, in *October.*

The Month of *November* begins with a Recital of the ſeveral Articles, to be agreed on between the Parliament of *England* and the Convention of the Eſtates

[b] This corrects a Miſtake of Lord *Clarendon*, who makes Sir *Thomas Trevor*'s Fine the ſame as Sir *Robert Berkeley*'s.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Estates of *Scotland*; which upon reading *seriatim*, in the House of Lords, were severally agreed to: Particularly, to pay the *Scots* 100,000 *l.* as soon as it could be raised, either upon their own Credit, or on the Credit of both Kingdoms. But we shall postpone these Articles till they come to be fully concluded; and, in the Interim, present the Reader with a Copy of some additional Instructions, sent at the same Time, along with the said Articles, to the Parliament's Commissioners at *Edinburgh* [a], which are not taken Notice of in the Collections of these Times.

Additional Instructions to the Parliament's Commissioners in *Scotland*.

I. 'YOU shall make known to our Brethren of *Scotland*, That the Propositions expressed in the Paper of the 25th of *August* last, sent from *Scotland*, concerning the Assistance desired by both Houses from that Kingdom, as also the Proposition concerning the settling a Garrison in *Berwick*, have been taken into Consideration by the two Houses; and have been, by them, agreed and consented unto, without any material or considerable Alterations.

II. 'You are therefore authorized and required, according to these Votes of the two Houses, herewith sent you, to agree and conclude, in the Name of both Houses, the said Propositions, and to perfect the respective Treaties in that Behalf, with all Expedition; and thereupon to hasten, all that possibly may be, the Assistance expected from that Kingdom; and to suffer no further Time to be lost in that Behalf, considering what Money for the present can be raised is now sent away to them; and no Diligence shall be wanting to procure and convey to them what remains, according to the Treaty, so far as our present Straits and Extremities will possibly permit.

III.

[a] In these additional Instructions the following Persons were appointed Commissioners, besides those named in the first Instructions, (p. 340 in this Volume) *viz. Robert Goodwyn*, *Richard Barwis*, *Bryan Stapylton*, and *Robert Fenwick*, Esqrs. *John Kendrick*, Alderman, and Mr. *Francis Allen*.

III. 'And whereas, by the ſaid Treaties, ſeveral 'Things are to be performed and done by the joint 'Advice of both Kingdoms, or their Commiſſioners 'thereunto authorized, which cannot be ſo well 'tranſacted but by thoſe that ſhall be upon the 'Place; you have therefore hereby full Power and 'Authority given you to come into this Kingdom 'with the *Scots* Army, and to adviſe, debate, and 'conclude with our Brethren of *Scotland*, or ſuch as 'ſhall be authorized by them thereunto; and, by 'joint Advice with them, to put in Execution all 'ſuch Matters and Things concerning the Well-'ordering, Directing, Diſpoſal, and Accommoda-'tion of the Forces brought in and employed by 'them for our Aſſiſtance, as ſhall be found requiſite 'and needful, from Time to Time, for the Proſe-'cution of this Cauſe, and the Ends expreſſed in the 'Covenant, now ſolemnly ſworn and entered into 'in both Nations, and in the Propoſitions now ſent 'unto you; and you are to acquaint the two Houſes 'with your Proceedings and Concluſions in the ſame, 'from Time to Time, and to receive and obſerve 'ſuch further Directions from them as they ſhall 'think fit. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

IV. 'You ſhall alſo take Care, and are hereby 'fully authorized, to ſequeſter, in the Counties of '*Nottingham*, *York*, Biſhoprick of *Durham*, *Nor-'thumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Weſtmoreland*, and 'in the Town and County of *Newcaſtle* upon *Tyne*, 'in the City and County of the City of *York*, in the 'Town and County of the Town of *Nottingham*, 'in the Town and County of the Town of *Kingſton* 'upon *Hull*, and in the Town and Port of *Berwick*, 'the Eſtates of ſuch Perſons as, by any Ordinance 'or Ordinances of Parliament, are, or have been, 'declared to be ſequeſtrable, or ſhall hereafter be ſo 'declared; and to proceed therein as in your Di-'rections you ſhall find to be moſt advantageous to 'the Public Service, to the Intent that the Profits 'ariſing thereupon may be employed for and to-'ward the Payment of the ſaid Forces, and of ſuch

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'Forces of this Kingdom as are, or ſhall be, raiſed 'and employed by the two Houſes of Parliament 'in the ſaid Counties, Cities, and Towns; and 'otherwiſe for the defraying of ſuch Charges as 'ſhall grow due for and by reaſon of their Aſſiſt-'ance of us in this War: And you ſhall have 'Power to make Allowance to ſuch Perſons as ſhall 'be neceſſarily employed in the Execution of the 'Premiſes, as ſhall be meet; and ſhall, from Time 'to Time, give in an Account, in Writing, of your 'Proceedings in this Buſineſs to both Houſes: And 'all Lord-Lieutenants, Deputy-Lieutenants, and 'other Officers and Miniſters whatſoever, are here-'by enjoined and required to be aiding and aſſiſting 'to you herein, as in all Things elſe that ſhall 'concern the Good of this Service and the public 'Intereſts of both Kingdoms, expreſſed in the Co-'venant.

V. 'And foraſmuch as the two Houſes do hold 'it of abſolute Neceſſity, that Commiſſioners from 'the Kingdom of *Scotland* ſhould be forthwith ſent 'to reſide in *London*, or elſewhere near the Par-'liament, with ſufficient Power and Authority to 'treat and conclude of all ſuch Things as ſhall be 'neceſſary for the Good of the Three Kingdoms, 'in purſuance of the Covenant and of the late 'Treaty; with a further Power to ſend ſome of 'themſelves, or any others by joint Conſent of 'this Kingdom, to any the Parts beyond the Seas, 'for the procuring of Monies, or the Engagement 'of other States in the Common Cauſe; you 'ſhall therefore, with all Earneſtneſs, preſs this 'Article, as that without which the whole Buſineſs 'is like to become very dilatory, if not wholly 'fruitleſs.

VI. 'You are likewiſe to adviſe with our Bre-'thren of *Scotland*, of the Ways and Means where-'by the Public Faith of that Kingdom may be en-'gaged and made beneficial for the raiſing and diſ-'charging of the 200,000*l.* to be advanced accord-'ing to the Treaty.

VII.

VII. 'You are likewise to make known to our 'Brethren of *Scotland* the Votes of both Houses 'concerning the Cessation of *Ireland*, lately con- 'cluded by Pretence of his Majesty's Authority; 'and that it is the Resolution of both Houses to 'oppose to the utmost, as long as God shall en- 'able them thereunto, the said Cessation; and to 'encourage, as far as lies in their Power, all those 'Forces, as well *Scots* as other *British* there, for 'the utter subduing of the Rebels, and Prevention 'of their setting up Popery in that Kingdom; and 'to this End they will speedily take Care to make 'Provision of Victuals, Cloaths, and other Ne- 'cessaries, for the Subsistence of those Forces which 'they will send over, with all Speed, into that King- 'dom. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

VIII. 'You are also to consider, with our Bre- 'thren of *Scotland*, of the fittest and best Ways 'and Means for the ordering of the *Scots* and other '*British* Forces in *Ireland*, at the easiest Expence 'and Charge to both Kingdoms, and in such 'Manner as may best prosecute that War, and 'the Ends expressed in the Covenant; and to draw 'up the same in Propositions to be presented speedi- 'ly to the Consideration of both Houses. And, 'in the mean Season, you are authorized to settle 'upon some Course with our Brethren of *Scotland*, 'by the joint Advice of the Commissioners of 'both Kingdoms, to manage that War and to 'prevent the present Evils; and speedily to make 'known to both Houses what you shall do here- 'in.

IX. 'You are also, for the Encouragement of 'the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*, to let our Brethren 'know, that we will hasten away, with all Speed, 'the 60,000*l.* promised, the 10,000 Suits of Cloaths, 'and such other Necessaries as we shall be able 'to provide: And you are to treat and consider, 'with our Brethren of *Scotland*, of the Ways that 'lie in the Power of the two Houses, to give 'them Satisfaction for the Remainder of the Arrears

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

owing to the said Army, it being impossible, for the present, to pay them in Money.

X. 'You are to cause the Account of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*, for Pay of the Officers and Soldiers, to be made up according to the Establishment of the *English* Army there, from the Time of each Regiment and Company's first Landing and Muster by Mr. *Kennedy*, untill the Day of Mr. *Clayton*'s Muster in *September*, 1642, and from thence according to Mr. *Clayton*'s Muster-Rolls, especially such as were taken this last Year; which Account is to be delivered to the Auditors for the Wars in *Ireland* to ingross, and to present the same to the Commons' House of Parliament; and, for this End, the Clerk of the said House and the Auditor are to deliver you Certificates, under their Hands, of the Particulars of the said Establishment; and if any Doubts shall arise thereupon, you are hereby authorized, according to Right and Equity, to endeavour the Removal of the same, that the Account may have a final Determination.'

The Earl of *Holland*, who had joined the King at *Oxford*, comes back to the Parliament.

November 6. An Account was brought to the House of Lords, that the Earl of *Holland* *, who had been with the King some Time, was taken by a Party of the Parliament's Forces: Hereupon he was ordered to be committed to the Custody of the Black Rod; but, upon Examination, it being found that his Lordship had left the King, and was returning to Parliament, he was set at Liberty. However, this Earl had a narrow Escape in the House of Commons; for a Motion for sending him to the Tower passed in the Negative, by only 59 against 58; as did another for his being made Prisoner elsewhere, by 59 against 56.—— Mr. *Whitlocke* writes, That when his Lordship was examined he said, 'That when he heard of the Cessation in *Ireland*, his Conscience would not give him Leave to stay any longer with them at *Oxford*.'—But Lord *Clarendon* imputes the Earl's 'Re-

* *Henry Rich.*

Return to the Parliament to the cold Reception he found at *Oxford*, 'Where he expected, upon his first Appearance, to have had his Key restored to him; to have been in the same Condition he was in the Bed-Chamber, and in the Council, and in the King's Grace and Countenance; for he thought nothing of former Miscarriages ought to be remembered; that all those were cancelled by the Merit of coming to the King now, and bringing such considerable Persons with him, and disposing others to follow [a].

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

November 10. The Commons had framed an Ordinance relating to their new Great Seal, which the Lords were not over hasty to agree to; at last, on repeated Messages from the Commons about it, the Lords passed it this Day, with some few Alterations; to which the Commons having agreed, the same was ordered to be printed and published as follows:

An Ordinance for making a new Great Seal.

'WHereas the Great Seal of *England*, which, by the Laws of this Realm, ought to attend the Parliament, being the Supreme Court of Justice and Judicature within this Realm, for the Dispatch of the great and weighty Affairs of the Commonwealth, which is especially interested and concerned therein, was, above a Year last past, (that is to say, the 22d Day of *May*, 1642) by the then Lord-Keeper thereof, *Edward* Lord *Littleton*, then a Member and Speaker of the House of Peers in Parliament, contrary to the great Trust in him reposed, and Duty of his Place, secretly and perfidiously conveyed away from the Parliament into the King's Army, raised against the Parliament; the said Lord-Keeper, departing therewith into the said Army, without the Leave or Privity of the said House; by Means whereof great Mischiefs and Inconveniences have ensued to this Kingdom, and the Kingdom of *Ireland*:

[a] The Earls of *Bedford*, *Clare*, &c. of whom more hereafter.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'And whereas the ſaid Great Seal ought conſtantly to remain in the Hands and Cuſtody of one 'or more Officer or Officers, ſworn for that Service, and to be uſed and employed for the Weal 'and Safety of his Majeſty's People; which, notwithſtanding, hath been divers Times, ſince the 'conveying away thereof as aforeſaid, put into 'the Hands of other Perſons not ſworn, and popiſhly and dangerouſly affected, who have had 'the diſpoſing and managing thereof at their own 'Wills and Pleaſures; and hath been traiterouſly 'and perniciouſly abuſed, to the Ruin and Deſtruction of the Parliament and Kingdom, by granting and iſſuing out divers illegal Commiſſions of 'Array, and other unlawful Commiſſions for raiſing of Forces againſt the Parliament; by iſſuing 'out moſt foul and ſcandalous Papers, under the 'Name and Title of Proclamations, againſt both 'Houſes of Parliament, and divers Members thereof, and others adhering to them, and proclaiming them Traitors and Rebels; Commiſſions of '*Oyer* and *Terminer*, to proceed againſt divers of 'them as Traitors, and other Commiſſions to ſeize 'and confiſcate their Eſtates, for no other Cauſe, 'but for doing their Duties and Services to the 'Commonwealth; as likewiſe by granting that 'horrid Commiſſion, for executing of that moſt 'bloody and deteſtable Deſign of *Waller* and *Tompkins*, and others, for the Deſtruction of the Parliament and City of *London*, and of the Army 'raiſed for their juſt Defence; and (as if Maſſacres and Aſſaſſinations had been but light and 'venial Crimes) another Commiſſion hath been 'granted, under the ſame Seal, for a Ceſſation of 'Arms with the barbarous and bloody Rebels in '*Ireland*, after the Effuſion of ſo much innocent 'Blood, and Slaughter of above 100,000 Proteſtants, Men, Women, and Children, by their 'mercileſs and bloody Hands; whereby a Ceſſation of Arms is accordingly concluded, and thoſe 'brutiſh Rebels thereby emboldened to prepare 'them-

'themſelves, not only for a total Extirpation of the Proteſtants remaining there, but for a Conqueſt alſo of this Kingdom: And further, by granting of ſeveral Commiſſions, and Offices of Truſt and Command, to notorious Papiſts; who, by the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, are made uncapable thereof; and by conferring of Honours and Dignities, and granting of Lands and Eſtates to divers exorbitant Delinquents, who ſtand legally impeached of High Treaſon and other High Crimes and Miſdemeanors in Parliament:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'All which, and many other unlawful and enormous Acts, have paſſed under the ſaid Great Seal, ſince the Removal thereof from the Parliament as aforeſaid: Which the Lords and Commons taking into their Conſideration, and finding all Ways and Means obſtructed for the procuring of any Redreſs from his Majeſty in the Premiſes, notwithſtanding their long Hopes and inceſſant Labours for the obtaining thereof, are bound, in Duty and of Neceſſity, to provide ſome ſpeedy Remedy for theſe inſupportable Miſchiefs:

'Be it therefore declared and ordained by the ſaid Lords and Commons aſſembled in Parliament, That as well all and every the ſaid Acts formerly mentioned, which have paſſed under the ſaid Great Seal, as alſo all Letters Patent and Grants of any Lands, Goods, or Eſtates, of any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, for adhering to the Parliament; all Compoſitions or Grants of any Wardſhips, or Leaſes of any Wards, Lands, Liveries, *Primier Seiſins & Ouſter les Maines*, ſince the ſaid 22d Day of *May*, 1642, which have not, according to the due Courſe of Law, paſſed through the Court of Wards and Liveries, eſtabliſhed by Law: All Grants ſince the ſaid 22d of *May*, 1642, of any Honours, Dignities, Manors, Lands, Hereditaments, or other Thing whatſoever, to any Per-

'ſon

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'ſon or Perſons, which have voluntarily contri-
'buted, or ſhall voluntarily contribute, any Aid
'or Aſſiſtance to the Maintenance of the unnatu-
'ral War raiſed againſt the Parliament; and all
'Pardons granted to any ſuch Perſon or Perſons;
'and all other Acts or Things whatſoever, con-
'trary to, or in Derogation of, the Proceedings
'of both or either Houſe of Parliament, which
'have paſſed under the ſaid Great Seal, ſince the
'Removal thereof from the Parliament, ſhall be,
'and are hereby declared to be, utterly Invalid,
'Void, and of none Effect, to all Intents and Pur-
'poſes.

'And that all and every Act or Thing, which,
'after the Publication of this Ordinance, ſhall
'paſs by, or under, the ſaid Great Seal, or
'under any Great Seal of *England*, (other than
'what is hereby appointed and eſtabliſhed) ſhall
'be utterly Void, Fruſtrate, and of none Effect;
'and every Perſon or Perſons, which ſhall put the
'ſame in Uſe, or ſhall claim any Thing thereby,
'ſhall be held and adjudged a public Enemy of this
'State.

'And be it further ordained by the ſaid Lords and
'Commons, That a Great Seal of *England*, al-
'ready by them made and provided, ſhall be forth-
'with put in Uſe; and ſhall be, and is hereby
'authorized and eſtabliſhed to be, of like Force,
'Power, and Validity, to all Intents and Purpoſes
'as any Great Seal of *England* hath been, or ought
'to be.

'And that it ſhall be put into the Hands and
'Cuſtody of the Perſons hereafter named, who are
'hereby ordained Commiſſioners for that Purpoſe;
'that is to ſay, *John* Earl of *Rutland*, and *Oli-
'ver* Earl of *Bolingbroke*, Members of the Houſe
'of Peers; *Oliver St. John*, Eſq; his Maje-
'ſty's Sollicitor-General [o], *John Wilde*, Serjeant
'at

[o] The Parliament continued to give Mr. *St. John* the Title of Sollicitor-General, though his Majeſty had long before revoked his Patent, and conferred that Office on Sir *Thomas Gardner*, who had been put out of his Place of Recorder of *London* by the Parliament on Account of his taking Part with the King.

'at Law, *Samuel Brown* and *Edmund Prideaux*, Esqrs. Members of the House of Commons; which said Persons, or any three or more of them, whereof one Member or more of the Lords' House, also one Member or more of the House of Commons, shall be present, shall have, and are hereby authorized to have, the Keeping, Ordering, and Disposing thereof; as also all such and the like Power and Authority, as any Lord-Chancellor, or Lord-Keeper, or Commissioner of the Great Seal, for the Time being, hath had, used, or ought to have.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Mr. *Whitlocke* informs us, 'That the Earl of *Rutland*, appointed one of the Commissioners by the foregoing Ordinance, desired to be excused, as not understanding the Law, nor the Oath to be taken: Whereupon the Earl of *Kent* (whom Lord *Clarendon* stiles a Man of far meaner Parts) readily accepted the Place.'

A few Days after the new Great Seal was carried up by the Speaker of the House of Commons, the whole House attending him, and delivered to the Speaker of the Lords' House; who, in the Presence of both Houses, delivered it to the Commissioners; and they all took an Oath to execute the Office of Keepers of the Great Seal of *England*, in all Things according to the Orders and Directions of both Houses of Parliament; the Speaker of the Peers swearing the two Lords, and Mr. *Brown*, Clerk to the Parliament, the four Commoners. It was then carried to Mr. *Brown*'s House, in the *Old Palace*, and put into a Chest, with three different Locks; not to be opened but when three of the Commissioners were present.

Nov. 11. A Memorial was presented to the House of Lords, from the Ambassador of *France*, and read: It was in *French*, and the Purport of it was to make Proposals, in general, for an Accommodation between the King and Parliament, in 'the

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

the Name of the *French* King. The Lords having communicated this Memorial to the Commons, after a Day or two's Conſideration, returned this Anſwer:

The Parliament's Anſwer to the *French* Ambaſſador's Propoſal for an Accommodation.

'The Lords having received from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, Ambaſſador Extraordinary in *England*, by the Earl of *Northumberland*, a Paper *in hæc Verba*, *&c.* and having communicated it to the Commons, both Houſes, upon Conſideration thereof, do think fit that this Anſwer ſhall be returned thereunto: That the Lords and Commons, aſſembled in the Parliament of *England*, will always, with due Reſpects, acknowledge ſuch good Affection, as from the King his Maſter and the Queen his Miſtreſs ſhall be, at any Time, expreſſed to the King and theſe Kingdoms: Profeſſing that they deſire nothing more than ſuch a Peace, as may as well procure Honour and Happineſs to the King, as the Preſervation of the true Reformed Religion, the Privileges of Parliament, and the Liberty of the Subjects, in his Majeſty's Three Kingdoms, according to their late Solemn League and Covenant. And when the Prince *D'Harcourt* ſhall, from and in the Name of the King his Maſter, propoſe any Thing to the Lords and Commons, aſſembled in the Parliament of *England*, they will thereupon do that which ſhall be fit, and which ſhall juſtify their Proceedings to all the World; and that they had been forced to take up Arms for their own juſt and neceſſary Defence.'

The Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* pleads, Not guilty.

Nov. 13. The Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* was brought to the Bar of the Houſe of Lords, and required, by them, to give in his Anſwer to the Impeachment of the Houſe of Commons againſt him. Which Anſwer was very ſhort; for it only ſays, 'That all Exceptions to the ſaid Articles of 'Impeachment to this Defendant ſaved, he ſaith, 'He is not guilty of all or any the Matters charged 'by the ſaid Impeachment, in ſuch Manner and 'Form

'Form as are, by the said Articles, charged against 'him.' The Archbishop then made a Speech, and was remanded to the Tower. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nov. 20. An Ordinance, very necessary at this Time, was agreed to by both Houses, concerning the Preservation of Records, *&c.* the Preamble to which was as follows:

An Ordinance for the Preservation of Records, Manuscripts, *&c.*

'Whereas by the several Ordinances of Sequestration, *&c.* there have been, within the Cities 'of *London* and *Westminster*, sequestred and taken 'by Distress, amongst other Goods, divers Manuscripts, or written Books, Proceedings of Courts, 'Evidences of Lands, Rentals, Account Books, 'and other Kind of Writings and written Papers 'and Parchments; as also some whole Libraries, 'and choice Collections of printed Books of several Arts and Faculties; the Dispersing of which, 'by Sale and otherwise, may be much more disadvantageous and prejudicial to the Public, both for 'the present and for Posterity, and also to divers 'particular Persons well-affected to the Parliament, 'than the Benefit of their Sale can anywise recompense:

'Therefore the Lords and Commons do ordain, '*&c.* [d].

An Affair happened, this Day also, in the House of Commons, which fully shews the Miseries the whole Kingdom was driven to, when the Capital of it had so large a Share. This will be best expressed by an Abstract out of the *Journals* of the Commons themselves, and needs no other Introduction.

A Remonstrance from the City of *London*, of their great Wants and Necessities.

'The House being informed that divers of the Committee of the Militia of *London* were at the Door, and desired to propound something to the House, they were called in: And Mr. Speaker, by Com-

[d] About this Time the Parliament appointed *William Lenthall*, Esq; Speaker of the House of Commons, to be Master of the Rolls, and *John Selden*, Esq; Keeper of the Records in the Tower. *Whitlocke*, p. 73.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Command of the Houſe, acquainted them that they had Liberty to ſpeak: Whereupon Alderman *Gibbs* ſpoke as follows:

'That they are of the Militia of *London*, and 'are ſent by them to make known to this Houſe, 'that the City of *London* is, at this Time, under 'two great Wants, and deſire Leave to expreſs 'them.

1. 'They are in great Want of Money, and de- 'ſire you ſhould know the Cauſes of it.

'It is not unknown that we have advanced great 'Sums, at ſeveral Times, being thereto ſollicited 'by ſeveral Members of this Houſe, both for this 'Kingdom and the Kingdom of *Ireland*; and have 'received ſeveral Securities for Repayment of them; 'as the Royal Subſidy, the Twentieth Part, the 'Weekly Aſſeſſments, and other Engagements; but, 'of all theſe, nor of any one of theſe, have we re- 'ceived any Benefit.

'We humbly recommend unto you the Re- 'medy, That the Members of this Honourable 'Houſe may be encouraged to make uſe of their 'Intereſts, in their ſeveral Counties, for the col- 'lecting and bringing up thoſe Monies, that we 'may be the better able to do you Service: The 'Want of it doth admit of great Inconvenience, for 'where the King's Party break in, they get the 'Money; and the State, in the mean Time, pays 'Uſe for it; and we are diſenabled for the Want 'of it.

'Another Occaſion of our great Wants is, thoſe 'many Diſburſements, at ſeveral Times, for our 'ſeveral Services, that we have made; and the 'many Proviſions we have iſſued for Arms, Am- 'munition, and Victuals, upon extreme Exigents, 'for my Lord-General's Army: We have like- 'wiſe iſſued out great Engagements to our Army 'that went twice into *Kent* and *Glouceſter*, and 'done thoſe great Services: We have iſſued out 'great Sums of Money, to raiſe Forces under Sir 'William *Waller*, when he was broken all to Pieces; 'and ſome to thoſe Forces now abroad.

'When

'When our Accounts are settled, we shall then crave Leave to tender them unto you; whereupon, we hope, we shall receive Satisfaction; for, since we bear the Charge of the Kingdom, we should be repaid out of the Kingdom. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'Our Forces, now abroad, want Money; two Regiments of Horse, consisting of 14 Troops, and three Regiments of Foot, under the Command of my Lord-General, have been abroad above a Month; besides three Regiments with Sir *William Waller*: Ten thousand Pounds for those with my Lord-General; and four or five thousand to those with Sir *William Waller*. They are Citizens, civilly bread, and cannot make use of those Means for their Supply, as other common Soldiers do that are used to the War; and now are brought to those Necessities that they must come home. We have used our utmost Endeavour to supply them; but, at present, we cannot help them. We have addressed ourselves to my Lord General, hoping to have had some of the Monies that was going to my Lord-General, for the Payment of our Forces. My Lord-General declared he was not able to spare it, unless it be the three thousand Pounds allotted him for the recruiting his Army; and what ill Consequence this may produce, I am sorry to mention.

2. 'You are not ignorant that, for these many Months past, my Lord-General hath wanted Recruiting; and so weak, that he hath not been able to do the Service of the Kingdom, or restrain the Enemy from enlarging his Quarters. Consider, our City Forces were raised for the Guard of the City, and are Tradesmen, and when they are abroad their Plow lieth still at home; and, besides, they lose their Employment; and you cannot be ignorant that, if the Course be continued, it will be a great Wasting of Men.

'For preventing whereof this Remedy is offered, That my Lord-General's Army be speedily

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'dily recruited; and that the City of *London* may 'be conſidered of as a Place that hath much ad- 'vanced, and is drawn dry: Our rich Men are 'gone, becauſe the City is the Place of Taxes and 'Burdens: Trade is decayed, and our Shops ſhut 'up in a great Meaſure: Our Poor do much in- 'creaſe: We deſire you, for future Taxes, that 'they may bear but their Proportion, and not be 'over-burdened. I ſhould be loath to be miſun- 'derſtood, that any that hear me ſhould think we 'begin to be diſcouraged in the Service of the 'Parliament: Though our Difficulties be great, 'nay, if far greater, we ſhall no ways alter our 'Reſolutions; but, according to our Covenant, do 'our Endeavours. We are not able, neither are 'we willing, to bear thoſe Reproaches caſt upon us, 'who do alledge that we are a turbulent and fac- 'tious People, and ſeditious; all for War, and will 'admit of no Peace on any Terms. Theſe are bit- 'ter Aſperſions out of black Mouths and bitter 'Pens. We are not willing to anticipate, but 'wait upon the Great Council, ſo we are not 'willing to bear ſuch Aſperſions; for it is Peace 'we pray for and fight for; but ſuch a Peace as is 'for the Glory of God, and Safety of Religion: 'And this we deſire to live to ſee, and to die ra- 'ther than to outlive it; and do wait your Time 'to take ſuch Opportunity, in theſe Things, as may 'ſtand with your great Occaſions; and, till then, 'we remain your humble Servants. This one Word 'more we deſire to leave with you, To ſupply 'us with Monies as may lead us out of theſe Dif- 'ficulties.'

'The Aldermen and Citizens were again called in, and Mr. Speaker, by the Command of the Houſe, acquainted them, 'That the Houſe had conſidered of what they had propounded unto them, and found it to be full of Weight, and to deſerve a ſadder and further Conſideration, than to give a ſudden and particular Anſwer unto: They had and would diſtribute it into ſuch Way of Pro- ceedings, as might give them the ſpeedieſt and cleareſt

cleareſt Satisfaction. The Houſe hath likewiſe taken Notice, how, upon all Occaſions, they have expreſſed their Affections to the Public; and how, at this Time, they have aſſured them of their conſtant Reſolution to continue in the Defence of Religion, Liberty, and Privileges of Parliament. He is commanded to return them, and by them the whole Committee of the Militia and City, hearty Thanks for their true Love and Zeal to the Public; and to aſſure them, that neither in the Deſires that they have now propounded, nor in any Thing elſe that may advance the Public Security, ſhall they want the Encouragement and Aſſiſtance of this Houſe.'

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Nov. 25. Amongſt ſome other Papers of leſs Note, ſent from *Scotland*, were read, in the Houſe of Lords, Copies of two Letters from the King to the Council of State in that Kingdom: The Purport of the former, which was occaſioned by a Proclamation they had iſſued, in the King's Name, requiring all Perſons from ſixteen to ſixty to appear in Arms in Defence of the Solemn League and Covenant, we have already given. The other, which may be called his Majeſty's laſt Effort to ſtop the advancing of the *Scots* Army farther into *England*, with the Council's Anſwer to it, are too intereſting to bear any Abridgement; and we therefore give them as they ſtand in the *Lords' Journals*. And, firſt, the King's Letter, dated from *Oxford* the 26th of *September*, 1643.

CHARLES *R.*

Right Truſty and Well-beloved Couſins and Counſellors, &c. we greet you well,

The King's Letter to the *Scots* Council of State, againſt marching their Army into *England*.

'NO Induſtry could hitherto ſo far have prevailed with us to gain any Belief that our *Scots* Subjects would countenance, much leſs aſſiſt, this bloody Rebellion in *England*; yet we know not how to underſtand the levying of Forces, both Horſe and Foot, within our native Kingdom, and the entering of our Town of *Berwick* in an

'hoſtile

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'hostile Manner. You are particularly trusted 'by us and our Parliament (and solemnly sworn) 'to be faithful in the Discharge of your Trust 'of seeing the Articles of the late Treaty observed, 'which here are most grosly violated; therefore 'we require you, as you will be answerable to 'God, to us, and to our Parliament, to take a 'speedy and present Order for recalling and suppressing these Forces.

'Our most malicious Enemies must bear us 'Witness how religiously we have observed these 'Articles on our Part; whereof if we had not 'been more tender than the Advisers of this Breach 'have been of the Public Faith, it is obvious to any 'how easily we could have secured that Town from 'all Rebels.

'We have likewise thought fit to take Notice of 'the present Preparation in that our Kingdom, of 'raising an Army, by a new Authority, to come into 'our Kingdom of *England*, under a Pretence of securing themselves from the Invasions of a Popish 'and Prelatical Army, falsely alledged to be upon 'the Borders; such Forces as we have there being 'only for protecting of our distressed Subjects of '*Berwick* and the *Holy-Island* from the Invasion of 'the Rebels by their Ships, and for no other End: 'Such then as shelter themselves under that Pretext 'will find, from these, but a slender Warrant before God, who knows the Integrity of our Heart; 'and how inviolably we intend to preserve all that 'we have granted unto that Kingdom, so long as 'they shall suffer themselves to be capable of our 'Protection and those Favours.

'Therefore we do require you not only to oppose 'and suppress all such unwarrantable Levies; but, 'by your public Declarations, to disabuse those Rebels in *England*, who endeavour to engage you 'in their Rebellions, and accept Assistance from 'you.

'In all which we look for your ready Obedience; 'and, expecting a present Account thereof, we bid 'you heartily farewell.'

Next

Next was read a Copy of the Privy Council of *Scotland*'s Anſwer to the King at *Oxford*, dated at *Edinburgh* the 19th of *October*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

Moſt Sacred Sovereign,

'WE received your Majeſty's two Letters of the 16th and 26th of *September* laſt; and as we ſhall ever be ready, by our Example, and Authority which your Majeſty and Parliament hath committed to us, to render and procure ſubmiſs and ready Obedience to all your Majeſty's juſt Commands; ſo we cannot, out of the Senſe of our Duty and Truſt put upon us, but expreſs our unfeigned Grief and Sorrow, that any ſhould preſume to give ſuch ſiniſter Informations and hard Impreſſions to your Majeſty, of the General Aſſembly of the Kirk of God and three Eſtates of this Kingdom; to brand their Proceedings with ſo heavy Imputations, as the Violation of their Religion, Allegiance to your Majeſty, and Laws of this Kingdom; and procuring ſuch Commandments as cannot, without Violation of all theſe, be obtempered. The entering into a mutual League and Covenant was reſolved upon by the General Aſſembly and Convention of Eſtates, after a mature Deliberation, as a chief Means for Preſervation of Religion, your Majeſty's Honour and Happineſs, and the Peace and Safety of your Kingdoms; and being embraced, as it now is in *England*, was thought fit to be enjoined to be taken by all your Majeſty's Subjects; and is accordingly, before the Receipt of your Majeſty's Letters, ordained, by the Commiſſioners of the General Aſſembly and Committee of Eſtates, to be, with all religious Solemnities, ſworn and ſubſcribed by all your Majeſty's Subjects of this Kingdom; as your Majeſty may perceive by the ſeveral Acts prefixed to the Covenant, which we have herewith ſent to your Majeſty. Their Anſwer.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. November.

'And since the General Assembly and Convention of Estates have thought fit and ordained this 'Covenant to be entered into, and that all who do 'take the same do solemnly swear, That they have 'no other End before their Eyes, but the Glory of 'God, the Preservation of Religion, your Majesty's Honour, and the true public Liberties and 'Peace of these Kingdoms; it is our earnest Prayer, 'and would be our exceeding great Joy, that your 'Majesty, as Defender of the Faith, and Monarch 'of the Three Kingdoms, would, to the Rejoicing 'of the People of God, and Terror to all the Enemies of Religion, and of your Majesty's Greatness 'and Happiness, join your Royal Consent and Authority, and be the chief Maintainer and Promoter 'of this Covenant.

'The Proclamation of the 18th of *August*, by 'the Convention of Estates, wants not the Warrant of your Majesty's Royal Authority; for the 'whole Proclamations and Citations given out by 'any of your Majesty's Judicatories of this Kingdom, are, and ever have been, by the Laws and 'inviolable Practice thereof, emitted in your Majesty's Name; and if all the Proclamations, not 'immediately warranted by your Majesty's Self, 'shall be disobeyed, there can be no Obedience 'given here to your Majesty's Laws, which is the 'surest Rule of Obedience.

'And as the Estates of this your Majesty's Kingdom, during the Time of the late Convention, 'from the Apprehension of imminent Dangers to 'Religion, your Majesty's Person, and Peace of 'this Kingdom, thought then fit to put this Kingdom into a Posture of Defence, so doth the late 'Cessation in *Ireland*; whereby the Popish Rebels (who are termed, in the said Cessation, your 'Majesty's Catholic Subjects, and who have massacred many Thousand Protestant Subjects there) 'are authorized to provide themselves with all Sorts 'of Arms and Ammunition, not only in your Majesty's Kingdoms, but also in all other King-

'doms

'Kingdoms and States with whom your Majesty is in League; and to prosecute all your Majesty's Protestant Subjects who shall not embrace the Cessation offered, which is another just Ground to all your Majesty's Protestant Subjects, to join the more speedily and heartily in this mutual League and Covenant, for the Defence of the Protestant Religion, your Majesty's Honour, and for their own Safety: And as, by the Duty of our Place, we are obliged to this Freedom; so we are confident that your Majesty, in your Royal Wisdom, will, according to the Loyalty and Sincerity of our Intentions, favourably construct that we cannot record nor publish these your Majesty's Letters; as that which would but grieve the Hearts of your good Subjects, and prove most disadvantageous to your Majesty's Service; which we shall ever study to advance, with that Affection and Fidelity which becometh us.' An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Nothing else material occurring in this Month, we proceed to *December*.

The Assembly of Divines, sitting at *Westminster*, had made many Orders of Synod, which they presented to both Houses for their Approbation. These are, in some Measure, foreign to our Purpose, and too tedious to bear Recital: But, as a Specimen of the Purity of their Intentions, and their earnest Endeavours towards reforming both the Religion and Morals of a wicked Age, take the following Extract from the *Lords' Journals*.

Dec. 1. The House was informed that some Divines were ready at the Door, to offer something to this House, from the Assembly; hereupon the Lords ordered they should be called in, and Dr. *Burgesse*, Mr. *Calamy*, Mr. *Obadiah Sedgewick*, and Mr. *Chambers*, presented to the House a Petition, which was read as followeth:

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

To the Right Honourable the LORDS assembled in Parliament,

The humble MESSAGE and PETITION of the Assembly of Divines.

Petition from the Assembly of Divines, to appoint Godly Magistrates, &c.

THE Assembly of Divines, in all Humility and Discharge of their Duty to God and to this Honourable House, do inform your Lordships of the sad Complaints brought unto them from many Godly and Reverend Divines in and about London, *concerning the daily Increase and Growth of all Manner of outrageous and intolerable Abominations; such as Drunkenness, Swearing, Uncleanness, and other crying Sins, in very many Places in this Kingdom, for Want of Godly and Zealous Magistrates to repress the same; which cannot but highly provoke the Lord to more Wrath against this Kingdom, in this Day of his Wrath already broken out upon his People, and render fruitless all your pious Endeavours for the Reformation and Weal of this Kingdom, unless it be effectually and speedily cured.*

The Assembly, therefore, most humbly prayeth, That, according to your great Wisdom and Zeal for the Public, there may be a speedy appointing and settling of some Able, Godly, Prudent Magistrates, that may reside in all Places of the Kingdom where your Wisdom shall find it necessary, to give a speedy Stop to those high Provocations of Almighty God, and the most dangerous Supplanters of all our Hopes of Good from the Parliament or the Assembly.

Moreover, the Assembly having received a Paper, in the Behalf of some Godly and Hopeful Students of the University of Oxford, *with Request to recommend it to the Honourable Houses of Parliament; the Assembly, in all humble ways, presenteth the same to this Most Honourable House, conceiving it worthy of your noble Thoughts and Favour, yet not presuming to interpose their Sense; and albeit they apprehend it to be a Business of extraordinary Consequence, for which much might be said, they lay all at your Lordships' Feet.*

Lastly,

Lastly, *The Assembly having divers weighty Busi-* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.
ness imposed on them by one or both the Honourable Houses of Parliament, which do occasion extraordinary Labour to the Scribes, and lay upon them more Work than they are able to dispatch; the Assembly prayeth, That the Honourable Houses of Parliament would be pleased to add Mr. John Wallis, *a Judicious and Godly young Man, to be an Amanuensis and Assistant to the Scribes in the Assembly in this public Service.*

All which the Assembly most humbly submitteth to the Wisdom and Prudence of your Lordships, incessantly importuning the Throne of Grace to pour down richly and daily the choicest of his Graces upon your Honours, and to follow all your noble Endeavours with a Blessing to the King's Majesty, the Church, Kingdom, and yourselves,

HENRY ROBOROUGH, } Scribes.
ADONIRAM BYFIELD, }

December 4. The Parliament had been greatly embarrassed with the Prince *D'Harcourt*, ever since his coming over in Quality of a Mediator on the Part of the *French* King: And the House of Commons insisting on some Credentials being presented to either House, before they treated with him, the Matter was suspended for some Time. The Lords indeed seemed willing to relax this new-assumed Piece of Sovereignty, and only desired the Ambassador to sign any Memorial or Proposal to them with his Name. This occasioned a Conference between the two Houses, when a Committee was proposed, by the Lords, to sit and find out an Expedient how the *French* Ambassador might make his Addresses to Parliament by subscribing his Name: But it was objected to by the Commons, and for these Reasons:

A Conference concerning the Manner of treating with the *French* Ambassador.

1*st*, 'Because the House of Commons do conceive the two Houses cannot, as yet, take Notice of any Thing that hath proceeded from the Prince *D'Harcourt*, as a Person qualified from the *French* King

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December. to treat with the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*; or that he can give Assurance that the *French* King will be obliged unto what he shall propound unto the two Houses: And, untill such Time, the House of Commons do not think it agreeable to the Honour of the Houses, or safe for the Proceedings of Parliament, to appoint any Committee to consider of the Manner or Way of receiving what shall be propounded by the Prince *D'Harcourt*.

'The *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisinon*, lately sent from the *French* King to the Privy Council of *Scotland*, did first deliver in his Letters of Credence, before he presented that which he had to propound from the *French* King his Master.

2*dly*, 'If the Prince *D'Harcourt* have any Thing to propound from the *French* King to the Lords and Commons assembled in the Parliament of *England*, the House of Commons do conceive, that the Houses have done nothing to barr or hinder the Prince *D'Harcourt* from the usual and fitting Ways of Address to them, and such as are honourable for him: Because,

1. 'He may apply himself to the Speaker of either or both Houses of Parliament, by himself, or such Persons as he shall intrust to that Purpose, to desire Audience, in the Name of the King his Master, for what he hath to propound from the *French* King to both or either Houses of the Parliament of *England*.

2. 'Or else, what he hath to propound from the King his Master to the Houses, he may direct either to the Houses themselves, or their Speakers, attested under his Hand; as is expected from the Ambassadors of *England*, and is practised by them in their Negotiations with foreign States. It is that also which the King himself useth in his Messages to the two Houses: And it is that which the *French* Agent, Monsieur *De Boisinon*, hath lately done to the Privy Council of *Scotland*; and that which the Ministers of

of foreign States have done, and do, to the Parliament, upon Occasion. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Next was read a Copy of the *French* King's Letter, sent by Monsieur *De Boisinon*, Agent to the *French* King, to the Council of *Scotland*, translated into *English*.

Most Dear and Great Friends,

The *French* King's Letter to the Council of *Scotland*.

THERE have been, from all Times, Alliances between the Kings our Predecessors, and those of Scotland, *which have been observed so sacredly and faithfully, that the Faithfulness of the one and the other Nation hath been acknowledged and published as a Miracle to all the People of the World. We have been raised to the Command of the first and most famous Monarchy of* Europe, *and we would conserve the Friendship of the most valorous Nation that inhabits it; and, to give Testimony hereof, bear Part in their Affairs. You have deputed unto us, with the Consent of the King of* Great-Britain, *Monsignor the Earl of* Lothian; *who, being returned satisfied, we sent you Monsieur* De Boisinon, *by the Advice of the Queen-Regent, our most honoured Lady and Mother, to carry you the Assurance of the Continuance of our Affection.*

He hath some Matters to propound to you; we pray you to receive Credence, in all which he shall say to you in our Behalf, and to apply yourselves to give us Satisfaction therein, as our most true and most antient Allies. It is that which we promise ourselves from your Prudence, and that you will not be failing to your own Interests; which shall ever be to us in singular Esteem, so long as you have, for your Aim, the Obedience and Service of the King your Master. Thus we pray God to keep you, most Dear and Great Friends, in his most holy and divine Protection.

Written at *Paris* the 24th of *September*, 1643.

Sic subscribitur.

LOUIS.

The

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

The PROPOSITIONS *of Monsieur* De Boisinon *to the Council of* Scotland.

And his Agent's Propositions to them.

'THAT, according to the Instructions which the Lords and Council of *Scotland* have given to the Earl of *Lothian*, their Deputy, with the Consent of the King of *Great-Britain*, the said Lords, as far as their Power extends, should confirm the antient Alliances of *France* and *Scotland*.

'That, for this Effect, the *Scots* do not, directly nor indirectly, enter with Arms into *England*, be it under Pretence to serve the King of *Great-Britain*, or of Religion, without express Commission from the King their Master; and, forasmuch as this Article presses the Most Christian King, to give a speedy and punctual Answer.

'That the Lords and Council of *Scotland* would have no Regard to the Difference of Religion in those who do inroll or shall be inrolled there to serve, according to the Example of the Most Christian King to such as serve in *France*; and because the Churches of *Scotland* have determined, in their Assembly, the contrary, that the Council of *Scotland* would grant out an Order to recall the same.

'Monsieur *De Boisinon* hath Command, from the King his Master, to make yet some further Propositions; but as these are the principal, and those which regard the holding fast, or breaking off, the Alliance of the two Kingdoms of *France* and *Scotland*, he is ordered to receive an Answer, in the first Place, to these.

PETER DE BOISINON.

The ANSWER *of the Council of* Scotland *to the* PROPOSITIONS *which Monsieur* De Boisinon *hath made to them from the Most Christian King.*

Their Answer.

'TO the *first*; When the Council of *Scotland* shall receive from the Earl of *Lothian* an Account of his Proceedings in his Employment in *France*, they will, according to their Power,

'give

'give such a respectful Answer, as may shew their 'Willingness to renew and entertain the antient 'Alliance betwixt the Kingdoms of *Scotland* and '*France*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'To the *second Article* they can give no Answer, 'seeing the conserving of the Peace between the 'two Kingdoms is committed, by his Majesty and 'Estates of Parliament, to a Committee appointed 'for that Effect; and the late Convention of Estates, 'having also received the Propositions from the 'Commissioners of both Houses of the Parliament 'of *England*, for the further securing of the Religion and Peace of their Kingdom, have intrusted the Consideration thereof to a Committee 'of their own Members; who the Council are confident will proceed in these Affairs as becometh 'them, in Duty and Conscience towards God, in 'Loyalty to the King, and in Respect of the Good of 'the Kingdom.

'To the *third Article*; since the National Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* is independent, what 'hath been concluded by them cannot be recalled by 'the Council.

'As the Council hath answered the principal Propositions according to their Power, and in such Sort 'as can give no just Occasion of Offence to the '*French* King; being willing, inviolably, to keep 'the Amity which hath been so religiously observed 'these many Years, they hope that those who have 'the Charge of the *French* King and his Affairs in 'his Nonage, will be better advised than to make 'the Particulars any Occasion of Breach with his 'antient Allies, whom his Royal Predecessors, in 'their greatest Difficulties, have found to be the readiest and surest Friends.

'So that when any other Propositions shall be made 'to them by Monsieur *De Boisinon*, they will return 'such an Answer thereunto as appertaineth.'

But to return to the further Progress of the War.

Dec. 5. The Lord-General *Essex* informed the Lords, That he had received Advice from Sir *William*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

liam Waller, acquainting him the King was advancing to *Basing*, which Place Sir *William* had besieged. That the Parliament's Army under Sir *William* was very weak, and desired them to consider of a speedy Way, both to recruit and maintain it. Referred to a Conference.

The Earl of *Warwick* appointed Lord-High-Admiral of *England*, by the Parliament.

The Lords and Commons having made an Ordinance for constituting *Robert* Earl of *Warwick* Lord-High-Admiral of *England*, this Day, *December* 9, his Lordship moved in the House, That the Lords would take it into their present Consideration, how to make Provision of Flesh, Ammunition, and other Necessaries, for setting forth the next Year's Navy: That this was the Month proper for such Provision, or else it would be impossible to get the Navy fitted out in Time: That, upon Advice, it was thought fit to have, at least, forty-six Ships to guard the Seas; and 60,000 *l.* was required to be presently advanced for Provisions, *&c.* as appeared by an Estimate made for that Purpose.

It is certain, by this, that the Parliament was under a Dread that *France*, or some other foreign Power, would exert themselves in the King's Favour, which made them agree to equip such a Fleet to prevent it. It may not be amiss to give here the Estimate, to inform the present Age of the Expence thought necessary for such an Equipment in the last.

The CERTIFICATE *and* ESTIMATE *of the Charge of the Fleet, sent to the Lord-Admiral from the Commissioners of the Navy.*

An Estimate of the Charge of the Fleet.

'ACcording to your Lordship's Order, we have seriously debated what Number of 'Men are requisite for a Fleet for the next Year's 'Service; and do humbly conceive there cannot 'be less than 5000 allotted for the Service of the 'Fleet, if the State resolve to keep the Seas in 'Safety.

'These

'These 5000 Men will supply forty-six Sail of 'Ships, *viz.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

2 of the second Rank,
9 of the third Rank,
20 of the fourth Rank,
10 of the fifth Rank, and
5 of the sixth Rank.

'Of these forty-six Ships there are twenty-six of 'his Majesty's that may be fitted for the Service, the 'rest, *viz.* twenty, must be taken up in the River 'from the Merchants.

'We also conceive that those forty-six Sail of Ships 'may be distributed thus:

10 to the West,
16 for *Ireland* and the *Severn*,
12 for the *Downs*, and
8 for the Coasts of *Scotland*, according to the Parliament's Agreement.

'We do also conceive that 3000 Men, in 'thirty of his Majesty's and the Merchant Ships, 'will be a competent Winter-Guard for the next 'Year.

'If your Lordship shall resolve to fix upon this 'Number of Men and Ships, for the next Year's 'Service, we humbly desire your Lordship to repre-'sent to the House the State of the whole Navy for 'this and the next Year's Service, in the Heads fol-'lowing, *viz.*

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
For the Charge of 5000 Men in twenty-six of his Majesty's and twenty Merchant Ships, for eight Months Service in the Year 1644	130,000	0	0
For the Charge of 3000 Men, in thirty Ships, for the next Winter's Guards for five Months	60,000	0	0
For the ordinary Expence of the whole Navy, in Harbour, for the Year 1644	18,000	0	0
Carried over	208,000	0	0

For

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
Brought over	208,000	0	0
For the Charge of the extraordinary and ordinary Expence of the next Year's Service, in the Office of the Ordnance, *per* Eſtimation	20,000	0	0
For the Victuals of 4000 Men, for ſix Months, in forty Ships, ſuppoſed to be ſet at Sea, as Reprizals, according to a late Ordinance	24,000	0	0
For the Payment of the Ordinary for this Year's Winter-Guard, now at Sea, the Freight of ſundry Merchant-men already diſcharged, and for divers other Proviſions due to ſundry Men in this and the laſt Year's Service, the Sum of	40,000	0	0
Total	292,000	0	0

'Which ſaid Sum of 292,000 *l.* we deſire may 'be ſettled out of the Revenues of the Cuſtoms 'and Exciſe, to be paid to the Treaſurer of the 'Navy, before your Lordſhips proceed in the Ser-'vice.

'We are confident little or nothing can be aba-'ted with Safety; yet if the Houſes ſhall not think 'fit to allow ſo great a Number of Men or Ships, 'we deſire your Lordſhips that, whatſoever they ſhall 'think fit to order, the Money may, in the firſt 'Place, be aſſigned to be paid in to the Treaſurer 'of the Navy before the Service be undertaken; 'for we are not able to wade any further in the 'Service, unleſs our Credit be preſerved by current 'Payments.

'The Payment of the aforeſaid Sum of 292,000 *l.* 'may be ſeaſonably ſupplied as followeth:

For

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
For Victuals and Stores for the Summer's Fleet	50,000	0	0
For Victuals of Merchant Ships supposed to be set forth as Reprizals	10,000	0	0

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'The rest as the Service may require, and the 'State shall be enabled.

'We have propounded the Business of the Victuals to Mr. *Alcock*, who absolutely refuseth it by 'way of Contract; but yet offers his Endeavours in 'it by way of Account, provided he may be enabled with Monies to proceed chearfully therein, 'and have some other able Men joined with him in 'the Management of that Service. We believe we 'shall not be able to get any Men to undertake the 'Business by Contract, and therefore desire your 'Lordship to send unto Mr. *Alcock*, and settle the 'Business upon him as your Lordship shall think 'fit, that the Service may not suffer for Want of 'settling that Office; all which we leave to your 'Lordship's Wisdom, and remain, at your Lord-'ship's Command,

RICHARD CARNLEY,
JOHN MORRIS,
JOHN HOLLAND.

December 5, 1643.

The Earl of *Warwick* moved, That a Conference might be had presently with the House of Commons, to communicate this Estimate to them, and desire that some Course may be speedily taken to procure Monies and other Provisions, that no Time be lost to expedite this Business. This was done accordingly.

December 11. Some Orders, made by the House of Commons this Day, give us Occasion to mention the Death of Mr. *Pymme*, one of the most active Members that ever sat in that House: And the Respect they shewed to his Memory is without a Precedent in the whole Course of these Inquiries: For we find, in the *Journals*, 'That a Committee, there named, was appointed to consider

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

sider of the Eſtate of Mr. *Pymme*, deceaſed, and to offer what they think fit to be done in Conſideration of it to the Houſe; likewiſe to take Care to prepare a Monument for him, at the Charge of the Commonwealth. It was alſo ordered, That the Body of Mr. *Pymme* be interred in *Weſtminſter* Abbey, without any Charge for breaking open the Ground there; and that the Speaker, with the whole Houſe, do accompany his Body to the Interment.

The Death of Mr. *Pymme*, to whoſe Memory the Commons order a Monument to be erected,

Mr. *Whitlocke* ſays, That Mr. *Pymme* died the latter End of *May*; but the Proceedings of Parliament ſince that Date, as well as the above-recited Orders, evidently prove this to be a Miſtake. This Memorialiſt aſcribes Mr. *Pymme*'s Death, chiefly, to his exceſſive Fatigue in the Service of Parliament [a].——Lord *Clarendon* ſays, He died of the *Morbus Pediculoſus*; and, after the higheſt Commendation of his Abilities, and the heavieſt Cenſure of his Actions, concludes with ſaying, 'That as, during his Sickneſs, he was a very ſad Spectacle, ſo that none were admitted to him who had not concurred with him, it is not known what his laſt Thoughts and Conſiderations were [b].'——But Mr. *Ruſhworth* ſays, 'The Report of his dying of the Diſtemper before-mentioned was not true; and that, for public Satisfaction therein, his dead Body was for ſome Time expoſed to, and viewed by, many Hundreds of People: The true natural Cauſe of his Death ſeeming to be the great Pains he took, joined with a competent old Age, and at beſt but an infirm Conſtitution.' He alſo gives us a long Declaration of Mr. *Pymme*'s, ſetting forth the Grounds and Reaſons of his Conduct in Parliament; which he had cauſed to be printed and publiſhed ſome Time before his Deceaſe [c].

By ſome ſubſequent Orders, it appears that Mr. *Pymme* died greatly in Debt, though poſſeſſed of the Place of Lieutenant of the Ordnance; for, *January* 13, we find the Commons referred it to the afore-

[a] *Memorials*, p. 66.—[b] *Clarendon*, Vol. III. 8*vo*. p. 462.—[c] *Ruſhworth*, Vol. V. p. 376.

aforesaid Committee to consider of some other Way for a Recompence to the Posterity of Mr. *Pymme*, and Payment of those Debts he had contracted for the Service of the Commonwealth, than they had yet thought on; and to use all Diligence to find out some fit Return, answerable to the Memory and Merit of so great a Man. Accordingly, afterwards, the whole House undertook to pay the Debts of Mr. *Pymme*, not exceeding 10,000 *l.*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 December.

And vote 10,000 *l.* for Payment of his Debts.

This Digression, upon so unprecedented an Instance, the Reader will excuse: Proceed we now with the Thread of our History.

Dec. 12. In the Business of this Day, amongst the Lords, we find this Entry, 'It was moved that this House should declare it, as their Opinion, that no Member of either House of Parliament might be admitted to execute any Place of Profit; and a Committee of seven Lords were ordered to draw up an Order, and word it to that Sense.' These withdrawing, soon returned with such an Order; and then the Question was put, Whether that Paper, now read, should be entered as the Opinion and Resolution of this House? Which passed in the Affirmative.

Ordered, by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, 'That the Opinion and Resolution of this House is, from henceforth, not to admit the Members of either House of Parliament into any Place or Office, excepting such Places of great Trust as are to be executed by Persons of Eminency and known Integrity, and are necessary for the Government and Safety of the Kingdom.

But another Question being put, Whether this shall be drawn up into an Ordinance? it passed in the Negative. Thus this Political Test was quashed for this Time; but 'tis probable it gave Rise to the famous Self-denying Ordinance afterwards.

The Earl of *Holland*'s Return to the Parliament has been mentioned before; and this Day, *Dec.* 16, a remarkable Letter of his, by way of Petition to the

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

the Lords, was read, containing the Motives that induced this unsteady Nobleman to change Sides; which he did so often, that, at last, he fell a Sacrifice to his own Instability.

To my LORDS the PEERS,

The HUMBLE PETITION of HENRY Earl of HOLLAND.

My Lords,

The Earl of *Holland*'s Petition to Parliament, upon his revolting from the King.

I Have already, by your Favours, received a Degree of Liberty; and do hope that, upon this my humble Request, it may be fully granted me, with the Discharge of the late Sequestration, that yet rests upon the little Remainder of my Fortune; it not being the tenth Part of what I have lost since the Parliament began.

My Lords, I have not made any Use of that which I conceived would have given me a very assured Protection here, viz. *the Invitation and Persuasion of our General to return; in whom I conceived a Power very full and natural to invite and to persuade any, both how to add to this and lessen the other Side; which is done, in some Measure, in every Person of the least Consideration. This, I am very confident, his Excellency will avow in my Particular; the Inquiry of which I leave to your Lordships' Wisdom, and likewise all which concerns me, both in Honour and Fortune, to your Goodness.*

HOLLAND.

The Speaker was ordered to write to the Lord-General, to desire him to inform this House what he knows concerning the Earl of *Holland*'s Return, and what Invitation he received from him. In the mean Time the Earl was allowed to go into the Country, for a few Days, with the Lord-Admiral. And, soon after, on the Receipt of a satisfactory Answer from the Lord-General, as to what the Earl had advanced, he was ordered, by the Lords, to have full Liberty, and his Sequestration taken off: But in the House of Commons the

the Queſtion being put, Whether he was guilty of deſerting the Parliament? it was carried in the Negative, only by 75 againſt 60. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Dec. 20. A Conference was held between the two Houſes, wherein the Lords communicated ſome Letters they had received from the Lord-General *Eſſex*. As theſe and ſuch like Letters are the moſt authentic Hiſtory of the Times, we ſhall make no Apology for the Number of them. And firſt the Letter from the Earl of *Eſſex* to the Speaker of the Houſe of Peers:

My Lord,

Letters from the Earl of *Eſſex* and the Committee of Safety, relating to the Parliament's Army.

I Received a Letter from the Committee of Safety, the 14th of this Inſtant, concerning the removing of my Army towards Sir William Waller's *Quarters; to which I returned an Anſwer of the Inconveniences that might follow that Advice, both which Letters I herewith ſend you. This Day I received another to the ſame Purpoſe, which your Lordſhip will now receive, and perceive therein that it is reported that Prince* Rupert *is marching that Way; which the Committee, in their great and conſtant Care to the Public, have very affectionately acquainted me with; apprehending that, if any Thing might befall thoſe Forces with Sir* William Waller, *I might lie under an undeſerved Cenſure by common Detractors.*

I thought it my Duty to acquaint both the Houſes with all theſe Letters; and, withall, with my Opinion of thoſe Inconveniences that might follow my Removal at this Time; and that the Army cannot now march, having ſo many Men out in Parties about Newport-Pagnell, *every Company in each Regiment being thereby divided. Out of the Relief which I am promiſed, within five or ſix Days to be ſent hither, the* Newport *Men, when they come back, will expect their Pay, having been ſo long without, and done ſo good Service; and the reſt of the Officers alſo being in ſo great Want, as your Lordſhips may perceive by the incloſed Copy of another Letter*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

of mine to the Committee of Safety: So that, if the Forces be taken from hence, it is impossible to secure Bedfordshire, Hertfordshire, *and* Essex *from the Enemy; there being a very long Line to keep, and my Lord of* Manchester *having but* 500 *Horse here, and most of the Remainder of his Horse being in* Lincolnshire, *and also the greatest Part of his Foot, as yet.*

I likewise conceive Sir William Waller *cannot be in any great Danger, having the Benefit of so safe a Place as* Farnham, *now fortified, that the Enemy, especially in this Season of the Year, will not be able to do him Harm; besides, the Addition of Strength I sent him is so considerable, being near* 600 *Horse, and so well commanded, that I hold them able to encounter with* 1000 *of the Enemy's.*

My Lord, I am to crave your Pardon for this long Diversion from your great Affairs, by these inclosed Papers; but the Tenderness of my Honour, and my Fidelity to the Parliament, which I value above myself, emboldens me to it. I am,

My Lord,

St. Alban's, Dec. 18, 1643.

Your Lordship's Servant,

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's Letter to the Earl of ESSEX, referred to in the foregoing.

May it please your Excellency,

WE understood by your Lordship's Letter the last Night to Sir Philip Stapylton, *that your Excellency had designed Col.* Behre *to march with* 500 *Horse towards the Relief of Sir* William Waller. *We conceive his being with Sir* William Waller *at this Time with so many Horse, will be of so great Use to the Public, that we desire your Excellency to hasten him thither with what Speed you possibly may.*

We hear that most of the King's Forces about Towcester *are removed Southward, to join with the Lord*

Lord Hopton; *which, if your Excellency find to be ſo, we humbly offer unto your moſt ſerious Conſideration, whether it will not be neceſſary for your Lordſhip to remove your Quarters nearer to* Farnham, *or to ſend ſome Foot ſpeedily thither to Sir* William Waller; *or, otherwiſe, he will not be able to proſecute this great Advantage which he hath now gotten; for the King's Forces increaſe in* Hampſhire *and* Suſſex, *and divers new Regiments are raiſing there, which would prove very prejudicial to the Public, unleſs preſently prevented; which we hope your Lordſhip, in your Wiſdom, will find a Way to remedy, ſeeing the Safety of this Place and the whole Kingdom is ſo much concern'd in it.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

We deſire your Lordſhip's Anſwer by this Expreſs, that we may frame our Reſolutions accordingly. We remain

Your Lordſhip's

Moſt affectionate,

Dec. 14, 1643. and moſt humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND,
PEMBROKE *and* MONTGOMERY,
WILLIAM PIERPOINT,
ARTH. HASLERIG,
H. VANE,
ANTH. NICHOLS.

The Earl's ANSWER.

My Lords and Gentlemen,

ALthough the Horſe are extremely behind for Want of Pay, and want both Horſes and Arms, yet I hope to have 500 *Horſe ready to march upon* Saturday *Morning, with Col.* Behre, *towards Sir* William Waller; *and, for that Purpoſe, have ſtopped giving him Commiſſion to the Commiſſary-General of the Horſe, becauſe he may receive his Directions from Sir* William Waller *during ſuch Time as I can ſpare him there.*

To the ſecond Part of your Lordſhips Letter; I have often informed your Lordſhips, both by Letters and alſo by Word of Mouth, That I have not one whole

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Company amongſt the Foot, they being divided, Half here, and Half at Newport; *and, till that Garriſon be furniſhed, cannot take them away, unleſs your Lordſhips' Pleaſure be to quit* Newport *and thoſe Parts, which would be abſolute Ruin to all theſe Counties; ſo that, unleſs the Parliament command it, I do not chuſe to give Way unto it; and beſides, they will be preſently in ſuch Want of Money, that, without there be an Order taken for their Pay till the Ordinance begins, I ſhall hardly be able to keep them together any where, much leſs to recruit them.*

When I was laſt in London, *the Foot being drawn into Arms, it was ſpread amongſt them, That the Reaſon of their drawing into the Field, was to take out a Party to ſend to Sir* William Waller; *upon which there was a Mutiny amongſt them, with a Reſolution, That whoſe Lot ſoever it ſhould be to march, the reſt would oppoſe it.*

I hope now, that I have ſpared ſo great a Strength of Horſe from theſe Parts, there will be a Care taken for the Supply of Horſe and Arms; moſt of the Horſemen being on Foot, the ſtrongeſt Troops ſent away, and divers of the Counties not having ſent in the Numbers of Horſe they promiſed; eſpecially Middleſex, *from whence I have had but* 55 *of* 200.

The Enemy are fortifying at Greenland, *near* Henley, *which will be a great Prejudice both to the River and* Windſor; *but, by reaſon of my ſending off thoſe Horſe, I ſhall not be able to do that to them which I intended. I thought fit to acquaint your Lordſhips with it, leſt it ſhould be laid to me hereafter as a Neglect.*

Your Lordſhip's Servant,

St. Alban's, Dec. 14, 1643.

ESSEX.

The COMMITTEE of SAFETY's ſecond Letter to the Earl of ESSEX.

May it pleaſe your Excellency,

WE have received ſeveral Advertiſements, that Prince Rupert, *with* 6000 *Horſe and Foot, is on his March from* Oxon *towards Sir* William Waller;

Waller; *ſo that we doubt, unleſs ſome conſiderable Force be preſently ſent to his Aſſiſtance, he may be ſuddenly diſtreſſed, and run the Hazard of the Loſs of his Brigade, which will endanger* Kent *and that Aſſociation: We therefore humbly offer our Advice to your Excellency, to march forthwith to* Windſor, *or ſome other Place near Sir* William Waller's *Quarters, for the ſecuring him and his Forces from that Power and Strength, which is now drawing thither under the Command of Prince* Rupert. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

We ſhall not fail to do our utmoſt Endeavours for advancing Money for the Payment of your Excellency's Army, and conveying it to the Place which your Excellency ſhall appoint, in your March, ſo ſoon as we ſhall hear from your Excellency.

And we farther offer it to your Excellency's Conſideration, whether you think not fit to ſend a Diſpatch to the Earl of Manchester, *to draw up his Forces towards* Newport-Pagnell, *for the ſecuring thereof and the Parts adjacent. Theſe Things are recommended to your Lordſhip by*

Your Excellency's

Moſt affectionate Friends,

Weſtminſter, Dec. 18, 1643.

and humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK, DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY *and* SELE, ANTH. NICHOLS.

The other LETTER from the Earl of ESSEX to the COMMITTEE of SAFETY, mention'd in his Lordſhip's LETTER to the Speaker, was in theſe Words:

My Lords and Gentlemen,

ACcording to your Directions, I have ſent your Lordſhips this Commiſſion, which you'll pleaſe to ſend to Sir Thomas Fairfax, *hoping, by this Time, he is upon his March.*

There is hardly Money left to pay a Meſſenger; for of the laſt 23,000 *l. which was ſent down for*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Recruits, 700 l. *went for the Garrison of* Aylesbury, *besides the better Part of* 200 l. *more sent thither since, to make up the Fortnight's Pay: All the Horse and Foot here, and at* Newport, *are paid compleat for fourteen Days, and a Week's Pay for the Foot at* St. Alban's, *from the Serjeant downwards.*

Yesterday there was a great Mutiny of 3 *or* 400 *gathered together, threatening to pillage the Town; but my Coming presently dispersed them, otherwise great Mischief would have been done, it being Market-Day.*

I have likewise another Week's Pay for the Foot, from the Serjeants downwards, for To-morrow, which is all the Money that is left, tho' I have paid nothing else but what bleeding Necessity compelled me to, of which I am ready to give an Account; having not been able to relieve divers, whereof some are Captains of my own Regiment, that, thro' Sickness and Hurts, are ready to perish; and how the other Officers will do for Want of Pay, I know not.

The Train of Artillery, who have done real and faithful Services to the State, are grown to that Necessity, as you may perceive by the Petition[a] *inclosed, that if there be not Pay provided for them by the latter End of this Week, both for those here and those that come from* Newport, *I shall never be able to keep them together without plundering the Country.*

Col. Behre *is gone with the Horse, though they have been long without Pay; and if the Horse in Sir* William Waller's *Brigade be paid, and they unpaid, I fear the Issue; though, otherwise, I never saw Men better contented with so little Pay as the Horse have generally been.*

My humble Desire is, That, if there be no Pay like to come to me by the latter End of this Week, I may know so; I not being able to stay amongst them to hear the crying Necessity of the hungry Soldiers. I have likewise sent your Lordships Sir William Brereton's *Letter*[a], *that you may take it into your*

[a] We do not meet with this Letter, or Petition, above referred to, in the *Journals*.

your further Care, I not being able to spare any out of this Army. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Your Lordships Servant,

Dec. 17, 1643.

ESSEX.

The Votes passed by the Lords, after reading the foregoing Letters, to which the Commons also agreed, were, That they approved of the Counsel given to the Lord-General by the Committee of Safety; and that he be desired to pursue it: That Letters should be written to him and the rest, to that Effect; and a Committee of both Houses was appointed to draw them up accordingly.

The same Day, in the Afternoon, Copies of these Letters, so ordered, were read in the House of Lords, and afterwards approved by both Houses, as follow:

Our very good Lord,

WE are commanded, by both Houses, to acquaint your Lordship, That they have received your Letter of the 18th present, with the inclosed Copies of Letters between the Committee of Safety and your Excellency; and having well weighed the Grounds expressed in the Letters from the Committee of Safety to your Lordship, and taking into Consideration how necessary it is that the Passages should be secured, where the Forces of the Enemy may break into Surry, Middlesex, *and* Kent, *they have thought fit to approve of the Advice given to your Lordship by the Committee of Safety, for the speedy drawing your Lordship's Forces towards* Windsor, *or those Parts; especially seeing Sir* William Waller *is now marched towards* Arundel *with all his Forces, and left only a Garrison in* Farnham *Castle; and that Sir* Ralph Hopton *(as the Houses are informed) hath drawn all the Forces he can make towards* Basing. *And to the End that the Counties, where your Lordship's Army is now quartered, may not be exposed to Danger, by the*

And the Answer of both Houses.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643 December.

the breaking in of the Enemy's Forces upon your Lordſhip's marching from thence, the two Houſes have written a Letter (a Copy whereof they ſend your Lordſhip here incloſed) to the Earl of Manchester, *in purſuance of the Advice lately given your Lordſhip by the Committee of Safety, and the Directions from your Lordſhip in that Behalf, for to draw up ſpeedily the Forces under his Lordſhip's Command, for the Security of thoſe Counties. The Houſes have likewiſe ſent another Letter (the Copy whereof is here incloſed) unto the Committee of the Militia of* Hertfordſhire, *for the ſpeedy ſending into* Newport-Pagnel *the Forces intended for that Garriſon: And therefore we are ordered by both Houſes to deſire your Lordſhip that,* Newport-Pagnel *being ſecured, your Lordſhip do purſue the Advice given your Excellency by the Committee of Safety, for the drawing your Forces towards* Windſor, *or thoſe Parts; which will be, as they conceive, of the greateſt Security to this City, and the Counties moſt threatened and ſubject to Danger. And ſo we bid your Lordſhip heartily farewell, being*

Your Lordſhip's affectionate

Weſtminſter, Dec. 20, 1643.

Friends and Servants,

WHARTON,
Speaker of the Houſe of Peers *pro Tempore.*

WILLIAM LENTHALL,
Speaker of the Commons Houſe in Parliament.

The Letter to the Earl of MANCHESTER, mentioned as incloſed in the foregoing.

Our very good Lord,

WE are commanded, by the Houſes, to ſend this Diſpatch unto your Lordſhip, in purſuance of what you have already received from the Committee of

of Safety, and likewiſe, we doubt not, will receive from his Excellency; that accordingly your Lordſhip will, with your Forces, march towards Newport-Pagnel, *or ſuch other Place as his Excellency ſhall judge moſt convenient for the ſecuring thoſe Parts; which, upon his Removal to oppoſe the great Forces which are gathering together to break in upon the Coaſt of* Suſſex *or* Surry, *will elſe be left naked, and give an Inlet to any Attempt of the Enemy for the invading us on that Side; both theſe, being equally miſchievous, muſt be equally provided for; and we don't doubt of your Lordſhip's Readineſs to do any Thing which may conduce to the Public Good; nor are many Words needful to incite you to it, the very Propoſal of it being ſufficient.* An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

This being all we have in Charge from the Houſes, nothing remains, but that we are

Your Lordſhip's

Weſtminſter, Dec. 20, 1642.

moſt affectionate

Friends and Servants,

Signed by the Speakers of both Houſes as the foregoing.

The LETTER from the PARLIAMENT to the COMMITTEE of MILITIA for *Hertfordſhire*, above referred to.

Gentlemen,

WE are commanded, by both Houſes of Parliament, to require you, forthwith, to diſpatch ſuch of your Forces to Newport-Pagnel, *as may ſecure that Garriſon; that my Lord-General may be enabled to march away Weſtward, the Enemy having drawn moſt of their Forces that Way; and therefore the Houſes do preſume your Care hath been ſuch, that your Forces are already there, or upon their March, they having given you all the Aſſiſtance you deſired to enable you thereunto, by paſſing the ſeveral Or-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Ordinances you presented to them; yet, lest there should be any retarding of Business, so much importing the Public Safety, they thought fit to quicken you by this Express: And so, not doubting of your Care herein, we rest,

Gentlemen,

December 22, 1643.

Your Friends and Servants,

Signed by the Speakers as before.

Dec. 22. A Letter from Sir *William Waller* was read in the House of Lords; but, as there is no Date to it, we suppose, only, that it came from the Siege before *Arundel* Castle.

A Letter from Sir *William Waller*,

My Lords,

According to your Commands, I advanced the last Lord's Day from Farnham *towards this Place. I could not reach that Night past* Haslemere: *The next Day I marched to* Cowdrey; *where, we understanding there were four Troops of Horse and one hundred Foot, I resolved to give them the good Night; and, to that End, I dispatched away two Regiments of Horse to lay the Passages round; but they were too nimble for me, and escaped hither, where I overtook them on* Tuesday *Night. The next Morning, after we had taken a View, and found out a Place where we might flank their Line with our Ordnance, we fell on upon the North Side of the Works; and we did so scour a woody Hill in the Park, on the West Side of the Pond, with our Pieces, that we made it too hot for them; which gave such Courage to our Men, that, with the same Breath, they assaulted an Intrenchment newly cast up, and which was very strong: It was drawn from the Town Gate down to the aforesaid Pond near the Hill. At the same Time we fell on a narrow Passage by the Mill, where they had likewise a double Work, and very strong; but in a short Time, by the good Hand of God, we forced both; and entered the Town with our Horse and Foot, notwithstanding a brave*

brave Sally made by their Horſe. We beat them into the Caſtle, and entered the firſt Gate with them, the ſecond they made good and barricaded, and they are there welcome to ſtay. I am reſolved to block them up, for I know they are in a neceſſitous Condition. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

God hath been pleaſed to bleſs me hitherto with a gracious Succeſs, his Great and Holy Name be praiſed for it; but truly, my Lords, I am very weak in Foot, and my Horſe ſo hackney'd out, that they are ready to lie down under us. I expect Col. Behre *and Col.* Morley *here this Day.*

Dec. 25, being *Chriſtmas-Day*, is the firſt Time that we find the Houſes ſat to do Buſineſs on it. The Commons having ſent Word to the Lords, That they intended ſuch a Thing, their Lordſhips readily followed ſo pious an Example.

A Letter from the Earl of *Mancheſter*, dated from *Cambridge*, *Dec.* 22, was preſented to the Houſe of Lords this Day, and read in theſe Words: It was directed to the Lord *Wharton*.

My Lord,

I Have received your Lordſhip's Letter from the Houſe of Peers; I ſhall beſeech your Lordſhip to offer my Service to the Houſe, and to let them know that, according to the Lord-General's Orders, I have commanded ſix hundred Foot to march to Newport-Paguel. *I have likewiſe ſent a Regiment of Foot to lie at* Bedford, *with five Troops of Horſe and two Troops of Dragoons. The greateſt Part of the reſt of the Forces, that is under my Command, is yet in* Lincolnſhire; *and, at this preſent, engaged againſt* Gainſbrough. From the Earl of *Mancheſter*.

I have no particular Direction from my Lord-General, whither to march with the reſt that I have with me; which, at this preſent, do guard St. Neots, Huntingdon, *and the Town of* Cambridge.

I am ready, to my utmoſt, to be ſerviceable to the Houſes, but am in ſome Trouble, becauſe I have no par-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

particular Orders; seeing that the Letters from the Houſe doth refer me to his Excellency's Orders and Directions. I am,

My Lord,

Your Lordſhip's humble Servant,

E. MANCHESTER.

This Letter was referred to the Committee of Safety; and the Lord *Wharton* acquainted the Houſe that he had received another Letter from the Lord-General, to deſire him to inform the Houſe, that the Reaſon he had not given Directions to the Earl of *Manchester* for diſpoſing of his Forces, was, becauſe he knew he was upon a Deſign at *Gainſbrough*.

Dec. 30. The Commons ordered the Commiſſioners of their new Great Seal to bring in an Ordinance for the appointing and authorizing Sheriffs to execute their Offices, in the different Counties of *England*, for the Year enſuing: To conſider of the Sheriffs' Oath, and for taking off from them the Charges uſually incident to ſuch Places; and to enable them to go out of their Counties upon the Service of the Commonwealth.

Then the Houſe proceeded to nominate all the High Sheriffs in *England*, whoſe Names are enter'd in their *Journal*; and alſo ordered, That the Commiſſioners of the Great Seal be deſired forthwith to paſs the ſeveral reſpective Patents for the Gentlemen, nominated and appointed by both Houſes to be High Sheriffs of Counties, according to their ſeveral Nominations and Appointments. Thus was the King ſtripp'd of that antient Branch of the Royal Prerogative, in every County where the Parliament could command: And as he at the ſame Time nominated his own Sheriffs, this, alone, muſt breed the utmoſt Confuſion in the Kingdom.

The ſame Day the Earl of *Northumberland*, from the Committee of Safety, reported their Opinion of Sir

Sir *William Waller*'s Letter, requiring a Supply of Men to withstand the Forces under *Hopton* [b]; that the Garrison of *Newport-Pagnel* being now settled, the best Way would be to send to the Lord-General to draw his Forces into those Parts, that so he might be in a Place convenient to assist Sir *William Waller* upon all Occasions. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

This was agreed to, and the following Letter was ordered to be drawn up for that Purpose:

May it please your Excellency,

THere is Advertisement come from Sir William Waller, *giving Notice of the Preparation the Enemy makes to relieve* Arundel *Castle, and the Necessity there is of his present Supply; the Mischief which will else follow upon the whole Kingdom is easily foreseen. It is therefore desired that your Excellency will, forthwith, remove that Way with your Army to* Windsor, *or to such other Place as you shall judge convenient; leaving* Newport-Pagnel *as well secured as the present Occasion will permit. Both Houses conceive it so absolutely necessary, that any Delay will be dangerous. This being all we have in Charge to recommend to your Excellency's Care, and your Zeal for the Public Service, we take our Leave, and rest* And from the Committee of Safety.

Your Excellency's humble Servants,

NORTHUMBERLAND, BOLINGBROKE,
WARWICK, DENZIL HOLLES,
SAY *and* SELE, ANTH. NICHOLS.

Another Letter, and a very extraordinary one, was also read this Day in the House of Lords, from the Earl of *Bedford*; who, with the Earls of *Clare* and *Holland*, had deserted the Parliament, and gone over

[b] Sir *Ralph Hopton*, Knight of the *Bath*, whom the King had created a Peer, by the Title of Baron *Hopton* of *Stratton*, the 4th of *September*, 1643: And by this coarse Expression of barely *Hopton* in the *Lords' Journals*, it looks as if that House did not chuse to allow his Title, the Patent being pass'd since the Lord-Keeper *Littleton* left the Parliament; or it might be so expressed in Sir *William Waller*'s Letter, who probably had not yet forgot his own Defeat in the West.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December. over to the King at *Oxford*. The latter had already made his Peace at *Westminster*; the other found Means to escape from the Guard his Majesty had set over him, and retired to his Seat in *Nottinghamshire*.——Lord *Clarendon* very much condemns the Manner in which these Peers were received by the King and his Council at *Oxford*; his Opinion being, that Penitents of such Consequence ought to have been received with open Arms. And Mr. *Whitlocke* observes, 'That it was said, in Drollery, these three Earls had much confirmed others to continue with the Parliament; for they having tried both Parties, found, by Experience, that this was the best to be in and adhere to.'

The Earl of *Bedford*, who had joined the King, returns to the Parliament.

The Earl of *Bedford*'s Submission was ushered in by the following Letter from the Lord-General *Essex*, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers:

My Lord,

The Earl of *Essex*'s Letter in his Favour;

THere hath been a strict and long Obligation betwixt the Families of my Lord of Bedford's *and mine*; *yet, in this general Cause that we are engaged in, which is for the Maintenance of Religion, and the Liberty and just Freedom of the Subjects of* England, *and the Plotters against all these growing every Day more maliciously bent to the Ruin of them all, would have made me laid aside all particular Ends of my own*; *but hearing, by an intimate Friend of his Lordship's, his Desire to return to serve the Parliament with his Life and Fortune, being very sensible of his Fault in deserting them, and being an Eye-Witness of their ill Intentions to the Destruction of this Kingdom, he desired a Pass to return, and my Reception of him to this Side, which I did by that great Favour and Trust the Parliament was pleased to intrust me with*; *and which, by my utmost Care, with the Hazard of my Life, I shall use for your Safety, being*

Your Lordship's

St. Alban's, Dec. 30, 1643.

most humble Servant,

ESSEX.

Next

Next was read the Earl of *Bedford*'s Letter, directed to the Speaker of the House of Peers *pro Tempore*, as followeth: An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

My Lord,

THE great Sense I had of the Miseries and Distractions of this Kingdom, and the small Probability that appeared, to my Judgment, of any speedy End thereof, made me think I could do the Kingdom no better Service, as Matters then stood, than by using my best Endeavours, and those of my Friends, to procure his Majesty to comply with his Parliament; for which Purpose I went to Oxford, *where I was no sooner arrived, but I perceived contrary Counsels to be too prevalent, and that my Endeavours would be altogether fruitless; wherefore, presently seeing my former Mistake, I resolved thenceforth, whatsoever Prejudice might befall me thereby, to cast myself wholly upon the Favour and the Mercy of the Parliament, and to make no longer Stay at* Oxford, *than I could find Means and Opportunity for my safe Return; whereupon I made Use of my nearest Friends to procure me a Pass from my Lord-General, which he nobly granted me. Therewith I am come safe to* St. Alban's, *and have now put myself into his Excellency's Custody; where I intend to remain untill I shall receive your Lordships Commands and Directions; being ready to undergo what Censure your Lordships shall please to impose upon me for my sudden and unadvised Departure from your Lordships without your Leaves and Consents; not expecting or thinking myself worthy of the Honour to sit again amongst you, untill your Lordships shall be fully satisfied of the Reality of my Faithfulness to the Parliament and Kingdom; which I shall be very ready to express and manifest by any Act, Way, or Means whatsoever, which your Lordships, in your Wisdoms, shall think fit to prescribe or appoint. Expecting your Lordship's Answer, I rest*

And his own Submission to the House.

Your Lordship's

St. Alban's, Dec. 30, 1643.

most humble Servant,

BEDFORD.

Here-

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

Hereupon the Lords ordered that, for the prefent, the Earl of *Bedford* ſhould ſtand committed to the ſafe Cuſtody of the Gentleman-Uſher attending that Houſe, there to remain untill their Pleaſure be further ſignified.

After all theſe, ſeveral Papers were read, which came from the Parliament's Commiſſioners in *Scotland*, relating to the Treaty then juſt concluded with that Kingdom, concerning the Solemn League and Covenant, and the Aſſiſtance demanded in purſuance of the Ends expreſſed therein: The Articles of which had been ſent up by the Commons with their Approbation of them, and were referred by the Lords to a Committee then appointed for that Purpoſe, and are as follow:

Articles between the *Engliſh* and *Scots* Parliaments concerning the latter's marching their Army into *England*.

'WHereas the two Houſes of the Parliament of *England*, out of a juſt and deep Senſe of the great and imminent Danger of the true Proteſtant Religion, in regard of the great Forces of Papiſts, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, raiſed and employed againſt the conſtant Profeſſors thereof in *England* and *Ireland*, thought fit to ſend their Commiſſioners unto the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to treat with the Convention of Eſtates and General Aſſembly there, concerning ſuch Things as might tend to the Preſervation of Religion, and the mutual Good of both Nations: And, to that End, to deſire a more near and ſtrict Union betwixt the Two Kingdoms; and the Aſſiſtance of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, by a conſiderable Strength to be raiſed and ſent by them into the Kingdom of *England*:

'And whereas, upon a Conſultation held betwixt the Commiſſioners of the Parliament of *England*, and the Committees of the Convention of Eſtates and General Aſſembly, no Means was thought ſo expedient to accompliſh and ſtrengthen the Union, as for both Nations to enter into a Solemn League and Covenant, and a Form thereof to be drawn and preſented to the two Houſes of the Parliament

'of

'of *England*, the Convention of Eſtates, and Gene- An. 19. Car. I,
'ral Aſſembly, of *Scotland*; which hath according- 1643.
'ly been done, and received their Approbation: December.

'And whereas the Particulars, concerning the 'Aſſiſtance deſired by the two Houſes of the Parlia-'ment of *England*, from their Brethren of *Scot-'land*, were delivered in by the *Engliſh* Commiſ-'ſioners, *Auguſt* 19, to the Convention of Eſtates; 'who did thereupon give Power to their Commit-'tee to conſider and debate farther with the *En-'gliſh* Commiſſioners, of what other Propoſitions 'might be added or concluded; whereby the Aſ-'ſiſtance deſired might be made more effectual and 'beneficial:

'And, in purſuance thereof, theſe Propoſitions 'following were conſidered of, and debated by the 'Committee and Commiſſioners aforeſaid, to be 'certified, with all convenient Speed, to the two 'Houſes of the Parliament of *England*, and the 'Convention of Eſtates of *Scotland*, by their re-'ſpective Committees and Commiſſioners to be 'reſpectively taken into their Conſideration, and 'proceeded with as they ſhall find Cauſe: Which 'being accordingly done, and theſe enſuing Pro-'poſitions approved, agreed, and concluded of by 'the two Houſes of the Parliament of *England*, 'and the Committee of the Eſtates of *Scotland* 'reſpectively, and Power by them given to their 'reſpective Committees and Commiſſioners to agree 'and conclude the ſame, as may appear by the 'Votes of both Houſes, dated the firſt of *Novem-'ber*, and the Order of the Committee, bearing 'Date the ſeventeenth of *November*: We the ſaid 'Commiſſioners and Committees, according to 'their Votes and Orders, do formally conclude and 'agree upon theſe Articles following; and, in 'Confirmation thereof, do mutually ſubſcribe the 'ſame.

I. 'It is agreed and concluded, That the Cove-'nant, repreſented to the Convention of Eſtates and 'General Aſſembly of *Scotland*, and ſent to both

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'Houſes of the Parliament of *England*, in the ſame 'Form as it is now returned from the two Houſes 'of the Parliament of *England* to their Brethren of '*Scotland*, and allowed by the Committee of Eſtates 'and Commiſſioners of the General Aſſembly, be 'ſworn and ſubſcribed by both Kingdoms, as a moſt 'near Tie and Conjunction between them, for their 'mutual Defence againſt the Papiſts and Prelatical 'Faction, and their Adherents, in both Kingdoms, 'and for Purſuance of the Ends expreſſed in the ſaid 'Covenant.

II. 'That an Army to this Purpoſe ſhall be levied 'forthwith, conſiſting of eighteen thouſand Foot ef- 'fective, two thouſand Horſe, and one thouſand 'Dragoons effective, with a ſuitable Train of Ar- 'tillery, to be ready at ſome general Rendez- 'vous, near the Borders of *England*, to march 'into *England*, for the Purpoſes aforeſaid, with 'all convenient Speed: The ſaid Horſe and Foot 'to be well and compleatly armed, and provided 'with Victuals and Pay for forty Days; and the 'ſaid Train of Artillery to be fitted in all Points 'ready to march.

III. 'That the Army be commanded by a Ge- 'neral appointed by the Eſtates of *Scotland*, and ſub- 'ject to ſuch Reſolutions and Directions as are and 'ſhall be agreed and concluded on mutually between 'the Two Kingdoms, or by Committees appointed 'by them in that Behalf, for Purſuance of the Ends 'before-mentioned.

IV. 'That the Charge of Levying, Arming, 'and bringing the ſaid Forces together furniſhed, 'as alſo the fitting the Train of Artillery in Readi- 'neſs to march, be computed and ſet down, ac- 'cording to the ſame Rates, as if the Kingdom of '*Scotland* were to raiſe the ſaid Army for them- 'ſelves and their own Affairs: All which, for the 'preſent, is to be done by the Kingdom of *Scotland* 'upon Account, and the Account to be delivered to 'the Commiſſioners of the Kingdom of *England*; 'and when the Peace of the Two Kingdoms is 'ſettled,

'settled, the same to be repaid, or satisfied, to the 'Kingdom of *Scotland*. An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

V. 'That this Army be likewise paid, as if the 'Kingdom of *Scotland* were to employ the same 'for their own Occasions; and towards the defray-'ing thereof (it not amounting to the full Month's 'Pay) shall be Monthly allowed and paid the Sum 'of 30,000 *l. Sterling*, by the Parliament of *En-'gland*, out of the Estates and Revenues of the Pa-'pists, Prelates, Malignants, and their Adherents, 'or otherwise. And in case the said 30,000 *l.* 'Monthly, or any Part thereof, be not paid at 'the Time when it shall become due and pay-'able, the Kingdom of *England* shall give the 'Public Faith for the paying of the Remainder, 'unpaid, with all possible Speed, allowing the 'Rate of eight Pounds *per Cent.* till the Time of 'the Performance thereof. And in case that, not-'withstanding the said Monthly Sum of 30,000 *l.* 'paid as aforesaid, the States and Kingdom of '*Scotland* shall have just Cause to demand farther 'Satisfaction of their Brethren of *England*, they 'shall, for the Pains, Hazard, and Charges they have 'undergone in the same, by Way of Brotherly As-'sistance, have due Recompence made unto them 'by the Kingdom of *England*, when the Peace of 'both Kingdoms is settled; and that out of such 'Lands and Estates of the Papists, Prelates, Ma-'lignants, and their Adherents, as the two Houses 'of Parliament shall think fit; and for the Assu-'rance thereof the Public Faith of the Kingdom of '*England* shall be given them.

VI. 'And to the End the said Army, in Man-'ner aforesaid, may be enabled and prepared to 'march, the Kingdom of *England* is to pay, in 'ready Money, to their Brethren of *Scotland*, or 'such as shall have Power from the Estates of that 'Kingdom, the Sum of 100,000 *l. Sterling*, at '*Leith* or *Edinburgh*, with all convenient Speed, 'by Way of Advance before-hand; which is to be 'discounted back again unto the Kingdom of *Eng-*

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

'*land*, by the Kingdom of *Scotland*, upon the firſt 'Monthly Allowance, which ſhall grow due to 'the *Scots* Army, from the Time they ſhall make 'their firſt Entrance into the Kingdom of *Eng-* '*land*.

VII. 'That the Kingdom of *Scotland*, to manifeſt 'their Willingneſs to their utmoſt Ability to be help- 'ful to their Brethren of *England* in this common 'Cauſe, will give the Public Faith of the Kingdom 'of *Scotland* to be jointly made uſe of with the Public 'Faith of the Kingdom of *England*, for the preſent 'taking up 200,000l. *Sterling*, in the Kingdom of '*England*, or elſewhere, for ſpeedy Payment of the 'ſaid 100,000 l. *Sterling* as aforeſaid; as alſo a con- 'ſiderable Sum for ſatisfying, in good Proportion, 'the Arrears of the *Scots* Army in *Ireland*.

VIII. 'That no Ceſſation, nor any Pacification 'or Agreement of Peace whatſoever, ſhall be made 'by either Kingdom, or the Armies of either King- 'dom, without the mutual Advice and Conſent of 'both Kingdoms, or their Committees in that Be- 'half appointed, who are to have full Power for the 'ſame; in caſe the Houſes of the Parliament of *Eng-* '*land*, or the Parliament or Convention of Eſtates of '*Scotland*, ſhall not ſit.

IX. 'That the Public Faith of the Kingdom of '*Scotland* ſhall be given to their Brethren of *Eng-* '*land*, that neither their Entrance into, nor their 'Continuance in, the Kingdom of *England*, ſhall be 'made uſe of to any other Ends than are expreſſed 'in the Covenant, and in the Articles of this Treaty; 'and that all Matters of Difference, that ſhall hap- 'pen to ariſe between the Subjects of the two Na- 'tion, ſhall be reſolved and determined by the mu- 'tual Advice and Conſent of both Kingdoms, or 'by ſuch Committees as, for this Purpoſe, ſhall be 'by them appointed, with the ſame Power as in 'the precedent Article.

X. 'That in the ſame Manner, and upon the 'ſame Conditions, as the Kingdom of *Scotland* is

'is now willing to aid and assist their Brethren of *England*, the Kingdom of *England* doth oblige themselves to aid and assist the Kingdom of *Scotland*, in the same or like Cases of Straits and Extremities. An. 19. Car. I. 1643 December.

'*Lastly*, It is agreed and concluded, That, during the Time that the *Scots* Army shall be employed as aforesaid, for the Defence of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, there shall be fitted out, as Men of War, eight Ships, whereof six shall be of Burden betwixt one hundred and twenty and two hundred Tons, the other betwixt three and four hundred Tons, whereof two shall be in lieu of the two Ships appointed by the *Irish* Treaty; all which shall be maintained at the Charge of the Kingdom of *England*, to be employed for the Defence of the Coast of *Scotland*, under such Commanders as the Earl of *Warwick*, for the Time of his being Admiral, shall nominate, with the Approbation of the Committees of both Kingdoms; which Commanders shall receive, from the said Earl, general Instructions, that they do from Time to Time observe the Directions of the Committees of both Kingdoms.'

Next follow the several Declarations, &c. of the Convention of Estates of *Scotland*, before and at their Army's entering into *England*, which, for Brevity's Sake, we pass over with a Reference [a]; and shall only mention that, with the former Papers, came Receipts for 50,000 *l.* paid at *Edinburgh*, as Part of the 200,000 *l.* stipulated for; and that it was only demanded, That the Garrison at *Berwick*, being now delivered up to the *Scots*, should be paid from henceforth by them.

The King, to obviate as much as possible this Confederacy of the Parliaments of both Kingdoms against him, issued a Proclamation, inviting all such Members of both Houses, as had already left their

[a] *Rushworth*, Vol. V. p. 487, *et ultra*.

An. 19. Car. I. 1643. December.

their Seats at *Westminster*, or were inclined to do so, to meet him at *Oxford*, and consult of the best Measures for his own Safety. So great a Number obeyed this Summons, that they, soon after, formed a Convention, or Anti-Parliament: But their Proceedings, which lasted three Months, and which, for Connection Sake, we shall give without the Intervention of any other Matters, are too many and various to be comprized in this Volume.

Which occasions the King to call a Convention of Members at *Oxford*.

The END of the TWELFTH VOLUME.